



Over dit boek

Dit is een digitale kopie van een boek dat al generaties lang op bibliotheekplanken heeft gestaan, maar nu zorgvuldig is gescand door Google. Dat doen we omdat we alle boeken ter wereld online beschikbaar willen maken.

Dit boek is zo oud dat het auteursrecht erop is verlopen, zodat het boek nu deel uitmaakt van het publieke domein. Een boek dat tot het publieke domein behoort, is een boek dat nooit onder het auteursrecht is gevallen, of waarvan de wettelijke auteursrechttermijn is verlopen. Het kan per land verschillen of een boek tot het publieke domein behoort. Boeken in het publieke domein zijn een stem uit het verleden. Ze vormen een bron van geschiedenis, cultuur en kennis die anders moeilijk te verkrijgen zou zijn.

Aantekeningen, opmerkingen en andere kanttekeningen die in het origineel stonden, worden weergegeven in dit bestand, als herinnering aan de lange reis die het boek heeft gemaakt van uitgever naar bibliotheek, en uiteindelijk naar u.

Richtlijnen voor gebruik

Google werkt samen met bibliotheken om materiaal uit het publieke domein te digitaliseren, zodat het voor iedereen beschikbaar wordt. Boeken uit het publieke domein behoren toe aan het publiek; wij bewaren ze alleen. Dit is echter een kostbaar proces. Om deze dienst te kunnen blijven leveren, hebben we maatregelen genomen om misbruik door commerciële partijen te voorkomen, zoals het plaatsen van technische beperkingen op automatisch zoeken.

Verder vragen we u het volgende:

- + *Gebruik de bestanden alleen voor niet-commerciële doeleinden* We hebben Zoeken naar boeken met Google ontworpen voor gebruik door individuen. We vragen u deze bestanden alleen te gebruiken voor persoonlijke en niet-commerciële doeleinden.
- + *Voer geen geautomatiseerde zoekopdrachten uit* Stuur geen geautomatiseerde zoekopdrachten naar het systeem van Google. Als u onderzoek doet naar computervertalingen, optische tekenherkenning of andere wetenschapsgebieden waarbij u toegang nodig heeft tot grote hoeveelheden tekst, kunt u contact met ons opnemen. We raden u aan hiervoor materiaal uit het publieke domein te gebruiken, en kunnen u misschien hiermee van dienst zijn.
- + *Laat de eigendomsverklaring staan* Het “watermerk” van Google dat u onder aan elk bestand ziet, dient om mensen informatie over het project te geven, en ze te helpen extra materiaal te vinden met Zoeken naar boeken met Google. Verwijder dit watermerk niet.
- + *Houd u aan de wet* Wat u ook doet, houd er rekening mee dat u er zelf verantwoordelijk voor bent dat alles wat u doet legaal is. U kunt er niet van uitgaan dat wanneer een werk beschikbaar lijkt te zijn voor het publieke domein in de Verenigde Staten, het ook publiek domein is voor gebruikers in andere landen. Of er nog auteursrecht op een boek rust, verschilt per land. We kunnen u niet vertellen wat u in uw geval met een bepaald boek mag doen. Neem niet zomaar aan dat u een boek overal ter wereld op allerlei manieren kunt gebruiken, wanneer het eenmaal in Zoeken naar boeken met Google staat. De wettelijke aansprakelijkheid voor auteursrechten is behoorlijk streng.

Informatie over Zoeken naar boeken met Google

Het doel van Google is om alle informatie wereldwijd toegankelijk en bruikbaar te maken. Zoeken naar boeken met Google helpt lezers boeken uit allerlei landen te ontdekken, en helpt auteurs en uitgevers om een nieuw leespubliek te bereiken. U kunt de volledige tekst van dit boek doorzoeken op het web via <http://books.google.com>

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>



NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 07592280 1

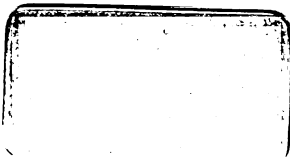
Y

Presented by

Mrs. Henry R. Hoyt

to the

New York Public Library



RMP
Pijl

Chas. F. Daly

A
PRACTICAL GRAMMAR

OF THE
DUTCH LANGUAGE,

CONTAINING:

AN EXPLANATION OF THE DIFFERENT
PARTS OF SPEECH; ALL THE RULES
OF SYNTAX, AND A GREAT NUM-
BER OF PRACTICAL EXERCISES.

BY

R. VAN DER PYL,

TEACHER OF LANGUAGES, AND AUTHOR OF
SEVERAL GRAMMATICAL WORKS.

— 0000 4000 —

ROTTERDAM,
PRINTED FOR ARBON AND KRAP.

1819.

Digitized by Google

NEW YORK
LIBRARY
282476
THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
INC.



P R E F A C E.

By the publication of this work I hope to fulfill the wish of many Englishmen, who desire to find a practical Grammar, by which the means of acquiring the dutch language are simplified and facilitated.

The several parts of speech are arranged in the usual order, and explained with precision, every rule being followed by practical exercises. This mode of teaching being already appreciated, it will not be deemed necessary to point out the utility of it. As to syntax, it is fully treated of in the same manner.

Throughout the whole composition, my chief aim has been to unite ease and simplicity with accuracy and precision, whilst care has been taken to render the exercises progressively difficult, to animate the efforts of the learner.

R. VAN DER PYL.

Dordrecht 28 Juny

1819.

A PRACTICAL GRAMMAR

OF THE

DUTCH LANGUAGE.

DUTCH GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing the dutch language with propriety.

It is divided into three parts, viz: *Ortography*, *Etymology*, and *Syntax*.

Ortography treats of the form and sound of letters, the combination of letters into syllables, and syllables into words.

Etymology treats of the different sorts of words, their various modifications, and their derivation.

Syntax treats of the union and right order of words, in the formation of a sentence.

PART. I.

Ortography teaches the nature and power of letters, and the just method of spelling words.

A letter is the first principle, or least part of a word.

The letters of the dutch language, called the dutch alphabet, are twenty six in number.

A. B. C. D. E. F. G. H. I. J. K. L. M. N. O.
P. Q. R. S. T. U. V. W. X. Y. Z.

c, *q*, *x* and *y* are only used in spelling words, which derive from a foreign language.

Letters are divided into *vowels* and *consonants*.

A vowel is a simple sound, formed by a continued effusion of the breath, and a certain conformation of the mouth, without any alteration in the position, or any motion of the organs of speech, from the moment the vocal sound commences, till it ends.

2 *A practical Grammar of the Dutch Language.*

A consonant is an articulate sound which cannot be perfectly uttered without the help of a vowel.

The vowels, in the dutch language, are five in number *a, e, i, o, u.*

The other letters are consonants.

The consonants are dividible into *mutes, semi-vowels* and *liquids.*

The mutes are such as emit no sound without a vowel, as: *b, p, t, d, k, g.*

The semi-vowels are such as emit a sound, without the concurrence of a vowel, as: *f, s, x.*

The liquids are such as flow into, or unite easily with, the mutes, as: *l, m, n, r.*

There is another distinction of consonants, arising either from the seat of their formation, or from those organs which are chiefly employed in forming them. The best distinction of this kind seems to be that which divides them into: *Lipletters*, labials, as: *b, p, v, f.* — *Tandletters*, dentals, as: *d, t, s.* — *Keelletters*, gutturals, as: *k, g, q.* —

Diphthongues.

A diphthongue, is the union of two vowels, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice.

The diphthongues, in the dutch language, are short, *kort*, or long, *lang.*

The short diphthongues are: *au, ei, eu, ie, oe, ou, ui.*

The long diphthongues are: *aai, aau, eeu* and *ooi.*

A triphthongue is the union of three vowels, pronounced in like manner, as: *ieu, oei.*

A syllable is a sound, either, simple or compounded, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or a part of a word.

A word of one syllable is named a *monosyllable*; a word of two syllables, a *disyllable*; a word of three syllables a *trisyllable*, and a word of four and more syllables, a *poly syllable.*

OF DUTCH PRONUNCIATION.

General observations on the sound of the letters.

Of the vowels.

A.

This vowel is short, *kort*, or long, *lang*. It is short, when followed, by one or more consonants in the same syllable; then it sounds *almost* like the english *a* in the word *fat*.

Man, man

Rat, rat.

Vat, barrel.

Kam, comb.

Ram, ram.

Plant, plant.

Land, country.

Stand, condition.

Stad, town.

Was, wax.

It is long, and sounds like the english *a* in *calf*, at the end of a syllable, as:

Ga, go.

Sla, fallad.

Pa-pa, papa.

Vla, custard.

Ha-len, to fetch.

Ma-len, to grind.

Za-del, saddle.

Ma-tig, frugal.

A is long if it alone constitutes a syllable:

A-men, amen.

A-der, vein.

A-zië, Asia.

A dam, Adam.

A-yond, evening.

A-dem, breath.

In many words *a* is short in the singular, but long in the plural:

Dak, roof.

Slag, stroke.

Dag, day.

Pad, path.

Da-ken, roofs.

Sla-gen, strokes.

Da-gen, days.

Pa-den, paths.

Double *a* sounds like long *a*:

Graad, fishbone.

Daad, action.

Straat, street.

Laut, late.

Taal, language.

Zaad, feed.

Gaan, to go.

Laan, alley.

4 *A practical Grammar of the Dutch Language.*

A is never redoubled at the end of a syllable:

<i>Vra-gen</i> , to ask.	<i>Sla-gen</i> , to succeed.
<i>Pla-gen</i> , to torment.	<i>Wa-gen</i> , chariot.
<i>Wa-gen</i> , to hazard.	<i>Za-gen</i> , to saw.

Thus write never: *vraa-gen*, *plaa-gen*, etc.

E.

E has a short sound, like the english *e* in *met*, *fed*, when followed by one or more consonants in the same syllable, as:

<i>Bed</i> , bed.	<i>Kelk</i> , beaker, cup.
<i>Bel</i> , bel.	<i>Stem</i> , voice.
<i>Melk</i> , milk.	<i>Hem</i> , him.
<i>Vet</i> , fat.	<i>Gek</i> , fool.
<i>Bek</i> , beak, mouth.	<i>Vlek</i> , village.
<i>Nek</i> , neck.	<i>Spek</i> , bacon.

E is long at the end of a syllable, when the stress is laid upon it, as:

<i>De-gen</i> , sword.	<i>Ze-gen</i> , blessing.
<i>We-gen</i> , to weigh.	<i>We-zen</i> , to be.
<i>Ve-gen</i> , to wipe.	<i>Le-zen</i> , to read.
<i>Ge-ven</i> , to give.	<i>Be-ven</i> , to tremble.

E is short, when the stress is not laid upon it, as in a termination:

<i>Mo-de</i> , fashion.	<i>Zwak-te</i> , weakness.
<i>Stof-fe</i> , stuff.	<i>Groot-te</i> , grandour.
<i>Zwaar-te</i> , heaviness.	<i>Diep-te</i> , deepness.
<i>Moci-te</i> , difficulty.	<i>Stil-te</i> , quietness.

Double *e* has always a long sound.

<i>Heet</i> , hot.	<i>Dee-len</i> , parts.
<i>Geest</i> , spirit.	<i>Bee-nen</i> , bones.
<i>Beest</i> , beast.	<i>Stee-nen</i> , stones.
<i>Meest</i> , most.	<i>Bee-ren</i> , bears.
<i>Geel</i> , yellow.	<i>Hee-ren</i> , gentlemen.
<i>Meel</i> , meal.	<i>Lee-lijk</i> , ugly.
much.	<i>Lee-ren</i> , to learn.

Geen, none.
Been, bone, leg.
Steen, stone.

Klee-den, to dress.
Kee-ren, to turn.
Smee-ken, to conjure.

I.

I is short when followed by a consonant. Then it sounds like the English *i* in *him*, *tin*, *his*.

Lid, member.
Zin, sense.
Wind, wind.
Wil, will.

Kin, chin.
Bil, thigh.
Mist, dung.
Pik, pitch.

If *i* alone constitutes a syllable, then it is long, and sounds like the English *ie* in *grief*, as:

I-voor, ivory.
I-da, Ida.

I-ta-lië, Italy.

The sound of double *i*, which is written *ij*, is not to be described in English; it approaches somewhat the sound of *i* in the English word *find*, but is less sharp. We find it in the following words (*).

Mijn, my.
Zijn, his.
Wijn, wyn.
Pijn, ache.

Wijf, wife.
Lijst, list.
Prijs, price.
Zijn, to be.

O.

O is short, when followed by a consonant in the same syllable; then it sounds almost like the English *u* in *dumb*.

Stom, mout.
Dom, stupid.
Hond, dog.

Wond, wound.
Pond, pound.
Vonk, sparkle.

(*) I have taught the Dutch, my mother-language, to several Englishmen; but they had all great difficulty in pronouncing this sound.

O is short or sharp: it sounds almost like the english *o* in *love*, in:

<i>Stof</i> , stuff.	<i>Hof</i> , garden.
<i>Lof</i> , praise.	<i>Klock</i> , clock.
<i>Stok</i> , stick.	<i>Rok</i> , coat.

O is long at the end of a syllable, and sounds like the english *o* in *no*.

<i>Ho-ven</i> , gardens.	<i>Mo-gen</i> , to may.
<i>Bo-ven</i> , above.	<i>Zo-mer</i> , summer.
<i>Lo-ven</i> , to praise.	<i>O-pen</i> , open.

It is somewhat sharper when followed by *n*, *t*, *l*, *d*, *n*, *r* or *s*.

<i>Loo-nen</i> , to reward.	<i>Ho-nen</i> , to injure.
<i>Zo-nen</i> , sons.	<i>Zo-den</i> , turfs.
<i>No-ten</i> , nuts.	

Double *o* is always long:

<i>Oom</i> , uncle.	<i>Schoof</i> , sheaf.
<i>Loop</i> , course.	<i>Loog</i> , lye.
<i>Pook</i> , dagger.	<i>Hoop</i> , hope.

It is somewhat sharper, when followed by *d*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t* or *z*.

<i>Loo-den</i> , leaden.	<i>Too-nen</i> , to shew.
<i>Doo-den</i> , to kill.	<i>Kroo-nen</i> , to crown.
<i>Zoo-len</i> , soles.	<i>Troo-nen</i> , thrones.
<i>Loo-zer</i> , more cunning.	<i>Moo-ren</i> , moors.
<i>Groo-te</i> , great.	<i>Moo-ten</i> , slice.
<i>Noo-ten</i> , notes.	<i>Schoo-ten</i> , laps.

U.

U is short, when followed by a consonant in the same syllable, and sounds almost like the english *u* in *shun*, but somewhat sharper.

<i>Dun</i> , thin.	<i>Kus-sen</i> , to kiss.
<i>Put</i> , well.	<i>Zus-ter</i> , sister.
<i>Lust</i> , list.	<i>Bur-ger</i> , citizen.

Muts, cap.

Ge-rust, quiet.

Bul, bull.

Hul-de, homage.

U is long at the end of a syllable, as :

Mu-ren, walls.

Vu-ren, fires.

Du-ren, to last.

Hu-ren, to hire.

U-ren, hours.

Stu-ren, to govern.

Double *u* is always long.

Muur, wall.

Zuur, four.

Uur, hour.

Duur, dear.

T as we have observed is only used in words deriving from foreign languages, and sounds at the end of a syllable like the english *i* in *priest*.

Cy-rus, Cyrus.

Cam-by-ses, cambyfes.

As-sy-rië, Asfyria.

Pronunciation of Diphthongues.

Au.

This diphthong is composed of the sounds of *a* in the english word *fa-ther*, and *u* in *rude*.

Dauw, dew.

Saus, fauce.

Paus, pape.

Pau-lus. Paul.

In *aau* the *a* is longer.

Paauw, peacock.

Gaauw, quick.

Naauw, narrow.

Laauw, lukewarm.

Ei.

Ei has the same sound of *y*, and cannot be described. We find it in:

Zeil, fail.

Fon-tein, fountain.

Steil, steep.

Sprei-den, to spread.

Pa-leis, palace.

Rei-zen, to travel.

Eu.

The sound of this diphtongue cannot be expressed by an English sound. It is pronounced like *eu* in the French word *feu*, fire; and like the German *ö* in *söhne*.

<i>Reuk</i> , smell.	<i>Keu-ken</i> , kitchen.
<i>Beul</i> , executioner.	<i>Heu-vel</i> , hill.
<i>Heup</i> , hip.	<i>Breu-ken</i> , fractions.

Eeu is longer than *eu*.

<i>Eeuw</i> , age.	<i>Sneeuw</i> , snow.
<i>Leeuw</i> , lion.	<i>Schreeuw</i> , cry.

Ie.

It sounds perfectly like the english diphtongue *ie*, in the word *grief*.

<i>Niet</i> , no.	<i>Vlie-gen</i> , to fly.
<i>Niets</i> , nothing.	<i>Lie-gen</i> , to lie.
<i>Ziel</i> , soul.	<i>Pie-ter</i> , Peter.
<i>Knie</i> , knee.	<i>Bie-den</i> , to offer.
<i>Vlieg</i> , fly.	<i>Lie-den</i> , people.
<i>Wieg</i> , cradle.	<i>Vlie-den</i> , to fly.

Oe.

Oe is pronounced perfectly like *u* in the english word *rude*.

<i>Stoel</i> , chair.	<i>Voe-len</i> , to feel.
<i>Voet</i> , foot,	<i>Roe-pen</i> , to call.
<i>Roet</i> , sot.	<i>Noe-men</i> , to name.
<i>Moed</i> , courage.	<i>Moe-ten</i> , to must.
<i>Spoed</i> , speed.	<i>Zoe-nen</i> , to kiss.

Ou.

Ou sounds almost like *ou* in the english word *loud*.

<i>Koud</i> , cold.	<i>Bou-wen</i> , to build.
<i>Hout</i> , wood.	<i>Dou-wen</i> , to thrus

Stout, naughtily.
Mourw, sleef.
Vouw, plait.
Schout, bailliff.

Schouw-burg, playhouse.
Vou wen, to plait.
Bou-ten, ducks.

Ooi.

The found of the diphtongue *ooi* is composed of the found of *o* in *those*, and *i* in *grief*.

Mooi, fine.
Hooi, hay.

Kooi, cage.
Dooi, thaw.

Ui.

The found of this diphtongue is not to be found in the english language, and cannot be described.

Muis, mouse.
Luis, louse.
Huis, house.

Slui-ten, to shut.
Lui-den, to ring the bell.
Flui-ten, to whistle.

Ieu.

This triphthongue is composed of the sounds of *i* in *grief* and *u* in *use*, but the latter must be pronounced very short.

Nieuw, new.

Kieuw, gill.

Oei.

This triphthongue is composed of the sounds of *u* in *use*, and *i* in *grief*.

Boei-jen,
Hoer-jen,

Loei-jen,
Groei-jen, to grow.

Of Consonants.

B.

This letter sounds perfectly like the english *b*.

Band, bound.*Boek*, book.*Breng*, bring.*Brood*, bread.*Blind*, blind.*Bran-den*, to burn.*Bre-ken*, to break.*Bra-den*, to roast.*Ber-gen*, mountains.*Bin-den*, to tie.*C.*

This letter, as we have already observed, is only used in words, deriving from foreign languages, and sounds like *s* before *i*, *e* and *y*, and like *k* before *a*, *o* and *u*.

Ce-del, list.*Ci-troen*, citron.*Co-los-sus*, Colosfus.*Cij-fer*, cipher.*Cir-kel*, circle.*D,*

sounds like the english *d*.

Dun, thin.*Dau*, thaw.*Dom*, stupid.*Don-der*, thunder.*Dui-vel*, devil*Dub-bel*, double.*F,*

sounds like *f* in english words.

Fout, fault.*Fop-pen*, to deceive.*Feest*, feast.*Offer*, offer.*Straf*, punishment.*Graf*, grave.*Hoofd*, head.*Blaf-fen*, to bark.

G.

The sound of this letter is much more *guttural*, than the english *g* in *game*, and cannot be precisely described. It is to be found in:

<i>Goed</i> , good.	<i>Zeg-gen</i> , to say.
<i>Gem</i> , gum.	<i>Leg-gen</i> , to put.
<i>Geld</i> , money,	<i>Ge-wigt</i> , weight.
<i>Ge-ven</i> , to give.	<i>Zigt baar</i> , visible.
<i>Geen</i> , no.	<i>Gaarn</i> , fain.
<i>Geel</i> , yellow.	<i>Gift</i> , gift.

Ch has te same found.

<i>Licht</i> , light.	<i>Och-tend</i> , morning.
<i>Dicht</i> , poem.	<i>Gracht</i> , ditch, moat.
<i>Kracht</i> , force.	<i>Ge-flacht</i> , gender.
<i>Nacht</i> , night.	<i>Ver-acht</i> , despised.
<i>Vracht</i> , treight.	<i>Slech-ten</i> , to demolish.

Sch.

The found of this combination of letters cannot be described in english.

<i>Schoon</i> , fine.	<i>School</i> , school.
<i>Schip</i> , ship.	<i>Schrij-ven</i> , to write.
<i>Schans</i> , iconce.	<i>Schel-len</i> , to ring the bell.
<i>Scheef</i> , awry.	<i>Schrik-ken</i> , to frighten.
<i>Schelm</i> , rascal.	<i>Schat-ten</i> , to value, to rate.
<i>Schijn</i> , shine.	<i>Malsch</i> , tender.
<i>Schade</i> , damage.	<i>Grootsch</i> , haughty.
<i>Schelp</i> , shell.	<i>En-gelsch</i> , english.

J.

This letter sounds like the english *y* in the beginning of a syllable, so as in *yard*.

<i>Jong</i> , young.	<i>Ja-gen</i> , to chase.
<i>Ja</i> , yes.	<i>Jam-mer</i> , pity.
<i>Jicht</i> , podagra, gout.	<i>Ju-we-lier</i> , jewler.
<i>Jas</i> , furtout.	<i>Ju-nij</i> , Juny.
<i>Julij</i> , July.	<i>Jok</i> , jeering.

K,

has the same sound as the english *k*.

<i>Kan</i> , pot.	<i>Ke-tens</i> , chains.
<i>Kom</i> , come.	<i>Kee-ren</i> , to turn.
<i>Kwam</i> , came.	<i>Klee-den</i> , to dress.
<i>Koon</i> , cheek.	<i>Kij-ken</i> , to look.
<i>Kaart</i> , chart.	<i>Kus-sen</i> , to kiss.
<i>Kunst</i> , art.	<i>Bak-ken</i> , to fry.
<i>Keel</i> , throat.	<i>Pak-ken</i> , to pack up.
<i>Kroon</i> , crown.	<i>Lak-ken</i> , to seal.
<i>Kans</i> , chance.	<i>Klok-ken</i> , clocks.

L.

L sounds in dutch like in english.

<i>Loop</i> , course.	<i>Lui-paard</i> , leopard.
<i>Land</i> , country.	<i>Zui-len</i> , columns.
<i>Lid</i> , membre.	<i>Los-sen</i> , to disembark.
<i>Lam</i> , lame.	<i>Lo-ven</i> , to praise.
<i>Los</i> , loose.	<i>Lie-ver</i> , more lovely.
<i>Dal</i> , valley.	<i>Lui-den</i> , to ring the bell.
<i>Mal</i> , foolish.	<i>Las-te-ren</i> , to slander.

M.

This letter sounds like the english *m*.

<i>Men</i> , one.	<i>Min-der</i> , less.
<i>Man</i> , man.	<i>Mas-ten</i> , masts.
<i>Mist</i> , fog.	<i>Zwem-men</i> , to swim.
<i>Moor</i> , moor.	<i>Stem-men</i> , to vote.
<i>Min</i> , nurse.	<i>Em-mer</i> , pale.
<i>Mij</i> , me.	<i>Vlam-men</i> , flames.
<i>Mes</i> , knife.	<i>Kam-men</i> , to comb.
<i>Melk</i> , milk.	<i>Kom-mer</i> , sorrow.

N.

This letter sounds like the english *n*.

<i>Neen</i> , no.	<i>Nim-mer</i> , never.
-------------------	-------------------------

<i>Niet</i> , not.	<i>Nie-mand</i> , nobody.
<i>Nest</i> , nest.	<i>Noo-dig</i> , necessary.
<i>Nat</i> , wet.	<i>Noo-den</i> , to invite.
<i>Nis</i> , niche.	<i>Ken-nen</i> , to know.
<i>Nood</i> , need.	<i>Zin-nen</i> , senses.

Followed by *g* it has a compounded and mixed sound, like the *u* in the english word *hang*.

<i>Lang</i> , long.	<i>Zang</i> , song.
<i>Bang</i> , afraid.	<i>Be-lang</i> , interest.

P.

Sounds like the english *p* in *pin*.

<i>Pot</i> , pot.	<i>Pa-pier</i> , paper.
<i>Poot</i> , paw.	<i>Klap-pen</i> , to prattle.
<i>Pool</i> , pole.	<i>Pink-ster</i> , whitfuntide.
<i>Piet</i> , Peter.	<i>Pot-lood</i> , leadpencil.
<i>Poes</i> , pus.	<i>Pan-den</i> , to pawn.
<i>Kap</i> , cap.	<i>Pas-sen</i> , to try.
<i>Slap</i> , slack.	<i>Plan-ken</i> , shelves.

In some foreign words we find *Ph* pronounced like *f*.

<i>Phi-lip-pus</i> , Philip.	<i>Pha-ra-o</i> , Pharaoh.
------------------------------	----------------------------

R.

Sounds like the english *r* in *reer*.

<i>Reeds</i> , already.	<i>Rij-men</i> , to rhyme.
<i>Roem</i> , glory.	<i>Rij-den</i> , to ride.
<i>Rond</i> , round.	<i>Rij-zen</i> , to rise.
<i>Rood</i> , red.	<i>Re den</i> , reason.
<i>Ram</i> , ram.	<i>Red-den</i> , to save.
<i>Roos</i> , rose.	<i>Knor-ren</i> , to murmur.
<i>Kar</i> , char.	<i>Nar-ren</i> , fools.

S.

This letter is, in the english language, *sharp* or *flat*; in dutch it is always *sharp*.

<i>Se-dert</i> , since.	<i>Stra-len</i> , beams.
-------------------------	--------------------------

Sa-bel, fabre.
Sol-daat, foldier.
Sui-ker, fugar.
Staal, fteel.

Kus-fen, to kiss.
Sus-fen, to filence.
Tus-fchen, between.
Das-fen, cravats.

T,

founds like the english *t* in *tongue*.

Teer, tender.
Teen, toe.
Toon, tone,
Tam, tame.

To-ren, fteeple.
Zet-ten, to put.
Pot-ten, pots.
Zot-ten, fools.

V.

V is flat *f*, and bears the fame relation to it as *b* does to *p*.

Van, of, from.
Veel, much.
Visch, fish.
Voor, before.
Veld, field.
Val, fall.
Vriend, friend.

Van-gen, to catch.
val len, to fall.
Vor-men, to form.
Vou-wen, to plait.
Le-ven, to live.
Be-ven, to tremble.
Ge-ven, to give.

W.

This letterounds like the english *w* in *froward*, *well*, *wish*.

Worst, faufage.
Wond, wound.
Wel, well.
Was, wax.
Wees, orphan.
Wie, who.

Was-fen, to grow.
Wer-ken, to work.
Wit-ten, to whiten.
Wil-len, to will.
Wor-den, to become.
Wan-den, walls.

X.

Sounds like *ks*, and is only ufed in words and nouns proper deriving from the learned languages.

Xer-xes, Xerxes.

Xe-no-phon, Xenophon.

Z.

Is the flat found of *s*.

<i>Zin</i> , sense.	<i>Zon-der</i> , without.
<i>Ziel</i> , soul.	<i>Zon-de</i> , fins.
<i>Zon</i> , sun.	<i>Zin-gen</i> , to sing.
<i>Zoon</i> , son.	<i>Zor-gen</i> , to care.
<i>Zool</i> , sole.	<i>Zo-mer</i> , summer.
<i>Zijn</i> , to be.	<i>Ze-ker</i> , sure.
<i>Zeep</i> , soap.	<i>Zwe-den</i> , Sweden.

Ch, as we have already observed, found like *g*; it is therefore necessary to know the words, which are spelled with *g*. They are to be found in the following list. All others have *ch*:

<i>Beïgten</i> , to accuse.	<i>Ik magt</i> , I might.
<i>Berigt</i> , report, account.	<i>Nogtans</i> , nevertheless.
<i>Borgtogt</i> , caution.	<i>Onderrigt</i> , instruction.
<i>Bogt</i> , bend.	<i>Ontzag</i> , respect.
<i>Dragt</i> , weight.	<i>Opregt</i> , sincere.
<i>Eendragt</i> , union.	<i>Opzigt</i> , direction.
<i>Gedrogt</i> , monster.	<i>Plegtig</i> , solemn.
<i>Geregt</i> , justice.	<i>Pligt</i> , duty.
<i>Gewigt</i> , weight.	<i>Regt</i> , right.
<i>Gezag</i> , authority.	<i>Regts</i> , righthanded.
<i>Gezigt</i> , sight.	<i>Regten</i> , to judge.
<i>Honig</i> , honey.	<i>Togt</i> , tour, voyage.
<i>Jagt</i> , yacht.	<i>Verrigten</i> , to execute.
<i>Klagt</i> , complaint.	<i>Vlugt</i> , flight.
<i>Magt</i> , power.	<i>Zigtbaar</i> , visible.

H O M O N Y M I E S,

with are spelled with *g* or *ch*, and have different significations or acceptations.

<i>Digt</i> , closed.	<i>Dicht</i> , poem.
<i>Dog</i> , dog.	<i>Doch</i> , but.
<i>Egel</i> , hedgehog.	<i>Echel</i> , leach.
<i>Gelag</i> , scot.	<i>Gelach</i> , laughing.

Geslagt, killed.

Ligt, light.

Ng, still.

Slagten, to kill.

Wigt, weight.

Geslacht, gendre.

Licht, light.

Noch, ni.

Slachten, to resemble.

Wicht, baby, little child.

The compounded words are spelled like the simple one's, viz: *tweedragt*, discord; *lichtstraal*, beam; *maanlicht*, moonlight; and not: *maanligt*, *ligtstraal*.

L I S T

of words, spelled with double e.

The plural of substantives, ending in the singular in *eel*, viz: *deel*, party; *deelen*, parties.

Alleenig, alone.

Alreede, already.

Beenen, legs, bones.

Beeren, bears.

Begeeren, to desire.

Beheeren, to govern.

Beledigen, to insult.

Beleemen, to loam.

Bleeken, to bleach.

Bleeten, to bloat.

Breede, large, broad.

Deegen, dough.

Deelen, to partake.

Deesem, leaven.

Dweeper, fanatic.

Eeden, oaths.

Eene, one.

Eeren, to honour.

Fleemen, to flatter.

Gedwee, supple.

Geepen, certain fish.

Geeren, to lean.

Geefelen, to whip.

Geheele, entire.

Gemeene, common.

Gereedelijk, immediately.

Graveelig, expensive.

Greele, horse-collars.

Greenen, fir-wood.

Heepen, chopper.

Heefcher, more hoarse.

Heeten, to call.

Houweelen, hoes.

Keeren, to turn.

Kleeden, to dress.

Kleemen, to cleave.

Kleene, small.

Krakeelen, to quarrel.

Kreete, cry.

Leeder, more sorrowful.

Leeken, laymen.

Leelijk, ugly.

Leemen, to plaster with clay.

Leeper, more cunning.

<i>Leeren</i> , to learn.	<i>Vee</i> , cattle.
<i>Meenen</i> , to mean.	<i>Veede</i> , hatred.
<i>Meesen</i> , titmice.	<i>Veeme</i> , club.
<i>Paneelen</i> , pannels.	<i>Veenen</i> , fenn.
<i>Ree</i> , doe.	<i>Vereenigen</i> , to unite.
<i>Reeder</i> , partner in a ship.	<i>Vermeeren</i> , to augment.
<i>Reepen</i> , flashes.	<i>Vleeschelijk</i> , charnel.
<i>Scheede</i> , sheath.	<i>Vreezen</i> , to fear.
<i>Scheenen</i> , shins.	<i>Wee</i> , wo.
<i>Scheeve</i> , awry.	<i>Weede</i> , woad.
<i>Smeecken</i> , to suppley.	<i>Weenen</i> , to weep.
<i>Streemen</i> , marks of stripes.	<i>Wijsgeerig</i> , philosophical.
<i>Streelen</i> , to stroke.	<i>Wreeder</i> , more cruel.
<i>Teeder</i> , tender.	<i>Zee</i> , sea.
<i>Teeken</i> , sign.	<i>Zeemeleder</i> , chamois.
<i>Teenen</i> , toes.	<i>Zeepen</i> , to soap.
<i>Teezen</i> , to pick.	<i>Zeeren</i> , to hurt.
<i>Thee</i> , tea.	<i>Zeever</i> , drivel.
<i>Tooneel</i> , scene.	<i>Zweemen</i> , to resemble.
<i>Truweelen</i> , trowels.	<i>Zweepen</i> , to whip.
<i>Twee</i> , two.	<i>Zwecten</i> , to sweat.

H O M O N Y M I E S ,

spelled with *e* or *ee*, and which have different acceptions.

<i>Beete</i> , red beet.	<i>Bete</i> , bit.
<i>Geene</i> , none.	<i>Gene</i> , the latter.
<i>Heelen</i> , to cure.	<i>Helen</i> , to conceal.
<i>Heeren</i> , gentlemen.	<i>Heren</i> , armies.
<i>Keelen</i> , narrow piece of board.	<i>Kelen</i> , throats.
<i>Keeten</i> , saltworks.	<i>Keten</i> , chain.
<i>Kweeken</i> , to cultivate.	<i>Kweken</i> , to chatter.
<i>Leeder</i> , more sorrowful.	<i>Leder</i> , leather.
<i>Leenen</i> , to lend.	<i>Lenen</i> , to lean.
<i>Meede</i> , hydromel.	<i>Mede</i> , <i>mes</i> , with.
<i>Meeren</i> , to moor.	<i>Meren</i> , lakes.
<i>Reede</i> , road.	<i>Rede</i> , speech.
<i>Scheele</i> , separation of the hair.	<i>Scheele</i> , squinteyed.
<i>Steenen</i> , stones.	<i>Stenen</i> , to grown.
<i>Veege</i> , fatal.	<i>Vegen</i> , to sweep, to clean.
<i>Weeken</i> , to steep.	<i>Weken</i> , weeks.
<i>Weezen</i> , orphans.	<i>Wezen</i> , to be.

L I S T

of words, spelled with double o.

<i>Alsoo</i> , thus.	<i>Looze</i> , empty, false.
<i>Behooren</i> , to belong.	<i>Moolik</i> , scare-crow.
<i>Bloode</i> , timid.	<i>Mooren</i> , moors.
<i>Blootelijk</i> , alone.	<i>Mooten</i> , slice.
<i>Boomen</i> , trees.	<i>Nooden</i> , needs.
<i>Boonen</i> , beans.	<i>Onderhoorig</i> , adjacent.
<i>Boozer</i> , more angry.	<i>Onnoozel</i> , innocent.
<i>Brooden</i> , breads.	<i>Oogen</i> , eyes.
<i>Dooden</i> , to kill.	<i>Oolijk</i> , cunning.
<i>Doopen</i> , to baptise.	<i>Oomen</i> , uncles.
<i>Doover</i> , more deaf.	<i>Ooren</i> , ears.
<i>Doozen</i> , boxes.	<i>Poozen</i> , to pause.
<i>Droogen</i> , to dry.	<i>Ringelooren</i> , to vex.
<i>Droomen</i> , to dream.	<i>Rode</i> , red.
<i>Foolen</i> , to fondle.	<i>Rooken</i> , to smoke.
<i>Gedoogen</i> , to suffer.	<i>Stoomen</i> , steams.
<i>Mededoogen</i> , pity.	<i>Stoopen</i> , certain measure.
<i>Gelooven</i> , to believe.	<i>Stooten</i> , to push.
<i>Goochelen</i> , to juggle.	<i>Stroo</i> , straw.
<i>Grooter</i> , greater.	<i>Strooken</i> , to agree.
<i>Hooger</i> , higher.	<i>Stroomen</i> , floods, rivers.
<i>Hoovaardig</i> , pride.	<i>Stroopen</i> , to plunder.
<i>Joolen</i> , simpletons.	<i>Toomen</i> , to bridle.
<i>Kleinooden</i> , jewels.	<i>Tooneel</i> , stage, theatre.
<i>Klooten</i> , globes.	<i>Toonen</i> , tones.
<i>Knoopen</i> , buttons.	<i>Toonen</i> , toes.
<i>Koonen</i> , cheeks.	<i>Toonen</i> , to show.
<i>Koopen</i> , to buy.	<i>Tooveren</i> , to bewitch.
<i>Kroonen</i> , to crown.	<i>Troonen</i> , thrones.
<i>Loochenen</i> , to deny.	<i>Vernooten</i> , companions.
<i>Looden</i> , leaden.	<i>Vertoogen</i> , to demonstrate.
<i>Loomer</i> , slower.	<i>Vloo</i> , flea.
<i>Loonen</i> , to reward.	<i>Vooze</i> , spungy.
<i>Loover</i> , wearier.	<i>Zoo</i> , thus.
<i>Loopen</i> , to leap.	<i>Zoomen</i> , to seam.
<i>Looze</i> , cunning.	<i>Zoere</i> , rude.

H O M O N Y N I E S,

spelled with *o* or *oo*, and which have different acceptations:

<i>Betoogen</i> , to prove.	<i>Betogen</i> , to conceal.
<i>Booten</i> , shallops.	<i>Boten</i> , ornament of jewels or gold.
<i>Genooten</i> , (*)	<i>Genoten</i> , enjoyed.
<i>Hoopen</i> , heaps.	<i>Hopen</i> , to hope.
<i>Hooren</i> , to hear.	<i>Horen</i> , horn.
<i>Hoozen</i> , water-spouts.	<i>Hozen</i> , breeches.
<i>Koolen</i> , cabbage.	<i>Kolen</i> , coals.
<i>Loogen</i> , to scour with lye.	<i>Logen</i> , lie, falsehood.
<i>Loove</i> , fatigued.	<i>Loven</i> , to praise.
<i>Looze</i> , (§)	<i>Lozen</i> , <i>lofsen</i> , to rid.
<i>Nooten</i> , noten.	<i>Noten</i> , nuts.
<i>Pooten</i> , paws.	<i>Poten</i> , to plant.
<i>Roome</i> , cream.	<i>Rome</i> , Rom.
<i>Schooten</i> , laps.	<i>Schoten</i> , shots.
<i>Slooten</i> , moats, ditches.	<i>Sloten</i> , locks.

D I A L O G U E S,

adapted to exercise one's self in pronunciation.

I.

<i>Wij leeren de hollandsche taal.</i>	We learn the dutch language.
<i>Laat ons hollandsch spreken,</i>	Let us speak dutch.
<i>Wees oplettend,</i>	Pay attention.
<i>Spreek duidelyk,</i>	Speak distinctly.
<i>Spreek uit,</i>	Pronounce.
<i>Spreek niet te gaauw,</i>	Don't speak too quick.
<i>Dat is beter,</i>	That's better.
<i>Gij hebt gelijk,</i>	You are in the right.
<i>Gij hebt ongelijk,</i>	You are in the wrong.
<i>Het is mogelijk,</i>	It is possible.
<i>Het is niet onmogelyk,</i>	It is not impossible.

(*) Termination of several substantives.

(§) Termination of several adverbs.

*Het is waar ,
Is het waar ?
Is het niet waar ?
Ik weet het ,
Hij weet het niet ,
Weet hij het ?
Weten zij het ?
Neen ; niemand weet het ,*

It is true.
Is it true ?
Is it not true ?
I know it.
He don't know it.
Does he know it ?
Do they know it ?
No ; nobody knows it.

2.

*Ik verzeker u ,
Ik heb het gezien ,
Ik heb het gehoord ,
Op mijne eer ,
Geloof mij ,
Gelooft gij hem ?
Gelooft gij haar niet ?
Zij bedriegt mij .
Hij bedriegt u niet .
Gij hebt het mis .
Wie spreekt daar ?
Ik ben het .
Wat vertelt gij ?
Wat zegt hij ?
Zegt hij iets ?
Hij spreekt altijd .
Hij zegt de waarheid .
Zwijg ,
Spreek geen enkel woord ,
Ik gehoorzaam ,*

I assure you.
I have seen it.
I have heard it.
Upon my honour.
Believe me.
Do you believe him ?
Don't you believe her ?
She deceives me.
He does not deceive you.
You are mistaken.
Who speaks there ?
It is I.
What do you tell ?
What does he say ?
Does he say anything ?
He speaks always.
He speaks true.
Be silent.
Don't speak a single word.
I obey.

3.

*Kom hier ,
Verstaat gij mij ?
Verstaat zij mij niet ?
Ik geloof ja ,
Ik geloof het niet ,
Maak plaats ,
Ga daar zitten ,
Ga uwen weg ,
Wacht een weinig ,*

Come hither.
Do you understand me ?
Does she not understand me ?
I believe yes.
I don't believe it.
Make room.
Sit down there.
Go your way.
Wait a little.

*Ik kom dadelijk ,
Maak haast ,
Ik durf niet ,
Ik ben er bang voor ,
Gij komt terug ,
Komt zij terug ?
Waar is uw neef ?
Waar zijn uwe broeders ?
Waar zijn uwe vrienden ?
Zij zijn in den tuin ,
Zij gaan naar de buiten-
plaats ,
Zij komen terug .*

I come immediately.
Make haste.
I dare not.
I am afraid of it.
You come back.
Does she come back ?
Where is your cousin ?
Where are your brothers ?
Where are your friends ?
They are in the garden.
They go to the countryseat.
They come back.

4.

*Kent gij dien man ?
Kent zij die dame ?
Kennen zij ons ?
Neen , zij kennen niemand ,
Ik geloof , dat zij ons allen
kennen ,
Het kan waar zijn ,
Ik twijfel er aan ,
Twijfelt gij er aan ?
Wij twijfelen niet ,
Wij zijn er verzekerd van ,
Wij zullen het wagen ,
Vraagt gij iets ?
Neen , wij vragen zelden ,
Dat verwondert mij ,
Het verwondert mij ,
Ik spreek het niet tegen ,
Dat verheugt mij ,
Verheugt het u ?*

Do you know that man ?
Does she know that lady ?
Do they know us ?
No , they know nobody.
I suppose , they know us
all.
It may be true.
I question it.
Do you doubt of it ?
We do not doubt.
We are asured of it.
We will ask it.
Do you ask something ?
No , we seldom ask.
I wonder at it.
It surprises me.
I say nothing to the contrary.
I am glad of it.
Are you glad of it ?

5.

*Wat weer is het van daag ?
Het is goed weer ,
Is het goed weer ?
Het is slecht weer ,
Is het slecht weer ?*

How is the weather to day ?
It is good weather.
Is it good weather ?
It is bad weather.
Is it bad weather ?

<i>Ja, het is zeer slecht weer,</i>	Yes, it is very bad weather.
<i>Was het slecht weer?</i>	Was it bad weather?
<i>Het regent,</i>	It rains.
<i>Regent het?</i>	Does it rain?
<i>Regent het niet?</i>	Does it not rain?
<i>Het regent dat het giet,</i>	It rains as fast as it can pour.
<i>Het dondert,</i>	It thunders.
<i>Dondert het?</i>	Does it thunder?
<i>De donder rommelt,</i>	The thunder roars.
<i>Het bliksemt,</i>	It lightens.
<i>Zie daar een' bliksemstraal,</i>	There is a flash of lightning.
<i>Ik zie eenen regenboog,</i>	I see a rainbow.
<i>Ik ben nat,</i>	I am wet.
<i>Zijt gij ook nat?</i>	Are you wet too?
<i>Ja, een weinig,</i>	Yes, a little.
<i>Ik zie het niet,</i>	I don't see it.
<i>Het vriest,</i>	It freezes.
<i>Het vriest zeer hard,</i>	It freezes very hard.
<i>Vriest het niet?</i>	Does it not freeze?
<i>Het sneeuwt,</i>	It snows.
<i>Sneeuwt het niet?</i>	Does it not snow?
<i>Het is veranderlijk weer,</i>	It is changeable weather.
<i>Het is onbestendig weer,</i>	It is variable weather.
<i>De wind is veranderd,</i>	The wind is changed.
<i>Het waait hard,</i>	The wind blows hard.
<i>Daar is veel wind,</i>	There is a great deal of wind.
<i>Het zal stormen,</i>	We will have a storm.
<i>Het begint op te helderen,</i>	It begins to clear up.
<i>De zon schijnt,</i>	The sun shines.
<i>Schijnt de zon?</i>	Does the sun shine?
<i>Het is heet,</i>	It is hot.
<i>Het is te heet,</i>	It is too hot.
<i>De hette is zeer hinderlijk,</i>	The heat is very inconvenient.
<i>Het is stikkend heet,</i>	It is sultry hot.

6.

Hoe vaart gij?
Hoe vaart zij?
Zeer wel,

How do you do?
 How does she do?
 Very well.

<i>Tot uwen dienst ,</i>	At your service.
<i>Zeer wel ,</i>	Extremely well.
<i>Tamelijk wel ,</i>	Tolerably well.
<i>Ik ben er verblid over ,</i>	I am glad of it.
<i>Het verheugt mij ,</i>	It rejoices me.
<i>Hoe vaart uw vader ?</i>	How does your father do ?
<i>Hij vaart zeer wel ,</i>	He is very well.
<i>Maar mijne moeder is ziek ,</i>	But my mother is sick.
<i>Zij heeft de koorts ,</i>	She has the fever.
<i>Zij heeft eene koude gevat ,</i>	She has got a cold.
<i>Zij heeft hoofdpijn ,</i>	She has got the head-ache.
<i>Heeft zij buikpijn ?</i>	Has she a belly-ache ?
<i>De dokter komt ,</i>	The physician comes.
<i>Hij zal het ons zeggen ,</i>	He will tell it us.
<i>Zij is gevaarlijk ziek ,</i>	She is dangerously ill.
<i>Zij heeft eene brandende koorts ,</i>	She has a burning fever.
<i>Is het eene afgaande koorts ?</i>	Is it an intermittent fever ?
<i>In het geheel niet ,</i>	Not at all.
<i>Het gevaar is over ,</i>	The danger is past.
<i>Ik dacht dat zij onherstelbaar was ,</i>	I thought she was past recovery.

7.

<i>Goeden morgen ,</i>	Good morning.
<i>Goeden avond ,</i>	Good evening.
<i>Goeden dag ,</i>	Good day.
<i>Ik wensch u eenen goeden morgen ,</i>	I wish you a good morning.
<i>Ik wensch u hetzelfde ,</i>	I wish it you likewise.
<i>Hoe hebt gij dezen nacht geslapen ?</i>	How did you sleep last night ?
<i>Zeer wel ,</i>	Very well.
<i>Ik heb vast geslapen ,</i>	I have slept very soundly.
<i>Ik niet te wel ,</i>	I not too well.
<i>Ik was verschrikt ,</i>	I was frightened.
<i>Ik was ongesteld ,</i>	I was indisposed.
<i>Ik was misnoegd ,</i>	I was discontent.
<i>Wij waren boos ,</i>	We were angry.
<i>Wij konden geen oog toe doen ,</i>	We could not get a wink of sleep.
<i>Dat is onaangenaam ,</i>	That is disagreeable.
<i>Dat is vervelend ,</i>	That is tiresome.

<i>Waar is mijne spraakkunst?</i>	Where is my grammar?
<i>Hebt gij mijn schrijfboek?</i>	Have you my writingbook?
<i>Heeft zij mijnen pennenkoker?</i>	Has she my pen-case?
<i>Waar hebt gij uw boek ge- legd?</i>	Where did you put your book?
<i>Ik heb het op de tafel ge- legd,</i>	I put it upon the table.
<i>Het is een uur geleden,</i>	It is an hour ago.
<i>Het is verloren,</i>	It is lost.
<i>Zij heeft het gevonden,</i>	She has found it.
<i>Geloof het niet,</i>	Don't believe it.
<i>Gij bedriegt u,</i>	You are mistaken.
<i>Leg de boeken op hunne plaats,</i>	Put the books in their pla- ces.
<i>Dan zult gij dezelve niet verliezen,</i>	Then you will never loose them.
<i>Gij hebt gelijk,</i>	You are in the right.
<i>Ik weet het bij ondervinding,</i>	I know it by experience.
<i>Vermaak mij eene pen,</i>	Make me a pen.
<i>Ik heb er u dezen morgen eene vermaakt,</i>	I have made you one this morning
<i>Zij deugt niet,</i>	It is good for nothing.
<i>Zij is zeer goed,</i>	It is very good.
<i>Zij is veel beter,</i>	It is much better.
<i>De inkt is te dik,</i>	The ink is too thick.
<i>Zij vloeit niet,</i>	It does not run.
<i>Zij is zwart genoeg,</i>	It is black enough.
<i>Doe er eenige druppels water bij.</i>	Put some drops of water to it.

<i>Geef mij papier,</i>	Give me paper.
<i>Gemeen papier,</i>	Common paper.
<i>Hoe vele bladen hebt gij noo- dig?</i>	How many sheets do you want?
<i>Geef mij zes bladen,</i>	Give me six sheets.
<i>Zij zijn tot urwen dienst,</i>	They are at your service.
<i>Ik moet mijn opstel schrijven,</i>	I must write my exercise.
<i>Ik moet mijne hollandsche lessen leeren,</i>	I must learn my dutch les- son.

*Wij moeten beginnen,
Moet hij geene brieven schrijven?*

*Ik weet er niets van,
Hij moet aan zijnen oom schrijven,*

*Waar is de brief?
Breng hem op de post,
Hij is nog niet toegemaakt,*

*Geef mij ouwels,
Hier is lak,
Frankeer hem,
Ik heb geen geld,
Leen mij wat,*

We must begin.
Must he not write letters?

I know nothing on it.
He must write to his uncle.

Where is the letter?
Bring it to the post-office.
It is not yet sealed.

Give me wafers.
Here is sealing wax.
Pay the postage.
I have no money.
Lend me some.

10.

*Wij gaan ontbijten,
Hoe laat ontbijt gij?*

*Te acht uren,
Het ontbijt it gereed,
Wilt gij brood en boter?*

*Geef mij een kop thee,
Ik ben een iefhebber van
thee,*

*Ik verkies koffij,
Uwe thee is heerlijk,
Waar koopt gij die?*

*In dien grooten winkel,
Over de kerk,
De thee is te sterk,*

*Doe er wat water bij,
Hier is rogenbrood,
Geef mij kaas,*

*Groene kaas,
Dat is lekkere kaas,
Wilt gij meer hebben?*

Ik bedank u,

We are going to breakfast.
At what o' clock do you
breakfast?

At eight o' clock.
Breakfast is ready.
Do you choose bread and
butter?

Give me a cup of tea.
I am a lover of tea.

I prefer coffee.
Your tea is excellent.
Where do you buy it?
In that great shop.

Over against the church.
The tea is too strong.
Add some water to it.

Here is brown bread.
Give me cheese.
Green cheese.

That cheese is excellent.
Will you have more?
I return you thanks.

*Het eten is gereed,
Het is half drie,
Het is reeds drie uren,
Het zal half vier slaan,*

*Ik kom met u eten,
Gij zijt welkom,
Gij doet mij te veel eer aan,
Hier is gebraden vleesch,
Houdt gij van spinazie?
Ik hou er veel van,
Dat vleesch is zeer malsch,
Is het naar uwen smaak?
Zult gij eenige aardappelen
nemen?*

*Neem een glas wijn,
Ik doe een goed maal,
Dat is maar een kompliment,
Vergeef mij,
Neem wat groenten?
Ik heb genoeg gegeten,
Wat zullen wij na den maal-
tijd doen?*

*Laat ons dan eene kleine
wandeling doen,*

*Ik stem er in toe,
Dat is een goede inval,
Wij zullen in uwen tuin gaan,
Ik verlang denzelfven te zien,
Gij hebt schoone bloemen,
Wij zullen de wandeling uit-
stellen,*

*Morgen zal ik u vergezel-
len,*

Dinner is ready.
It is half an hour past two.
It is already three o' clock.
Half an hour past three will
strike.

I come to dine with you.
You are wellcome.
You do me too much honour.
Here is roast beef.
Do you like spinage?
I am a great lover of it.
That beef is very tender.
Is it of your taste?
Will you take some pota-
toes?

Take a glass of wine.
I make a good meal.
That is but a compliment.
I ask you pardon.
Take some vegetables.
I have eaten sufficiently.
What shall we do after
dinner?

Let us take then a little
walk.

I agree to it.
That's a good thought.
We shall go in your garden.
I shall be glad to see it.
You have fine flowers.
We will put off the walk.

To morrow I shall accom-
pany you.

*Waar gaat gij dezen avond
naar toe?
Naar den schouwburg,
Naar het concert,*

Whither do you go this eve-
ning?
To the play.
To the concert.

<i>Zullen wij naar de vauxhall gaan?</i>	Shall we go to vauxhall?
<i>Ja, ik houd van muziek,</i>	Yes, I like musick.
<i>Wij zullen op de viool spelen,</i>	We shall play on the fiddle.
<i>Zij stemt niet,</i>	It is not in tune.
<i>Mciuffrouw N. zingt goed,</i>	Miss N. sings very good.
<i>Zij heeft eene zachte en wel-luidende stem,</i>	She has a sweet harmonious voice.
<i>Zij is eene der beste zangeresen,</i>	She is one of the best singers.
<i>En haar broeder een der beste acteurs,</i>	And her brother one of the best actors.
<i>Deze vauxhall is zeer fraai,</i>	This vauxhall is very fine.
<i>Niets is prachtiger,</i>	Nothing is more magnificent.
<i>Het is een aardsch paradijs,</i>	It is a terrestrial paradise.
<i>Zij is verlicht door vele lampen,</i>	It is lightened up by many lamps.
<i>Zij maken eene fraaije vertooning,</i>	They make a fine show.
<i>Het begint laat te worden,</i>	It begins to grow late.
<i>Wij zullen naar huis gaan,</i>	We are going home.

P A R T. II.

O F

E T Y M O L O G Y.

S E C T I O N I.

Explanation of the parts of speech.

Uitlegging der rededeelen.

There are, in the dutch language, ten sorts of words, which are generally called the ten parts of speech, viz :

<i>Het zelfstandig naamwoord,</i>	The substantive.
<i>Het lidwoord,</i>	The article.
<i>Het bijvoegelijke naamwoord,</i>	The adjective.
<i>Het voornaamwoord,</i>	The pronoun.
<i>Het werkwoord,</i>	The verb.
<i>De telwoorden,</i>	The nouns of numbers.
<i>De bijwoorden,</i>	The adverbs.
<i>De voorzetsels,</i>	The prepositions.
<i>Het voegwoord,</i>	The conjunction.
<i>Het tusfchemwerpsel,</i>	The interjection.

A substantive is a word that denotes a person, or a thing. It makes sense by itself, and we can place *de*, the, or *een*, a, before it: *de man*, the man; *een boek*, a book.

An article is a word prefixed to substantives, to

limit or determine their signification, as: *de*, the; *een*, a.

An adjective is a word that expresses the quality of a substantive, as: *goed*, good; *lang*, long.

The pronoun is a word commonly substituted in the place of the noun, to avoid its too frequent repetition; for instance: *Ik zag den vader en sprak tot hem*, I saw the father, and spoke to him. In this instance the word *hem*, him, is put to avoid the repetition of the word *vader*, father.

The verb is a word which either expresses the state of the subject, or an action done by the subject, or an action received or suffered by the subject, for instance: *zijn*, to be; *schrijven*, to write; *gestraft worden*, to be punished.

The nouns of number denote the quantity of persons or things: *tien kinderen*, ten children; *honderd tafels*, hundred tables.

An adverb is a word that determines the signification of an adnoun or verb: it expresses some particular modification or circumstance of the action or quality, as: *hard loopen*, to run fast; *oprecht beminnen*, to love sincerely.

Prepositions are words or particles, placed before nouns, or personal pronouns, to show the relation they have to other words: and it is their being generally placed before these words, that gives them their name. *In mijn huis*, in my house; *door den vader geschreven*, written by the father.

Conjunctions are words that join words, sentences, or members of sentences together, in such a manner as to show their connection with, or dependence upon one another, as: *ik en gij*, I and you; *hij schrijft, maar wij spelen*, he writes, but we play.

Interjections are words that express some passion or emotion of the mind, as: *helaas!* alas! *oh!* oh!

SECTION II.

*Of articles and substantives.**Van de lidwoorden en zelfstandige naamwoorden.*

In dutch, there are but two articles *de*, the; and *een*, a.

De, the, is called the definite article, because it ascertains what particular thing or things are meant, as: *geef mij de pen*, give me the pen; *breng ons den hoed*, bring us the hat, meaning some pen or some hat referred to.

Een is styled the indefinite article: it is used in a vague sense, to point out one single thing of the kind, in other respects indeterminate, as: *geef mij een boek*, give me a book; *breng mij eene pen*, bring me a pen.

The peculiar use and importance of the articles will be seen in the following examples: :

De zoon van eenen koning, The son of a king.
De zoon van den koning, The son of the king.
Een zoon van den koning, A son of the king.
Een zoon van eenen koning, A son of a king.

Substantives are either proper, or common.

Proper names or substantives, *eigennamen*, are names proper to one person, or one thing only, as: *Alexander*, Alexander; *Theems*, Thames.

Common names or substantives, *gemeene zelfstandige naamwoorden*, stand for kinds containing many sorts, or for sorts containing many individuals under them, as: *boom*, tree; *man*, mensch; *huis* house.

To substantives belong: gender, *geslacht*, number, *getal*, and cases, *naamvallen*.

1. *Of genders.*

Van de geslachten.

In dutch are three genders, the masculine, *het mannelijke*, the feminine, *het vrouwelijke*, and the neuter, *het onzijdige*.

It is imposible to give sufficient rules upon the genders, the following one's will, however, facilitate the beginners.

Masculine are:

1. All the words signifying males, as: *koning*, king; *staatsdienaar*, minister; *bakker*, baker; *Pieter*, Peter; *Jan*, John.

1. Exceptions: *wacht*, guard; *lifwacht*, lifeguard; *nachtwacht*, nightguard; which are feminine.

2. The names of precious stones: *de agaath*, the agate; *de saffier*, the saphire; *de diamant*, the diamond.

3. Words ending in *dom*, and expressing a rank, station or circumstance, as: *de adeldom*, the nobility; *de ouderdom*, old age; *de rijkdom*, riches; *de eigendom*, propriety.

4. Almost all the words ending in *rm*, *em*, *sem*, *lm*, as: *de bliksem*, lightning; *de arm*, the arm; *de bezem*, the broom; *de bodem*, the bottom; *de galm*, the sound; *de worm*, the worm; *de vorm*, the mould.

Feminine are:

1. The names of women, and all the words signifying females, as: *Maria*, Mary; *Catharina*, Catherine; *de koningin*, the queen; *de naaister*, the seamstress; *de abdis*, the abbess; *de tijgerin*, the tigress.

Exception: *het wijf*, the wife; *het meisje*, the girl; which are neuter.

2. All the letters of the alphabeth, as: *eene b*, a b; *eene a*, an a.

3. The numbers with an article: *de zes*, the six; *de zeven*, the seventh.

The collective numbers are neuter: *het honderd*, an hundred; *het dozijn*, a dozen; *het twintigtal*, a score or twenty; *het duizend*, a thousand.

4. The substantives ending in *schap*, and deriving from adjectives, as: *gramschap*, anger; *dronkschap*, drunkenness; *blijdschap*, joy.

Also those deriving from substantives, and expressing an assembly of persons: *de broederschap*, fraternity, society; *de burgerschap*, corporation of a city; *de priesterschap*, priesthood.

But these words are neuter, when they signify a dignity: *het burgerschap*, the right of citizen; *het stadhouderchap*, the dignity of stadholder.

5. Words ending in *ing*, deriving from verbs, as: *de belooning*, the reward; *de vergelding*, the recompense; *de bevestiging*, the affirmation; from the verbs: *beloonen*, to reward; *vergelden*, to recompense; *bevestigen*, to affirm.

6. Substantives ending in *ij*, as: *de waardij*, the value; *de maatschappij*, society; *de veelwijverij*, polygamy; *de hovaardij*, pride.

Except those preceded by the preposition *ge*, which are neuter: *het getij*, the tide; *het gerij*, riding.

7. The greater part of words ending in *nis*, and deriving from verbs, as: *belijdenis*, confession; from *belijden*, to confess; *de ergernis*, offence; from *ergeren*, to offend.

Exception: *het vonnis*, the sentence; *het* or *de getuigenis*, testimony, evidence; the latter is neuter and feminine.

6. Substantives ending in *heid*, as: *de rechtvaardigheid*, justice; *de vrolijkheid*, gayety; *de grootheid*, grandour; *de goedheid*, bounty.

9. Those ending in *te* and deriving from adnouns: *de hoogte*, highness; *de grootte*, grandour; *de flauwte*, faintness; *de schuinte*, declivity.

Neuter are:

1. All the nouns proper of cities, villages and countries, as: *het uitgestrekte Rusland*, the extensive Russia; *het rijke Londen*, the rich London.

2. The infinitive mood of a verb, used like a substantive: *het eten*, eating; *het lagchen*, laughing; *het spelen*, playing.

3. The substantives deriving from verbs, by retrenching the termination; as: *het geschreeuw*, crying,

from *schreeuwen*, to cry; *het gebouw*, edifice; from *bouwen*, to build; *het geraas*, the noise; from *razen*, to make noise.

4. Substantives beginning by *ge*, and ending in *te*, as: *het gebergte*, the mountains; *het geboomte*, the trees; *het gebeente*, the bones.

5. All the diminutives; the end in *je* or *tje*: *kamertje*, little chamber; *tuintje*, little garden; *huisje*, little house, cottage.

6. Substantives ending in *sel*, and deriving from verbs, as: *het dekfel*, the coverlet; *het schepsel*, the creature.

Compound substantives preserve the gender of the last word: *bierkan*, tankard, is feminine, because the last word *kan* is of that gender.

The masculine and feminine genders are sometimes distinguished by different words, or by altering the termination, as:

Man, man.
Broeder, brother.
Zoon, son.
Neef, nephew.
Profeet, prophet.
Zanger, chanter.
Bode, mesfenger.
Jood, jew.
Herder, shepherd.
Graaf, count, earl.
Baas, master.
Koning, king.
Hertog, duke.
Stier, bull.
Haan, cock.
Reu, dog.
Gent, gander.
Hert, hart.
Knaap, lad.
Heer, lord.
Ram, ram.
Oom, uncle.
Toovenaar, wizzard.
Held, hero.

Vrouw, woman.
Zuster, sifter.
Dochter, daughter.
Nicht, niece.
Profetes, prophetess.
Zangeres, chanter.
Bodin, female mesfenger.
Jodin, jewess.
Herderin, shepherdess.
Gravin, countess.
Bazin, mistress.
Koningin, queen.
Hertogin, dutchess.
Koe, cow.
Hen, hen.
Tees, bitch.
Gans, goose.
Ree, hinde, doe.
Meisje, deern, lass.
Dame, lady.
Schaap, ewe.
Tante, aunt.
Tooverheks, witch.
Heldin, heroine.

<i>Dichter</i> , poet.	<i>Dichteres</i> , poetess.
<i>Voogd</i> , tutor.	<i>Voogdes</i> , tutress.
<i>Sultan</i> , sultan.	<i>Sultane</i> , sultanness.
<i>Verraser</i> , traitor.	<i>Verraderes</i> , traitress.
<i>Weduwnaar</i> , widower.	<i>Weduwe</i> , widow.
<i>Beschermer</i> , protector.	<i>Beschermster</i> , protectress.

The substantive *dood*, death, is masculine and feminine; and *oorlog*, war, is masculine, feminine and neuter.

I. *Of numbers.*

Van de getallen.

There are in dutch two numbers, the singular and plural, *het enkelvoudig en meervoudig*.

The singular number speaks of one thing only, as: *eene pen*, a pen; *een tuin*, a garden.

The plural number signifies more objects than one, as: *stoelen*, chairs; *huizen*, houses.

Some nouns, from the nature of the things they express, are used only in the singular form, as:

1. The names of metals: *goud*, gold; *zilyer*, silver; *koper*, copper, etc.

2. Those which signify the stuff, as: *vet*, fat; *leder* or *leer*, leather; *hout*, wood; *zand*, sand.

3. The infinitive word of a verb used like a substantive: *het eten*, eating; *het slapen*, the sleep.

4. The substantives deriving from verbs by retrenching the termination: *het geroep*, crying; *het gespeel*, playing.

5. The names of virtues, vices, passions, etc. *de hoogmoed*, pride; *de gierigheid*, avarice; *de eerlijkheid*, honesty; *de liefdadigheid*, charity; *de gehoorzaamheid*, obedience.

6. The names of our senses: *het gehoor*, hearing, *het gevoel*, feeling; *de reuk*, the smell; *het gezigt*, the sight; *de smaak*, the taste.

Kindschheid, infancy.
Honger, hunger.
Dorst, thirst.
Geluk, happiness.
Ouderdom, old age.
Vlugt, flight.
Bloed, blood.
Eer, honour.

Roem, glory.
Slaap, sleep.
Rook, smoke.
Adel, nobility.
Jeugd, youth.
Veiligheid, safety.
Schande, shame enz.

There are others which are never used but in the plural number only, as: *voorvaderen*, ancestors; *de ouders*, parents; *de hersenen*, the brains; *gezusters*, sisters; *gebroeders*, brothers; *de Alpen*, the Alps; *de Pijre-neën*, the Pyrenees; *de lieden*, people; *de inkomsten*, revenues; *de ingewanden*, entrails; *grenzen*, limits.

Formation of the plural.

The plural number of nouns is generally formed by adding *s* or *en* to the singular, as: *tafel*, table; *tafels*, tables; *hoed*, hat; *hoeden*, hats.

Words ending in *e* have only *n* in the plural:

Bede, prayer.
Hoogte, hill.
Moeite, trouble.
Gedachte, thought.
Geneuchte, enjoyment.
Gedeelte, part.
Gemeente, communion.

Beden, prayers.
Hoogten, hills.
Moeiten, troubles.
Gedachten, thoughts.
Geneuchten, enjoyments.
Gedeelten, parts.
Gemeenten, communions.

Also those ending in *ie*.

Kolonie, colony.
Provincie, provence.
Falie, veil.
Tralie, grate

Koloniën, colonies.
Provinciën, provinces.
Faliën, veils.
Traliën, grates.

The greater part of monosyllables have *en* in the plural, as:

Dier, animal.
Berg, mountain.
Werk, work.
Dwerg, dwarf.

Dieren, animals.
Bergen, mountains.
Werken, works.
Dwergen, dwarfs.

Except: *maat*, comrade; *maats*, comrades.

The disyllables, trisyllables and polysyllables ending in *el, en, er, om* and *aar*, have *s* in the plural.

<i>Zuster</i> , sister.	<i>Zusters</i> , sisters.
<i>Broeder</i> , brother.	<i>Broeders</i> , brothers.
<i>Mantel</i> , cloak.	<i>Mantels</i> , cloaks.
<i>Zakkedragër</i> , porter.	<i>Zakkedragers</i> , porters.
<i>Bezem</i> , broom.	<i>Bezems</i> , brooms.
<i>Molenaar</i> , miller.	<i>Molenaars</i> , millers.
<i>Degen</i> , sword.	<i>Degens</i> , swords.

Several words redouble the consonant in the plural, as:

<i>Kan</i> , pot.	<i>Kannen</i> , pots.
<i>Zak</i> , pocket.	<i>Zakken</i> , pockets.
<i>Mat</i> , mat.	<i>Matten</i> , mats.
<i>Hok</i> , cage.	<i>Hokken</i> , cages.
<i>Zot</i> , fool.	<i>Zotten</i> , fools.
<i>Bal</i> , ball.	<i>Ballen</i> , balls.
<i>Stok</i> , staf.	<i>Stokken</i> , staves.

Also those ending in *om* and *op*:

<i>Rijkdom</i> , riches.	<i>Rijkdommen</i> , riches.
<i>Hertogdom</i> , dukedom.	<i>Hertogdommen</i> , dukedoms.
<i>Kop</i> , head.	<i>Koppen</i> , heads.
<i>Pop</i> , puppet.	<i>Poppen</i> , puppets.

Also those in *ier*, when the stress is upon that syllable.

<i>Rivier</i> , river.	<i>Rivieren</i> , rivers.
<i>Lastdier</i> , beast of burden.	<i>Lastdieren</i> , beasts of burden.
<i>Bandelier</i> , bandoleer.	<i>Bandelieren</i> , bandoleers.

Except the following words, of which the short vowels of the singular become long in the plural.

<i>Dag</i> , day.	<i>Dagen</i> , days.
<i>Dak</i> , roof.	<i>Daken</i> , roofs.
<i>Dal</i> , valley.	<i>Dalen</i> , valleys.
<i>Gat</i> , hole.	<i>Gaten</i> , holes.
<i>Bad</i> , bath.	<i>Baden</i> , bathes.

<i>Pad</i> , path.	<i>Paden</i> , paths.
<i>Rad</i> , wheel.	<i>Raden</i> , wheels.
<i>Hertog</i> , duke.	<i>Hertogen</i> , dukes.
<i>Oorlog</i> , war.	<i>Oorlogen</i> , wars.
<i>Slot</i> , lock.	<i>Sloten</i> , locks.
<i>Blad</i> , leaf.	<i>Bladen</i> , leaves.
<i>Hol</i> , den.	<i>Holen</i> , dens.
<i>Vat</i> , tun.	<i>Vaten</i> , tuns.
<i>Lot</i> , lot.	<i>Loten</i> , lots.
<i>God</i> , God.	<i>Goden</i> , Gods.

Words spelled with a double vowel, a diphthongue or triphthongue do not double the consonant.

<i>Boom</i> , tree.	<i>Boomen</i> , trees.
<i>Droom</i> , dream.	<i>Droomen</i> , dreams.
<i>Eeuw</i> , age.	<i>Eeuwen</i> , ages.
<i>Meid</i> , fervant.	<i>Meiden</i> , fervants.
<i>Deur</i> , door.	<i>Deuren</i> , doors.
<i>Scheur</i> , crevice.	<i>Scheuren</i> , crevices.
<i>Klaauw</i> , paw.	<i>Klaauwen</i> , paws.
<i>Schreeuw</i> , cry.	<i>Schreeuwen</i> , cries.
<i>Kieuw</i> , gill.	<i>Kieuwen</i> , gills.

Those which have two or three consonants at the end.

<i>Visch</i> , fish.	<i>Vischen</i> , fishes.
<i>Magt</i> , power.	<i>Magten</i> , powers.
<i>Vorst</i> , prince.	<i>Vorsten</i> , princes.
<i>Land</i> , country.	<i>Landen</i> , countries.
<i>Borst</i> , breast.	<i>Borsten</i> , breasts.
<i>Vuist</i> , fist.	<i>Vuisten</i> , fists.
<i>Mensch</i> , man.	<i>Menschen</i> , men.
<i>Geluid</i> , found.	<i>Geluiden</i> , sounds.

a and *u* are never doubled, in the plural.

<i>Zaak</i> , affair.	<i>Zaken</i> , affairs.
<i>Maat</i> , measure.	<i>Maten</i> , measures.
<i>Daad</i> , action.	<i>Daden</i> , actions.
<i>Uur</i> , hour.	<i>Uren</i> , hours.
<i>Muur</i> , wall.	<i>Muren</i> , walls.

S at the end of a syllable, preceded by a long vowel or a diphthongue, changes in Z in the plural.

<i>Blaas</i> , bladder.	<i>Blazen</i> , bladders.
<i>Haas</i> , hare.	<i>Hazen</i> , hares.
<i>Doos</i> , box.	<i>Doozen</i> , boxes.
<i>Huis</i> , house.	<i>Huizen</i> , houses.
<i>Muis</i> , mouse.	<i>Muizen</i> , mouses.
<i>Roos</i> , rose.	<i>Rozen</i> , roses.
<i>Laars</i> , boot.	<i>Laarzen</i> , boots.

Except: *kruis*, cross; *kruisen*, crosses; — *poes*, cat; *poesen*, cats.

Those ending in *ans* and *ens*, have *en* in the plural:

<i>Dans</i> , dance.	<i>Dansen</i> , dances.
<i>Kans</i> , chance.	<i>Kansen</i> , changes.

Except: *gans*, goose, *ganzen*, geese.

In some words *s* is doubled in the plural:

<i>Mes</i> , knife.	<i>Messen</i> , knives.
<i>Les</i> , lesson.	<i>Lesen</i> , lessons.
<i>Bes</i> , currant.	<i>Bessen</i> , currants.
<i>Kermis</i> , fair.	<i>Kermisfen</i> , fairs.
<i>Beeldtenis</i> , image.	<i>Beeldtenisfen</i> , images.

Words ending in *f*, have *ven* in the plural:

<i>Graaf</i> , count.	<i>Graven</i> , counts.
<i>Kalf</i> , calf.	<i>Kalven</i> , calves.
<i>Boef</i> , rascal.	<i>Boeven</i> , rascals.
<i>Korf</i> , basket.	<i>Korven</i> , baskets.
<i>Schoof</i> , sheaf.	<i>Schoven</i> , sheafs.
<i>Golf</i> , gulph.	<i>Golven</i> , gulphs.
<i>Raaf</i> , raven.	<i>Raven</i> , ravens.
<i>Wolf</i> , wolf.	<i>Wolven</i> , wolves.

Exceptions: *Bef*, band; *bessen*, bands; *stof*, slipper; *sloffen*, slippers; *stof*, stuff; *stoffen*, stuffs; *mof*, muff; *moffen*, muffs.

Words ending in *y*, have *en* in the plural:

<i>Brouwerij</i> , brewhouse.	<i>Brouwerijen</i> , brewhouses.
<i>Galerij</i> , gallery.	<i>Galerijen</i> , galleries.
<i>Bakkerij</i> , bakehouse.	<i>Bakkerijen</i> , bakehouses.

Words ending in *ei*, have *jen* in the plural: *lei*, flate; *leijen*, flates; *rei*, range; *reijen*, ranges.

The termination *heid*, changes in the plural in *heden*:

Ongerechtigheid, injustice, *Ongerechtigheden*, injustices.
Dwaasheid, folly, *Dwaasheden*, follies.

Some substantives have *ers* or *eren* in the plural: *blad*, leaf; *bladers*, *bladeren* or *bladen*, leaves; — *kalf*, calf, *kalyen*, *kalvers* or *kalveren*, calves; — *volk*, people; *volkeren*, or *volken*, peoples; — *kind*, child, *kinders* or *kinderen*, children; — *rad*, wheel; *raders* or *raderen*, wheels; — *lied*, hymn; *liederen*, hymns; — *ei*, egg; *eijeren*, eggs; — *been*, bone; *beenderen* or *beenders*, bones.

The following are irregular:

<i>Schip</i> , ship.	<i>Schepen</i> , ships.
<i>Lid</i> , member.	<i>Leden</i> , members.
<i>Smid</i> , blacksmith.	<i>Smeden</i> , blacksmiths.
<i>Stad</i> , city.	<i>Steden</i> , cities.

The compound words of *man*, have *lieden* in the plural: *timmerman*, carpenter; *timmerlieden*, carpenters; *tuinman*, gardener; *tuinlieden*, gardeners.

The compound words follow the last word, in the formation of the plural:

<i>Zeekalf</i> , sea-calf.	<i>Zeekalveren</i> , sea-calves.
<i>Tafelring</i> , dish-hoop.	<i>Tafelringen</i> , dish-hoops.

Of Cases.

Van de Naamvallen.

The cases of nouns are, either an alteration at the end of a noun, or prefixing a preposition at the beginning of it, in order to show its relation to some other words.

Dutch nouns have four cases, which are named

the first, the second, the third and the fourth cases; or Nominative, Genitive, Dative and Accusative or Objective.

Declension,

with the article definite.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *de vader*, the father:
2. *des vaders*, or, *van den vader*, of the father.
3. *den vader*, or, *aan den vader*, to the father,
4. *den vader*, the father.

Masculine.

Plural.

1. *de vaders*, the fathers.
2. *der vaders*, or, *van de vaders*, of the fathers.
3. *den vaders*, or, *aan de vaders*, to the fathers,
4. *de vaders*, the fathers.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de zuster*, the fister.
2. *der zuster*, or, *van de zuster*, of the fister.
3. *der zuster*, or, *aan de zuster*, to the fister.
4. *de zuster*, the fister.

Feminine.

Plural.

1. *de zusters*, the fisters.
2. *der zusters*, or, *van de zusters*, of the fisters.
3. *der zusters*, or, *aan de zusters*, to the fisters.
4. *de zusters*, the fisters.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *het kind*, the child.
2. *des kinds*, or, *van het kind*, of the child.
3. *den kinde*, or, *aan het kind*, to the child.
4. *het kind*, the child.

Plural.

1. *de kinderen*, the children.
2. *der kinderen*, or, *van de kinderen*, of the children.
3. *den kinderen*, or, *aan de kinderen*, to the children.
4. *de kinderen*, the children.

Some substantives masculine and neuter have *en* instead of *s* in the second case; as:

1. *de heer*, the lord.
2. *des heeren*, of the lord.
1. *de mensch*, the man.
2. *des menschen*, of the man.
1. *het hart*, the heart.
2. *des harten*, of the heart.
1. *het kruis*, the cross.
2. *des kruises*, of the cross.
1. *het huis*, the house.
2. *des huizes*, of the house.
1. *de graaf*, the count.
2. *des graven*, of the count.
1. *het vleesch*, the meat.
2. *des vleesches*, of the meat.
1. *de prins*, the prince.
2. *des prinsen*, of the prince.

A practical Grammar of the Dutch Language.

1. *de vorst*, the prince;
2. *des vorſien*, of the prince.

1. *de haas*, the hare.
2. *des hazes*, of the hare.

Some substantives masculine and neuter have no *s* in the second case; for euphony's sake, as: *de draai* the turn; *des draais* is never used, but: *van den draai*.

Declension with the indefinite article.

Masculine.

1. *een tuin*, a garden.
2. *eens tuins*, or, *van eenen tuin*, of a garden.
3. *eenen tuin*, or, *aan eenen tuin*, of a garden.
4. *eenen tuin*, a garden.

Feminine.

1. *eene kamer*, a chamber.
2. *eener kamer*, or, *van eene kamer*, of a chamber.
3. *eener kamer*, or, *aan eene kamer*, to a chamber.
4. *eene kamer*, a chamber.

Neuter.

1. *een paard*, a horse.
2. *eens paards*, or, *van een paard*, of a horse.
3. *eenen paarde*, or, *aan een paard*, to a horse.
4. *een paard*, a horse.

This article has no plural; when one speaks indefinitely in the plural, the word is without article, as:

1. *paarden*, horses.
2. *van paarden*, of horses.
3. *aan paarden*, to horses.
4. *paarden*, horses.

The nominative or first case, *eerſte naamval*, simply

PRACTICAL EXERCISES

upon the preceding rules.

N^o. I.

The friend of the master. The mother of the niece.
 The leaves of the book. The pen of the child. The
 slate of the sifter. The slate-pencil of the scholar.
 The writingbook of the uncle. The houses of the
 city. The streets of the village. The master of the
 boy. The domesticks of the grandfather. The aunt
 of the maidservant. The grandson of the guardian. The
 instruction and education of the children.

Friend,	<i>vriend. (*) m.</i>
Master,	<i>meester. m.</i>
Niece,	<i>nie't. f.</i>
Leaf,	<i>blad. n.</i>
Child,	<i>kind. n.</i>
Slate,	<i>lei. f.</i>
Slate pencil,	<i>griffel. m.</i>
Scholar,	<i>scholier. m.</i>
writingbook,	<i>schrijfboek. n.</i>
Uncle,	<i>oom. m.</i>
House,	<i>huis. n.</i>
City,	<i>stad. f.</i>
Street;	<i>straat. f.</i>
Village,	<i>dorp. n.</i>
Boy,	<i>jongen. m.</i>
Domestick,	<i>bediende. m. and f.</i>
Grandfather,	<i>grootvader. m.</i>
Aunt,	<i>tante. f.</i>
Maidservant,	<i>meid.</i>
Grandson,	<i>kleinzoon. m.</i>
Guardian,	<i>voogd.</i>
Instruction,	<i>onderwijs. n.</i>
Education,	<i>opvoeding. f.</i>

(*) *m* signifies masculine; *f* feminine, and *n* neuter.

N^o. 2.

The lesfons of the pupils. The desk and the ink-horn of the school. The slit of the pen. The syllables of the words. The letter of the gentleman. The fister in law of the gardener. The carpenter of the uncle. The house of the notary. The oven of the baker. The dancingmaster of the children. The tools of the brazier.

Lesfon,	<i>les. f.</i>
Pupil,	<i>leerling. m.</i>
Desk,	<i>lesfenaar. m.</i>
Inkhorn,	<i>inktkoker. m.</i>
Slit,	<i>spleet. m.</i>
Syllable,	<i>lettergreep. f.</i>
Letter,	<i>brief. m.</i>
Gentleman,	<i>heer. m.</i>
Sister in law,	<i>schoonzuster. f.</i>
Gardener,	<i>tuinman. m.</i>
Carpenter,	<i>timmerman. m.</i>
Notary,	<i>notaris. m.</i>
Oven,	<i>oven. m.</i>
Baker,	<i>bakker. m.</i>
Dancingmaster,	<i>dansmeester. m.</i>
Tool,	<i>werktuig. n.</i>
Brazier,	<i>kopenfager. m.</i>

N^o. 3.

The chimney-sweeper of the village. The cook of the bishop. The merchants of the town. The draper of the king. The bookseller of the profesor. The breeches of the gardener. The hat of the messenger. The jewels of the countess. The brim of the hat. The soles of the boots. The pincushion of the mother.

Chimney - sweeper.	<i>schoorsteenveger. m.</i>
Cook,	<i>kok. m.</i>
B shop,	<i>bisfchop. m.</i>
Merchant,	<i>koopman. m.</i>
Draper,	<i>lakenkooper. m.</i>

King,	<i>koning.</i> n.
Bookseller,	<i>boekverkooper.</i> m.
Profesfor,	<i>hoogleeraar.</i> m.
Breeches,	<i>broek.</i> f.
Gardener,	<i>tuinman.</i> m.
Hat,	<i>hoed.</i> m.
Mesfenger,	<i>bode.</i> m.
Jewels,	<i>juweelen.</i> n.
Countess,	<i>gravin.</i> f.
Brim,	<i>rand.</i> m.
Sole,	<i>zool.</i> m.
Boot,	<i>laars.</i> m.
Pincushion,	<i>speldekusfen.</i> m.

N^o. 4.

The lock of the door. The foundations of the palace. The windows of the church. The roof of the house. The key of the lock. The beams of the roof. The looking-glass of the aunt. The sucker of the pump. The pillows of the bed. The knife, the fork, the spoon and the napkin of the sifter.

Lock,	<i>slot.</i> n.
Foundation,	<i>grondslag.</i> m.
Palace,	<i>paleis.</i> n.
Window,	<i>venster.</i> n.
Church,	<i>kerk.</i> f.
Roof,	<i>dak.</i> n.
Key,	<i>sleutel.</i> m.
Beam,	<i>balk.</i> m.
Looking-glass,	<i>spiegel.</i> m.
Sucker,	<i>zuiger.</i> m.
Pump,	<i>pomp.</i> f.
Pillow,	<i>peulen.</i> n.
Fork,	<i>vork.</i> m.
Spoon,	<i>lepel.</i> m.
Napkin,	<i>servet.</i> n.

N^o. 5.

He spoke to the king, to the bishop, to the queen and to the dutchess. Send the money to the advo-

cate, to the attorney, to the friend or to the master of languages. Give the itineraries to the general, to the captain, to the admiral, to the president or to the governor. Carry the grammar to the teacher, to the usher or to the bookseller.

He spoke to,	<i>hij sprak tot.</i>
King,	<i>koning. m.</i>
Queen,	<i>koningin. f.</i>
Dutchers,	<i>hertogin. f.</i>
Send,	<i>zend.</i>
Money,	<i>geld n.</i>
Advocate,	<i>advocaat. m.</i>
Attorney,	<i>procureur. m.</i>
Master of languages,	<i>taalmceester. m.</i>
Give,	<i>geef.</i>
Itinerary,	<i>reisbeschrijving. f.</i>
General,	<i>veldheer; generaal. m.</i>
Captain,	<i>kapitein. m.</i>
Admiral,	<i>admiraal. m.</i>
President,	<i>president; voorzitter. m.</i>
Governor,	<i>gouverneur. m.</i>
Carry,	<i>breng.</i>
Grammar,	<i>spraakkunst. f.</i>
Teacher,	<i>onderwijzer. m.</i>
Usher,	<i>ondermeester. n.</i>

N^o. 6.

The horses, the coaches and the domesticks belong to the count and to the countess. Go to the wine-cellar, and bring the brandy-bottle. The father loves the son, and the uncle hates the cousin. The master teaches the pupil. The gentleman seals the letter. He rewards the boy. She punishes the girl. Give this plaything to the child.

Coach,	<i>koets. f.</i>
Domestick,	<i>bediende. m. and f.</i>
Belong,	<i>behooren.</i>
Count,	<i>graaf m.</i>
Winecellar,	<i>wiנקelder. m.</i>
Bring,	<i>breng.</i>
Brandy-bottle,	<i>brandewijnflasch. f.</i>
Loves,	<i>bemint.</i>

Hates,
Teaches,
Séals,
Rewards,
Punishes,
Plaything,

haat.
onderwijst.
verzegelt.
beloont.
straft.
speelgoed. n.

Nº. 7.

The books of the professor of the university. The declension of the nouns. The instruments of the musician. The drawingmaster of the children. The foldingstick of the cousin. The diphthongues, the triphthongues and the vowels of the dutch language. The signification of the words. We speak of the planets, of the comets and of other heavenly bodies.

University,
Declension,
Instrument,
Musician,
Drawingmaster,
Foldingstick,
Diphthongue,
Triphthongue,
Vowel,
Signification,
We speak,
Planet,
Comet,
Other heavenly bodies.

universiteit. f.
verbuiging. f.
speeltuig. n.
muzikant. m.
teekenmeester.
vouwbeen. n.
tweeklank. m.
drieklank. m.
klinkletter. f.
beteekenis. f.
wij spreken.
planeet. f.
komeet. f.
andere hemelsche lichamen.

Nº. 8.

Whence do you come? We come from the market, from the country-seat, from the postoffice and from your brother. Wither do yo go? We go to fish-market, to the townhouse and to the garden. We have spoken to the physician, to the surgeon, to the woodmonger and to the banker. The English have liberated the slaves.

Whence do you come?

waar komt gij van daan?

We come,	<i>wij komen.</i>
Market,	<i>markt. f.</i>
Country-seat,	<i>buitenplaats. f.</i>
Post-office,	<i>postkantoor. n.</i>
Your,	<i>uwen.</i>
Whither do you go?	<i>waar gaat gij heen?</i>
We go,	<i>wij gaan.</i>
Fishmarket,	<i>vischmarkt. f.</i>
Townhouse,	<i>stadhuis. n.</i>
We have spoken to,	<i>wij hebben gesproken tot or met.</i>
Physician,	<i>dokter, geneesheer. m.</i>
Surgeon,	<i>wondheeler, m.</i>
Woodmonger,	<i>houtkooper. m.</i>
Banker,	<i>bankier.</i>
The english,	<i>de engelschen.</i>
Have liberated,	<i>hebben vrijgemaakt.</i>
Slave,	<i>slaaf. m.</i>

N^o. 9.

The spring, the summer, the autumn and the winter are the four seasons of the year. The sight, the hearing, the feeling, the taste and the smell are the five natural senses. We have received letters from the ambafador and from the students of the univerfity. He fpeaks of arts and fcienccs. The teacher corrects the faults. We have warned the learned.

Spring,	<i>de lente. f.</i>
Summer,	<i>zomer. m.</i>
Autumn,	<i>herfst. m.</i>
Winter,	<i>winter. m.</i>
Are . . . four seasons,	<i>zijn . . . vier jaargetijden.</i>
Sight,	<i>gezig. n.</i>
Hearing,	<i>gehoor. n.</i>
Feeling,	<i>gevoel. n.</i>
Taste,	<i>smaak. m.</i>
Smell,	<i>reuk. m.</i>
Five naturel senses,	<i>vijf natuurlijke zinnen.</i>
We have received,	<i>wij hebben ontvangen.</i>
Ambafador,	<i>afgezant. m.</i>
Student,	<i>student. m.</i>
He fpeaks,	<i>hij fpreekt.</i>
Arts and fcienccs,	<i>kunften en wetenfchappen.</i>
Corrects,	<i>verbetert.</i>

Fault,
Warned,
Learned,

fout. f.
gewaarschuwd.
geleerde. m.

N^o. 10.

The laws of nature. I have written letters to the king and the prince royal. We have sent handsome presents to the ministers. The courage of the duke of Wellington is great. The english love the king. The revolution of the heavenly bodies. The size of the sun. The distance of the moon. The erudition of the profesor. The obedience of the son. The submission of the pupil. The justice of the tribunal.

Law; nature,
I have written,
King,
Prince royal.
Sent handsome presents,
Minister,
Courage,
Revolution,
Size,
Sun; moon,
Distance,
Erudition,
Obedience,
Submission,
Justice,
Tribunal,

wet; natuur.
ik heb geschreven.
koning. m.
kroonprins. m.
fraaije geschenken gezonden.
staatsdienaar, minister.
moed. m.
omwenteling. f.
grootte f.
zon. f. maan. f.
afstand. m.
geleerdheid. f.
gehoorzaamheid. f.
onderwerping. f.
regtvaardigheid. f.
geregtshof. n.

N^o. 11.

The benevolence and prudence of the sister's friend. The generosity of the brother's wife. The animosity of the neighbour's son. The confidence of the minister. The honesty of the judge. The assistance of the domesticks. The happiness of the niece's friends. The independence of the state. The impossibility of that affair. The talents of the student. The passions of the children.

Benevolence,

weldadigheid. f.

Prudence,
Generosity,
Animosity,
Confidence,
Honesty,
Judge,
Assistance,
Happiness,
Independence,
State,
Impossibility,
Talents,
Passion,

voorzigtigheid. f.
edelmoedigheid. f.
nija. m.
vertrouwen. n.
eerlijkheid. f.
regter. m.
hulp. f.
geluk. n.
onafhankelijkheid. f.
staat.
onmogelijkheid. f.
talenten. n.
drift. m.

N^o. 12.

Bring us mustard, pepper, salt, vinegar and oil.
The cook buys mutton, bacon, veal, beef and potatoes.
The gardener of your uncle has vegetables, carrots, peas, cucumbers, cauliflower and cabbage lettuce.
We have drunk wine, beer, water, coffee, tea, cider and chocolate. Where is the coachman?
In the stable. Where have you seen the friend's sister?
In the garden.

Bring us,
Mustard. Pepper,
Salt. Vinegar,
Oil,
The cook buys,
Mutton. Bacon,
Veal. Beef,
Potatoes,
Vegetables,
Carrots. Peas,
Cucumbers,
Cauliflower,
Cabbage lettuce,
We have drunk,
Wine. Beer,
Cider. Chocolate,
Where is?
Coachman,
Stable,
Have you seen?

breng ons.
mosterd. Peper.
zout. Azijn.
olie.
de kok koopt.
schapenvleesch. Spek.
kalfsvleesch. Osvleesch.
aardappelen.
groenten.
wortelen. Erwtten.
komkommers.
bloenkool.
kropsla.
wij hebben gedronken.
wijn Bier.
appeldrank. Chocolaad.
waar is?
koetsier.
stal. m.
hebt gij gezien?

N^o. 13.

We have several houses. Where are my boots?
 In the chamber. They have seen wolves, hares, calves,
 fishes and ravens. Put the roses in those boxes.
 Meddle with your own affairs. A week has seven
 days; day and night have twenty four hours. The
 trees of the garden are very great. The children
 play before the door. The leaves of the book are
 there. The wheels of the coach are broken. The
 wager of sin is death. The members of the assembly.
 The ship is bound for London. The blacksmiths of
 the villages. The cities of England.

Several,	<i>verscheidene.</i>
Where are?	<i>waar zijn?</i>
They have seen,	<i>zij hebben gezien,</i>
Raven,	<i>raaf m.</i>
Put,	<i>leg.</i>
This box,	<i>deze doos.</i>
Meddle with,	<i>bemoei u met.</i>
Own,	<i>eigen.</i>
Are very great,	<i>zijn zeer groot.</i>
Before,	<i>voor.</i>
Are there,	<i>zijn daar.</i>
Wheel,	<i>rad. n.</i>
Coach,	<i>koets. f.</i>
Broken,	<i>gebroken.</i>
Wages,	<i>belooning. f.</i>
Of sin,	<i>der zonde.</i>
Death,	<i>dood. m. or f.</i>
Assembly,	<i>vergadering. f.</i>
Bound for,	<i>bestemd naar.</i>
Blacksmith,	<i>smid. m.</i>
Village,	<i>dorp. n.</i>

N^o. 14.

There are several counts in England. The peasant
 carries the sheafs in the barn. The brewer of your
 uncle has three brewhouses. The follies of these men
 are great. Bring me the slippers of the grandfather.

Have they seen all the images? I don't know. Do you hear the cries of the children? No, sir. The pagans had several Gods. The jew sold three tickets to that gentleman. The doors of the church are shut. The valleys of Italy are fruitful. We know the dutchies of germany.

There are several,
Peasant carries,
Sheaf,
Barn,
Brewer,
Uncle,
Folly,
Slipper,
Have they seen?
Image,
I don't know,
Do you hear?
Cry,
Pagan.
Jew,
Ticket,
Shut,
Valley,
Italy,
Fruitful,
We know,
Germany,

er zijn verscheidene.
boer draagt.
schoof. m.
schuur. m.
brouwer. m.
oom. m.
dwaasheid. f.
slof. m.
hebben zij gezien?
beeldtenis. n.
ik weet het niet.
hoort gij?
schreeuw. f.
heiden. m.
jood. m.
lot. n.
gestoten.
valli, f. dal. n.
Italië.
vruchtbaar.
wij kennen.
Duitschland.

N°. 15.

Bring the little pen, and the little pencase to the sister of the neighbour. The Netherlands are divided into seventeen provinces. The Grecian colonies in Asia minor were very populous. There is a little garden behind that little house. Do you know the hero and the heroine; the poet and the poetess; the prophet and the prophetess, the tutor and the tutress; the widower and the widow? No, but we know the heir and the heiress of that rich man. Have you seen the roofs of the house, and the holes of the shelf? Have they read in the books of the brother

of these wars ? How many locks has he bought ?
Three or four.

Bring,	<i>breng.</i>
Pencafe,	<i>pennekoker. m.</i>
Netherlands,	<i>Nederlanden.</i>
Divided into,	<i>verdeeld in.</i>
Seventeen,	<i>zeventien.</i>
Greecian,	<i>Grieksch.</i>
Asia minor,	<i>klein Azië.</i>
Were very populous,	<i>waren zeer volkrijk.</i>
Do you know,	<i>kent gij.</i>
Have you seen,	<i>hebt gij gezien.</i>
Shelf,	<i>plank. f.</i>
Have they read,	<i>hebben zij gelezen?</i>
How many,	<i>hoe veel?</i>
Has he bought,	<i>heeft hij gekocht?</i>

N°. 16.

The palace of the count. The country-seat of the prince. The beam of the cross. The gills of the fishes. The basket of the country-woman. The thoughts of that author. Give the itineraries to the bookseller, and the money to the banker. He has sold his coaches and horses to the minister. Had he brought the papers to the attorney? No, to the gardener. To whom belongs the little book? To the cousin of your friend. Where is the countess? In the church. And the emperess? In the play. How many sheep has the butcher bought? As least thirty.

Country-seat,	<i>buitenplaats. f.</i>
Beam,	<i>boom.</i>
Gill,	<i>kieuw. f.</i>
Basket,	<i>korf. f.</i>
Country-woman,	<i>boerin. f.</i>
Thought,	<i>gedachte. f.</i>
Author,	<i>schrijver. m.</i>
Itinerary,	<i>reisbeschrijving. f.</i>
He has sold,	<i>hij heeft verkocht.</i>
Had he brought?	<i>had hij gebragt?</i>
To whom belongs?	<i>aan wien behoort?</i>
Where is,	<i>waar is.</i>
Play,	<i>schoonburg. m.</i>

How many ;
Butcher ,
Bought ,
At least ,

hoe veel.
slagter.
gekocht.
ten minste.

DECLENSION

of the proper names.

Proper names are used without articles, and declined with the propositions *van* and *aan*.

- | | |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Jan</i> , John. | 1. <i>Maria</i> , Mary. |
| 2. <i>van Jan</i> , of John. | 2. <i>van Maria</i> , of Mary. |
| 3. <i>aan Jan</i> , to John. | 3. <i>aan Maria</i> , to Mary. |
| 4. <i>Jan</i> , John. | 4. <i>Maria</i> , Mary. |

1. *Londen*, London.
2. *van Londen*, of London.
3. *aan Londen*, to London.
4. *Londen*, London.

It is necessary to observe that the dative *to*, used after a word signifying coming, going, returning or sending to, placed before the name of a kingdom, country, province, city or village, must be rendered in dutch by the preposition *naar*, without any article, as:

- Mijn neef gaat naar Rus-* My cousin goes to Rus-
land, *land,* *sia.*
- Hij komt naar Engeland* He returns to England.
terug,
- Zij kwamen naar Amster-* They came to Amsterdam.
dam,

E X E R C I S E S

upon the proper names.

N^o. 17.

The library of John. The instruments of Peter. The valliance of Lewis. The pride of Michel. The physiognomy of William. The grapes of Lettice. The thimble of Catherine. The needlebox of Betsy. The character of Eve. The beauty of Fanny. The patience of Gertrude. The presumption of Andrew. The weakness of Margery. The ignorance of Juliet.

Library,
Instrument Peter,
Valliance,
Lewis. Michel.
Pride. Physiognomy,
William; Lettice,
Grapes; Thimble,
Chatherine,
Needlebox,
Betsy. Eve,
Beauty. Fanny,
Gertrude,
Presumption,
Andrew,
Weakness,
Margery,
Ignorance,
Juliet,

bibliotheek. f.
werktuig. n. Pieter.
dapperheid f.
Lodewijk. Michiel.
hoogmoed. m. gelaat. n.
Willem; Letje.
druiven; vingerhoed. m.
Katharina.
naaldekokker. m.
Betje. Eva.
Schoonheid. f. Fransje.
Geertruida.
verwaandheid. f.
Andries.
zwakheid.
Margaretha.
onwetendheid. f.
Julia.

N^o. 18.

Nicholas comes from London, and goes to Paris. Adrian comes from Louvain, and goes to Brusfels. Ambrose, Bertram, Christian and Conrad return from Leghorn, and will go next year together to Pomerania. Edward, Eugene and Fabrian have been at Mons, Juliers, Spire and Venice. Stephen's brother

lives at Antioch, and James' cousin at Harwich. My father intends to send my brother to Portugal and Spain.

Nicholas. Adrian,
Louvain. Ambrose;
Bertram. Christian,
Conrad. Leghorn,
Will go next year,
Pomerania,
Edward. Eugene,
Fabrian. Mons,
Juliers. Spire,
Venice. Stephen,
Lives. Antioch.
James.
Intends,
To send,
Portugal. Spain.

*Nicolaas. Adrianus.
Leuven. Ambrozius.
Bertrand. Christiaan.
Koenraad. Livorno.
zullen aanstaande jaar gaan.
Pommeren.
Eduard. Eugenius.
Fabricius. Bergen.
Gulik. Spiers.
Venetië. Steven.
woont. Antiochië.
Jakobus.
is voornemens.
zenden.
Portugal. Spanje.*

N^o. 19.

The poems of Homer. The works of Virgil. The genius of Milton. The courage of Achilles. The valour of Diomedes. The love of Helene. The fidelity of Andromache and Penelope. Aristotle flourished in the age of Philip and Alexander; Horace, Ovid and Varro in that of Augustus. Smyrna and Alexandria are two of the most famous seaports in the Levant. Tasfo's Jerusalem delivered is a fine poem. Racine's Athalia is a masterpiece.

Poem. Homer,
Virgil. Genius,
Courage. Valour,
Helene. Fidelity,
Aristotle,
Flourished,
Age. Philip,
Horace. Ovid,
The most famous,
Seaport,
Levant,
Delivered. Fine,
Masterpiece,

*dichtstuk. n. Homerus.
Virgilius. Genie. f.
moed. n. Dapperheid.
Helena. Getrouwheid. f.
Aristoteles.
bloede.
eeuw. f. Philippus.
Horatius. Ovidius.
de beroemdste.
zeehaven.
Levant.
verlost. Fraai.
meestersluk. n.*

N^o. 20.

The five quarters of the world are: Europe, Asia, Africa, America and Polynesia. America is stiled the new world, because it was unknown to the old continent. It is divided in North and South America. In Asia our first parents were created, it became the nursery of the world, after the deluge. Egypt and Carthage were anciently much celebrated empires in Africa. France is greater than England, but England is more powerful than France. Germany is greater and more populous than Turkey.

A quarter of the world,
Europe. Asia,
Stiled,
New world,
Because it was unknown,
Old. Continent.
Divided. North,
South,
Our first parents,
Created,
It became the nursery,
Deluge,
Egypt. Carthage.
Anciently,
Much celebrated empires,
France,
More powerful,
Germany,
Populous,
Turkey,

Een werelddeel. n.
Europa. Azië.
genaamd.
nieuwe wereld.
omdat het onbekend was.
oud. Vaste land.
verdeeld. Noord.
Zuid.
onze eerste ouders.
geschapen.
het werd de bakermat.
Zondvloed. m.
Egypte. Karthago.
oudstijds.
zeer beroemde rijken.
Frankrijk.
magtiger.
Duitschland.
volkrijk.
Turkeije.

Of Adjectives.

Over de bijvoegelijke Naamwoorden.

An adjective, as we have already observed, is a word added to a substantive, to express its quality, as:

Een deugdzaam man, a virtuous man.

Eene groote som, a great sum.

We will treat of:

- a. their formation.
- b. their gender, number and declension,
- c. their degrees of comparison.

Formation of Adjectives.

Vorming der bijvoegelijke Naamwoorden.

There are but a few adnouns in the dutch language which may be called primitive; the greater part are formed of substantives, verbs or adverbs, by adding certain syllables or terminations.

There are also verbal adnouns, or adjectives deriving from verbs, as: *een weenend kind*, a weeping child; *een slapend meisje*, a sleeping girl.

The derivatives or compounds have different terminations, as: *ig*, *baar*, *lijk*, *en*, *rijk*, *loos*, *zaam*, *hastig*, *achtig*, enz.

a. The adnouns ending in *ig*, are: *voorzigtig*, prudent; *genadig*, gracious; *bevallig*, charming; *stijfhoofdig*, obstinate; *magtig*, powerful; *statig*, grave.

b. *baar*: *dankbaar*, grateful; *leesbaar*, ligible; *wonderbaar*, wonderful; *achtbaar*, venerable.

c. *lijk*: *menschelijk*, human; *goddelijk*, divine; *sterfelijk*, mortal; *bedriegelijk*, deceitful.

d. *en*: *houten*, wooden, of wood; *steen*, stone; *gouden*, golden; *zilveren*, silver.

e. *rijk*: *woordenrijk*, verbose; *volkrijk*, populous; *boomrijk*, full of trees.

f. *loos*: *goddeloos*, wicked, impious; *moedeloos*, discouraged; *geldeloos*, without money; *kinderloos*, without children.

g. *zaam*: *leerzaam*, docile; *werkzaam*, laborious; *minzaam*, kind; *gruwzaam*, horrible.

h. haftig: heldhaftig, valliant; *ernsthaftig*, ferious.

i. achtig: leugenachtig, inclined to lie; *zwartachtig*, blackish; *groenachtig*, greenish; *waarachtig*, true.

Gendres, numbers and declenſions of adnouns.

Geflachten, getallen en verbuigingen der bijvoeglijke Naamwoorden.

The dutch adnouns, in their primitive ſtate, denote no gendres; but added to a ſubſtantive they become declinable.

Preceded by the definite article, all the adnouns have *e*, as: *de goede meester*, the good maſter; *de goede vrouw*, the good woman; *het goede kind*, the good child.

When the ſubſtantive is feminine, the adnoun has always *e*: *eene deugdzaame vrouw*, a virtuous woman; *eene ſlappe pen*, a ſlack pen; *de hooge tafel*, the high table.

But when the ſubſtantives of the maſculine gender, are preceded by the indefinite article, they have ſometimes *e*, and ſometimes not: *een goed meester*, a good maſter; *een eerlijk man*, an honeſt man; *een liſtige knaap*, a fly boy.

When the ſubſtantives of the neuter gender are preceded by the indefinite article, the adnoun has no *e*: *een ſcherp mes*, a ſharp knife; *een ſtout kind*, a naughty child.

Declenſion,

of a ſubſtantive and an adjective, preceded by the definite article.

Maſculine.

Singular.

1. *de geleerde man*, the learned man.
2. *van den geleerden man*, of the learned man.
or, *des geleerden mans*,

3. *aan den*, or, *den geleerden man*, to the learned man.
4. *den geleerden man*, the learned man.

Plural.

1. *de geleerde mannen*, the learned men.
2. *van de*, or, *der geleerde mannen*, of the learned men.
3. *aan de geleerde mannen*, or, *den geleerden mannen*, to the learned men.
4. *de geleerde mannen*, the learned men.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de goede moeder*, the good mother.
2. *van de*, or, *der goede moeder*, of the good mother.
3. *aan de*, or, *der goede moeder*, to the good mother.
4. *de goede moeder*, the good mother.

Plural.

1. *de goede moeders*, the good mothers.
2. *van de*, or, *der goede moeders*, of the good mothers.
3. *aan de*, or, *der goede moeders*, to the good mothers.
4. *de goede moeders*, the good mother.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *het sterke paard*, the strong horse.
2. *van het sterke paard*, or, *des sterken paards*, of the strong horse.
3. *aan het sterke paard*, or, *den sterken paarde*, to the strong horse.
4. *het sterke paard*, the strong horse.

Plural.

1. *de sterke paarden*, the strong horses.
2. *van de sterke*, or, *der sterke paarden*, of the strong horses.
3. *aan de sterke*, or, *den sterke paarden*, to the strong horses.
4. *de sterke paarden*, the strong horses.

Declension,

with the indefinite article.

1. *een groote tuin*, a great garden.
2. *van eenen*, or, *eens grooten tuins*, of a great garden.
3. *aan eenen*, or, *eenengrootten tuin*, to a great garden.
4. *eenen grooten tuin*, a great garden.

Feminine.

1. *eene deugdzame vrouw*, a virtuous woman.
2. *van eene*, or, *eener deugdzame vrouw*, of a virtuous woman.
3. *aan eene*, or, *eener deugdzame vrouw*, to a virtuous woman.
4. *eene deugdzame vrouw*, a virtuous woman.

Neuter.

1. *een vlijtig kind*, a diligent child.
2. *van een vlijtig kind*, or, *eens vlijtigen kinds*, of a diligent child.
3. *aan een vlijtig kind*, or, *eenen vlijtigen kinde*, to a diligent child.
4. *een vlijtig kind*, a diligent child.

This article, as we have observed already, has no plural.

A substantive with an adjective, without an article; is declined thus:

- | | |
|----------------------------|--------------|
| 1. <i>roode wijn,</i> | red wine. |
| 2. <i>van rooden wijn,</i> | of red wine. |
| 3. <i>aan rooden wijn,</i> | to red wine. |
| 4. <i>rooden wijn,</i> | red wine. |

When the substantive is of the feminine gender, the adnoun has an *e*, but no *n* in the second, third and fourth case.

- | | |
|------------------------------|----------------------|
| 1. <i>lekkere boter,</i> | delicious butter. |
| 2. <i>van lekkere boter,</i> | of delicious butter. |
| 3. <i>aan lekkere boter,</i> | to delicious butter. |
| 4. <i>lekkere boter,</i> | delicious butter. |

Of degrees of comparison.

Van de trappen van vergelijking.

Comparison is either extending or contracting the signification of the adjective, and estimating this signification by degrees.

There are commonly reckoned three (*) degrees of comparison.

- | | |
|-------------------------------|------------------|
| <i>De hellende trap,</i> | the positive. |
| <i>De vergelijkende trap,</i> | the comparative. |
| <i>De overtreffende trap,</i> | the superlative. |

The positive is merely the adjective used in its simple signification, without expressing any increase or diminution:

(*) Grammarians have generally enumerated these three degrees of comparison; but the first of them has been thought by some writers to be improperly termed a degree of comparison; as it seems to be nothing more than the simple form of the adjective, and not to imply either comparison or degree. This opinion may be well founded, unless the adjective be supposed to imply comparison or degree by containing a secret or general reference to other things: as when we say: *he is a tall man;* — *this is a fair day,* we make some reference to the ordinary size of man, and to different weather.

Een geleerd man, a learned man.
Ecne gelukkige vrouw, a happy woman.

The comparative degree increases or lessens the positive in signification, as:

Een geleerder man, a more learned man.
Eene gelukkigere vrouw, a happier woman.

The superlative degree increases or lessens the positive to the highest or lowest degree, as:

De geleerdste man, the most learned man.
De gelukkigste vrouw, the happiest woman.

The comparative is formed by adding *er* to the positive, as: *hoog*, high; *hooger*, higher; *groot*, great; *grooter*, greater.

If the adjective ends in *i*, the comparative is formed by adding *jer*: *mooi*, fine; *mooijer*, finer; *lui*, idle; *luijer*, more idle.

Those ending in *f*, preceded by a long vowel, or a diphthongue, have *v* in the comparative, as: *scheef*, awry; *scheever*, more awry; *lief*, dear; *liever*, dearer.

Except those in which the *f* is preceded by a short vowel: in that case this consonant is doubled, as: *straf*, severe; *straffer*, more severe; *maf*, fatigued; *maffer*, more fatigued; *laf*, insipid; *laffer*, more insipid; *dof*, dull; *doffer*, duller.

The double *a* of the positive changes in simple *a* in the comparative, as: *laag*, low; *lager*, lower; *dwaas*, foolish; *dwazer*, more foolish:

Also the double *e* and *o*, as: *geel*, yellow; *geler*, more yellow; *vroom*, pious; *vromer*, more pious; except the following which have double *e* and *o* in all the degrees:

Breed, broad.
Gedwee, supple.
Gemeen, common.
Gereed, ready.
Heesch, hoarse.
Kleem, small.

Breeder, broader.
Gedweeër, more supple.
Gemeenër, more common.
Gereeder, more ready.
Heescher, more hoarse.
Kleener, smaller.

<i>Leep</i> , sly.	<i>Leeper</i> , 'more sly.
<i>Scheef</i> , awry.	<i>Scheever</i> , more awry.
<i>Wreed</i> , cruel.	<i>Wreeder</i> , more cruel.
<i>Boos</i> , angry.	<i>Boozer</i> , more angry.
<i>Doof</i> , deaf.	<i>Doover</i> , more deaf.
<i>Droog</i> , dry.	<i>Drooger</i> , dryer.
<i>Groot</i> , great.	<i>Grooter</i> , greater.
<i>Hoog</i> , high.	<i>Honger</i> , higher.
<i>Loom</i> , slow.	<i>Loomer</i> , slower.
<i>Loos</i> , cunning.	<i>Loozer</i> , more cunning.
<i>Rood</i> , read.	<i>Rooder</i> , more read.
<i>Voos</i> , spongy.	<i>Voozer</i> , more spongy.

Some adjectives have *der*, in stead of *er*, in the comparative, as: *zwaar*, heavy; *zwaarder*, more heavy; *naar*, melancholic, dreary; *naarder*, more dreary.

The comparative referring to some other person or thing, showing its *equality*, *excess*, or *defect*, some grammarians admit of three sorts, as: *the comparative by equality*, *the comparative by excess*, and *the comparative by defect*.

The comparative of equality is formed by placing the adverbs *zoo*, as, or *even zoo*, as much, before an adjective, as:

<i>Mijn broeder is zoo vlijtig</i>	my brother is as diligent
<i>als uw neef,</i>	as your cousin.
<i>Mijne zuster is even zoo be-</i>	my sifter is as amiable as
<i>minnelijk als hare tante,</i>	her aunt.

The comparative of excess is formed by adding *er*, as we have already observed; it is allways followed by *dan*, as:

<i>Hij is geleerder dan gij,</i>	he is more learned than you.
<i>Zij is vlijtiger dan uwe zus-</i>	she is more diligent than
<i>ter,</i>	your sifter.

The comparative by defect is formed by placing *minder*, less, or *niet zoo*, not so, before the adjective, as:

<i>Uw neef is minder edel dan</i>	your cousin is less noble
<i>gij,</i>	than you.
<i>Hij is niet zoo hoogmoedig</i>	he is not so proud as your
<i>als uw vriend,</i>	friend.

Minder, is followed by *dan*; but *niet zoo* by *als*.

The superlative degree is formed by adding *est* to the positive, as: *groot*, great; *de grootste*, the greatest; *klein*, small; *de kleinste*, the smallest.

There are two kinds of superlatives; the first, called *relative*, or of *comparison*, expresses the quality of a person or a thing above all others of the same kind, as:

Uwe zuster is de schoonste your sister is the handsomest
vrouw der stad, woman of the town.

The second called *absolute*, or of *eminence*, expresses the quality of a person or a thing in a very high degree, and is formed by placing the adverbs *zeer*, before it, as:

Die vogel is zeer fraai, that bird is very pretty.

To express the infinity of a quality one places *aller* before the superlative, as: *de allergrootste*, the greatest of all; *de allerschoonste*, the handsomest of all.

Some few adjectives have their degrees of comparison formed with the adverbs *meer*, more; and *meest*, most; as: *waar*, true; *meer waar*, more true; *meest waar*, most true; *doordrongen*; penetrated; *meer doordrongen*, (instead of *doordrongener*) more penetrated; *de meest doordrongen*, the most penetrated.

Some adjectives and adverbs are irregularly compared, as: *goed*, good; *beter*, better; *best*, best; *veel*, much, many; *meer*, more; *de meeste*, most; *weinig*, little; *minder*, less; *de minste*, least.

The termination *achtig* may be accounted in some sort a degree of comparison, by which the signification is diminished below the positive, as: *zwartachtig*, blackish, or tending to blackness; *bitterachtig*, bitterish, or having a little taste of *bitter*.

Some adjectives have no degrees of comparison, as: *eeuwig*, eternal; *godelijk*, divine; *hemelsch*, celestial; *aardsch*, terrestrial; *schriftelijk*, written, by writing; *mondelijk*, *mondling*, verbal; *mondig*, *meerderjarig*, of age; *minderjarig*, under age; *driehoekig*, triangular; *zeshoekig*, hexagonal; *driejarig*, triennial. Also those which derive from nouns proper, as: *Engelsch*, English; *Hollandsch*, Dutch; *Spaansch*, Spanish.

The following neither: *bloedrood*, blood-red; *bloed-laauw*, lukewarm; *beendroog*, very dry; *doodbleek*, pale as death; *hemelhoog*, heaven high; *honigzoet*, sweet as honey; *koolzwart*, coal black; *moedernaakt*, stark naked; *pikzwart*, black as pitch; *sneeuw wit*, white as snow; *steenhard*, hard as a stone; *stekeblind*, stark blind; *vuurrood*, red as fire; *ijskoud*, cold as ice; *ijzersterk*, strong as iron.

The comparative and superlative may be declined like simple adjectives.

Comparative.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *de betere vader*, the better father.
2. *van den beteren vader*, of the better father.
or, *des beteren vaders*,
3. *aan den*, or, *den beteren vader*, to the better father.
4. *den beteren vader*, the better father.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de kleinere kamer*, the smaller chamber.
2. *van de*, or, *der kleinere kamer*, of the smaller chamber.
3. *aan de*, or, *der kleinere kamer*, to the smaller chamber.
4. *de kleinere kamer*, the smaller chamber.

Superlative.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *de deugdzaamste koning*, the most virtuous king.
2. *van den*, or, *des deugdzaamsten konings*, of the most virtuous king.

3. *aan den*, or, *den deugdzaamsten koning*, to the most virtuous king.
 4. *den deugdzaamsten koning*. the most virtuous king.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de langste tafel*, the longest table.
 2. *van de*, or, *der langste tafel*, of the longest table.
 3. *aan de*, or, *der langste tafel*, to the longest table.
 4. *de langste tafel*, the longest table.

Plural.

1. *de langste tafels*, the longest tables.
 2. *van de*, or, *der langste tafels*, of the longest tables.
 3. *aan de*, or, *der langste tafels*, to the longest tables.
 4. *de langste tafels*, the longest tables.

E X E R C I C E S,

on the Adjectives.

N°. 21.

A good man; a good woman. A great knife. A little house. A white handkerchief. A black hat. A green table. A green leaf. A long discourse. A cold winter. A warm summer. A frugal life. A high steeple. A fine coat. A handsome girl. A young and strong horse. A new table. An old man. A rich merchant. A poor chimneysweeper. A small fork. A broad street. A severe judge. Pure water. Stale beer.

Little. White,
Handkerchief,

*klein. Wit.
zakdoek. m.*

Black,	<i>zwart.</i>
Green Leaf,	<i>groen. Blad.</i>
Discourfe,	<i>gesprek. n.</i>
Cold,	<i>koud.</i>
Frugal,	<i>zuinig.</i>
High. Fine.	<i>hoog. Fraai.</i>
Handfome,	<i>schoon.</i>
Strong. Old.	<i>sterk. Oud.</i>
Rich. Poor.	<i>rijk. Arm.</i>
Chimneyfweeper.	<i>schoorsteenveger. m.</i>
Broad.	<i>breed.</i>
Severe.	<i>streng.</i>
Pure. Stale.	<i>zuiver. Oud.</i>

N^o. 22.

An english book and a french grammar. An Italian proverb. A ruslian astronomer. A german physician. A dutch apothecary. A spanish dress. A kind reception. A tragical history. A well shaped woman. A virtuous king. An amiable man. A gray stoff. A violent storm. A covetous girl. A pleasant room. A tall boy. A red waistcoat. Silk breeches. A silver watch. A golden chain.

English. French,	<i>Engelsch. Fransch.</i>
Italian,	<i>Italiaansch.</i>
Proverb,	<i>spreekwoord. n.</i>
Ruslian German,	<i>Russisch. Duitsch.</i>
Dutch. Spanish,	<i>Hollandsch. Spaansch.</i>
Dress Kind,	<i>kleeding. f. Vriendelijk.</i>
Reception,	<i>onthaal. n.</i>
Tragical,	<i>treurig.</i>
Well shaped,	<i>welgemaakt.</i>
Virtuous. Amiable,	<i>deugdzaam. Beminnelijk.</i>
Gray. Violent,	<i>grauw. Hevig.</i>
Covetous,	<i>gierig.</i>
Pleasant. Tall,	<i>vermakelijk. Lang.</i>
Red. Silk,	<i>rood. Zijden.</i>
Silver. Golden,	<i>Zilveren. Gouden.</i>
Chain,	<i>ketting.</i>

N^o. 23.

A good scholar; a better scholar; the best scholar of the village. A great multitude; a greater multitude; the greatest multitude. A celebrated lawgiver; a more celebrated lawgiver; the most celebrated lawgiver of Greece. A high steeple; a higher steeple; the highest steeple of London. A despicable action; a more despicable action; the most despicable action. A negligent child; a more negligent child; the most negligent child of the school. A violent agitation; a more violent agitation; the most violent agitation.

Scholar,
Village,
Multitude,
Celebrated,
Lawgiver,
High. Steeple.
London
Despicable. Action,
Negligent,
Violent,
Agitation,

scholier.
dorp. n.
menigte. f.
beroemd.
wetgever. m.
hoog. Toren. m.
Londen.
verachtelijk. Daad.
nalatig.
hevig.
beweging.

N^o. 24.

A sentence of a severe judge. Paris is not so populous as London. I speak of a difficult thing. He writes a letter to a learned man. I have a book of a modest and amiable lady. Is it a useful and agreeable book. The lion is the strongest and most courageous of all animals. Ingratitude is the greatest of all vices. The gardens of my uncle are very spacious. It is an inexpressible agreeableness.

Sentence. Severe,
Populous,
I speak,
Difficult,
He writes,

vonnis. Streng.
volkrijk.
ik spreek.
moeijelijk.
hij schrijft.

Learned,	<i>geleerd.</i>
Modest,	<i>ædig.</i>
Lady,	<i>jufvrouw.</i>
Useful. Agreeable.	<i>nuttig. Aangenaam.</i>
Strong. Courageous.	<i>sterk. Moedig.</i>
Ingratitude.	<i>ondankbaarheid. f.</i>
Of my uncle,	<i>mijns ooms, or, van mijnen oom.</i>
Spacious,	<i>groot.</i>
Inexpressible,	<i>onuitsprekelijk.</i>
Agreeableness,	<i>aangenaamheid.</i>

N°. 25.

France is a fruitful and pleasant country, in which the air is temperate. We have in Holland inconstant weather. That man has an oval face. I know a despicable liar; and you have seen a litigious man. Charles XII, king of Sweden, had a wonderful courage. Sylla gained in Rom an absolute power. This was a bad omen among the Romans. The olympic games were instituted by Hercules.

Fruitful,	<i>vruchtbaar.</i>
In which,	<i>akwaar.</i>
Temperate,	<i>gematigd.</i>
Inconstant,	<i>onbestendig.</i>
Oval face,	<i>langwerpig aangezigt.</i>
I know,	<i>ik ken.</i>
Despicable,	<i>verachtelijk.</i>
You have seen,	<i>gij hebt gezien.</i>
Litigious,	<i>twistziek.</i>
Charles,	<i>Karel.</i>
Wonderful,	<i>verwonderlijke.</i>
Gained,	<i>verkreeg.</i>
Rom,	<i>Rome.</i>
Absolute,	<i>onbepaald.</i>
Power,	<i>magt. f.</i>
Bad. Omen.	<i>lecht. Voorteecken. n.</i>
Among the Romans.	<i>bij de Romeinen.</i>
Olympic games,	<i>Olympische spelen.</i>
Instituted,	<i>ingesteld.</i>

N°. 26.

They are irreconcilable enemies. We observe the invariable order of the universe. The holy scripture is a noble treasure. Zeuxis painted a perfect beauty. Marriage is the most perfect state of friendship. That man has an extensive knowledge. The victories of Caesar were baneful to his country. That is pernicious to all Europe. Our body is mortal, but our soul is immortal. God is just and bountiful. I read a tedious book. Our king is humane and merciful.

Irreconcilable,
We observe,
Invariable,
Order. Universe,
Holy scripture,
Noble. Treasure,
Painted,
Perfect,
Beauty,
Marriage,
State,
Extensive,
Knowledge,
Victory,
Baneful,
Pernicious. All,
Mortal,
Just. Bountiful,
I read,
Tedious,
Humane,
Merciful,

onverzoenlijk.
wij nemen waar.
onveranderlijk.
orde. f Heelal. n.
heilige schrift.
edel. Schat. m.
schilderde.
volmaakt.
schoonheid. f.
huwelijk. n.
staat. m.
uitgebreid.
kennis. f.
overwinning. f.
noodlottig.
nadeelig. Geheel.
sterfelijk.
regtvaardig. Goed.
ik lees.
vervelend.
menschlievend.
lankmoedig.

N°. 27.

Socrates was a great philosopher. Humility is the basis of christian virtues. The public good is preferable to private interest. Human life is never free from troubles. The goddess Calypso was taller than all her nymphs. August was more fortunate than

Anthony. The simplicity of nature is more amiable than all the embellishments of art. Virtue is more precious than riches. The Rhine is more rapid than the Thames.

Philosopher,
Humility,
Basis,
Christian,
The public good,
Preferable to,
Private interest,
Human,
Never Free,
Troubles,
Nymphs,
August. Anthony.
Simplicity,
Embellishment,
Precious,
Rhine. Thames,
Rapid,

Wijsgeer. m.
nederigheid. f.
grondslag. m.
ch. istelijk.
het algemeen welzijn.
verkiezlijk boven.
bijzonder belang.
menschelijk.
nooit. Vrij.
onlusten.
Nimfen. f.
Augustus. Antonius.
eenvoudigheid. f.
versierfel. o.
kostbaar.
Rin. Teems.
snelylietend.

N^o. 28.

He is humble, though elevated in dignity. In winter the days are short, and the nights long. The city of Troy was formerly the most famous in Asia. The reign of that king was the most glorious of all. Your brother is the most obliging man in the town. The most ancient and general idolatry was the worship rendered to the sun. He shuns' sensual pleasures. This is one of the greatest defects of his poem. Obedience is the surest means of pleasing our superiors.

Humble,
Though elevated,
Dignity,
Short. Troy,
Formerly,
Famous,
Reign. Glorious,
Obliging,
Ancient. General,

nederig.
hoewel verheven.
waardigheid.
kort. Troje.
voormaals.
beroemd.
regering. f. Roemrijk.
verplichtend.
oud. Algemeen.

Idolatry,	<i>afgodertij. f.</i>
Worship rendered to the sun,	<i>aanbidding der zon.</i>
He fhuns,	<i>hij vermijdt.</i>
Sensual,	<i>zinnelijk.</i>
Defect,	<i>gebrek. n.</i>
Poem,	<i>dichtftuk. n.</i>
Sure.	<i>zeker.</i>
Superior,	<i>meerdere.</i>
Of pleasing,	<i>om te voldoen.</i>

 N°. 29.

That girl is more amiable than your fifter. The legs of that man are more crooked than yours. The steeples of the town are higher than thofe of the village. This colour is more red than that. The fifter of Charles is more angry than I. The grandmother of William is more deaf than he. The ftreets of Amfterdam are broader than thofe. This food is more infipid than that. Lucia is more proud than John's fifter, and less revengeful than he.

Amiable,	<i>lief.</i>
Leg,	<i>been. n.</i>
Crooked. Thofe,	<i>fcheef. Die.</i>
Colour,	<i>kleur. f.</i>
Angry,	<i>boos.</i>
Deaf,	<i>doof.</i>
Broad,	<i>breed.</i>
Food,	<i>voedsel. n.</i>
Infipid,	<i>laf.</i>
Proud,	<i>trotsch.</i>
Revengeful,	<i>wraakzuchtig.</i>

 N°. 30.

John is not fo learned as Peter. Cicero was more eloquent than Cato. August was more benevolent than Anthony. Troy was furrounded by very ftrong walls. That is the cheapest wine I ever bought. That fcholar is more idle than Nicholas. This burden

is more heavy than that. He has made a rash vow; he will repent of it. Nothing is more lovely than virtue; nothing more hateful than vice. The universe is the work of an infinite and all-powerful being.

Learned,	<i>geleerd.</i>
Eloquent,	<i>welſpreekend.</i>
Benevolent,	<i>welaadig.</i>
Troy. Surrounded,	<i>Troje. Omringd.</i>
Strong. Wall,	<i>Sterk. Muur. m.</i>
Cheap,	<i>goeekoop.</i>
I ever bought,	<i>die ik ooit gekocht heb.</i>
Idle,	<i>lui.</i>
Burden,	<i>last. m.</i>
Heavy,	<i>zwaar.</i>
He has made,	<i>hij heeft gedaan.</i>
Rash. Vow.	<i>vermetel. Gelofte. f.</i>
He will repent of it,	<i>hij zal er berouw over hebben.</i>
Nothing,	<i>niets.</i>
Lovely,	<i>beminnelijk.</i>
Hateful. Vice,	<i>hatelijk. Ondeugd.</i>
Universe,	<i>heelal. n.</i>
Infinite,	<i>oneindig.</i>
All-powerful.	<i>almagtig.</i>

N^o. 31.

The imperial power of Rom was very great. The hostile nations of antiquity. We read the history of the ambitious Romulus. The Greeks were celebrated for their love of liberty. The Areopagus was remarkable for impartial equity. The savage cruelty of Tantalus was punished in the infernal regions with a burning thirst. We have all the fabulous stories of the ancient Greeks.

Imperial. Power.	<i>Keizerlijk. Magt. f.</i>
Hostile. Antiquity.	<i>Onlogzuchtig. Oudheid.</i>
Ambitious,	<i>heerszuchtig.</i>
Celebrated,	<i>beroemd.</i>
For their love of liberty.	<i>wegens hunne vrijheidsliefde.</i>
Greeks.	<i>Grieken.</i>
Remarkable,	<i>bekend.</i>
Impartial,	<i>onpartijdig.</i>
Equity,	<i>regtvaardigheid.</i>

Savage. Cruelty,
 Punished,
 Infernal,
 Region,
 Burning,
 Fabulous. Story.
 Ancient.

woest. Wreedheid.
gestraft.
helsch.
streek. f. Oord. m.
brandend.
fabelachtig. Verhaal. m.
oud.

N^o. 32.

In the barbarous ages of Greece there were many tyrannical and ferocious oppressors. Patience triumphs over the greatest obstacles. Lycurgus, the Spartan legislator, condemned himself to perpetual banishment. The royal government at Athens finished with the death of Codrus. The laws of Draco were so uncommonly severe, that they prescribed death for every crime. Every one admires the pure and correct language of Thucydides.

Barbarous.
 Age. Tyrannical.
 Ferocious. Oppressor.
 Triumphs.
 Obstacle.
 Spartan. Legislator.
 Condemned himself,
 Perpetual,
 Banishment,
 Regal,
 Government,
 Athens,
 Finished,
 Uncommonly,
 Prescribed,
 Every one,
 Admires;
 Pure. Correct.

barbaarsch.
eeuw. f. Tirannisch.
woest. Onderdrukker.
zegepraalt.
hinderpaal. m.
Spartaansch. Wetgever. m.
veroordeelde zich.
eeuwigdurend.
ballingschap. f.
koninklijk.
regering. f.
Athenen.
eindigde.
ongewoon.
voorgescreven.
iedereen.
bewondert.
zuiver. Naauwkeurig.

N^o. 33.

Darius was enraged at the disgraceful defeat of his

troops in the fields of Marathon. His successor Xerxes made extraordinary preparations for the conquest of Greece; but his ambition received a mortifying check at Thermopyle, and met with a brave and unexpected resistance. Sappho is called by ancient authors the tenth muse. That criminal was doomed to the most cruel and ignominious death. Cresus, king of Lydia, possessed immense riches.

Enraged at,
Disgraceful,
Defeat. Troops,
Field. Successor,
Made,
Extraordinary,
Preparations,
Conquest,
Mortifying. Check.
Met with.
Brave. Unexpected.
Resistance.
Called. Author.
Tenth. Nymph.
Doomed. Cruel,
Ignominious,
Possessed,
Immense,

woedend over.
schandelijk.
nederlaag f. Troepen.
veld. n. Opvolger. m.
maakte.
buitengewoon.
toebereidselen.
verovering.
vernederend. schok. m.
ontmoette.
dapper. Onverwacht.
tegenstand. m.
genoemd. Schrijver.
tiende. Nymf.
veroordeeld. Wreed.
schandelijk.
bezat.
onmetelijk.

Of Pronouns.

Van de Voornaamwoorden.

We have already observed that pronouns are words used instead of nouns, to avoid the too frequent repetition of the same word.

There are six kinds of pronouns, viz:

<i>Persoonlijke voornaamwoorden,</i>	personal pronouns.
<i>Wederkeerige voornaamwoorden,</i>	reciprocal pronouns.
<i>Bezittelijke voornaamwoorden,</i>	possessive pronouns.
<i>Vragende voornaamwoorden,</i>	interrogative pronouns.
<i>Aanwijzende voornaamwoorden,</i>	demonstrative pronouns.
<i>Betrekkelijke voornaamwoorden,</i>	relative pronouns.

§ 1.

Of personal pronouns.

Van de persoonlijke Voornaamwoorden.

Pronouns personal are those which directly denote the persons.

There are three persons, who may be the subject of any discourse: first, the person who speaks, may speak of himself; secondly, he may speak to the person to whom he addresses himself; thirdly, he may speak of some other person: and as the speakers, the persons spoken to, and the other persons spoken of, may be many, so each of these persons must have the plural number.

The first person is *ik*, I; plural *wij*, we; the second *gij*, thou, you, for the singular and plural; the third *hij*, he, for the masculine singular; *zij*, she, for the feminine singular; *het*, it, for the neuter singular, and *zij*, they, for all the genders in plural.

The persons speaking, and spoken to, being at the same time the subjects of the discourse, are supposed to be present; from which, and other circumstances, their sex is commonly known, and needs not to be marked by a distinction of gender in the pronouns: but the third person or thing spoken of, being absent, and in many respects unknown, it is necessary that it should be marked by a distinction of gender; at least when some particular person or thing is spoken of, that ought to be more distinctly marked.

Declension of the personal pronouns.

First person.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>ik</i> , I. | 1. <i>wij</i> , we. |
| 2. <i>mijns</i> , or, <i>van mij</i> , of me. | 2. <i>onzer</i> , or, <i>van ons</i> , of us. |
| 3. <i>mi</i> , or, <i>aan mij</i> , to me. | 3. <i>ons</i> , or, <i>aan ons</i> , to us. |
| 4. <i>mij</i> , me. | 4. <i>ons</i> , us. |

Second person.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>gij</i> , thou. | 1. <i>gij</i> , you. |
| 2. <i>uws</i> , <i>van u</i> , of thee. | 2. <i>uwer</i> , or, <i>van u</i> , of you. |
| 3. <i>u</i> , or, <i>aan u</i> , to thee. | 3. <i>u</i> , or, <i>aan u</i> , to you. |
| 4. <i>u</i> , thee. | 4. <i>u</i> , you. |

Third person.

Masculine singular.

1. *hij*, he.
2. *zijns*, or, *van hem*, of him.
3. *hem*, or, *aan hem*, to him.
4. *hem*, him.

Masculine plural.

1. *zij*, they.
2. *hunner*, or, *van hen*, of them.
3. *hun*, or, *aan hen*, to them.
4. *hen*, them.

Feminine singular.

1. *zij*, she.
2. *harer*, or, *van haar*, of her.
3. *haar*, or, *aan haar*, to her.
4. *haar*, her.

Feminine plural.

1. *zij*, they.
2. *harer*, or, *van haar*, of them.
3. *haar*, or, *aan haar*, to them.
4. *haar*, them.

Neuter singular.

1. *het*, it.
2. *van het*, of it.
3. *het*, or, *aan het*, to it.
4. *het*, it.

Neuter plural.

1. *zij*, they.
2. *hunner*, *van hen*, of them.
3. *hun*, *aan hen*, to them.
4. *hen*, them.

Men, one; *iemand*, some body; *niemand*, nobody; are considered as personal pronouns.

Sometimes the word *zelf*, self; is added to these pronouns to denote, in a more special manner, the person spoken of. It is declined in the following manner.

First person.

Masculine singular.

1. *ik zelf*, I myself.
2. *mijns zelfs*, or, *van mij zelven*, of myself.

3. *mij*, or, *aan mij zelve*, to myself.
4. *mij zelve*, myself.

Feminine singular.

1. *ik zelve*, I myself.
2. *mij zelve*, or, *van mij zelve*, of myselfs.
3. *mi*, or, *aan mij zelve*, to myself.
4. *mij zelve*, myself.

Masculine and feminine plural.

1. *wij zelve*, we ourselves.
2. *ons zelve*, or, *van ons zelve*, of ourselves.
3. *ons*, or, *aan ons zelve*, to ourselves.
4. *ons zelve*, ourselves.

Second person.

Masculine singular.

1. *gij zelf*, thyself.
2. *uws zelfs*, or, *van u zelve*, of thyself.
3. *u*, *aan u zelve*, to thyself.
4. *u zelve*, thyself.

Feminine singular.

1. *gij zelve*, thyself.
2. *u zelve*, *van u zelve*, of thyself.
3. *u*, or, *aan u zelve*, to thyself.
4. *u zelve*, thyself.

Masculine and Feminine plural.

1. *gij zelve*, yourselves.
2. *u zelve*, or, *van u zelve*, of yourselves.
3. *u*, or, *aan u zelve*, to yourselves.
4. *u zelve*, yourselves.

Third person.

Masculine singular.

1. *hij zelf*, he himself.
2. *zijns zelfs*, or, *van zich zelve*, of himself.

3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to himself.
4. *zich zelve*, himself.

Plural.

1. *zi' zelve*, they themselves.
2. *hen zelve*, or, *van zich zelve*, of themselves.
3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to themselves.
4. *zich zelve*, themselves.

Feminine singular.

1. *zij zelve*, she herself.
2. *haar zelve*, or, *van zich zelve*, of herself.
3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to herself.
4. *zich zelve*, herself.

Plural.

1. *zij zelve*, they themselves.
2. *haar zelve*, or, *van zich zelve*, of themselves.
3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to themselves.
4. *zich zelve*, themselves.

Neuter singular.

1. *het zelf*, itself
2. *zijns zelfs*, or, *van zich zelve*, of itself.
3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to itself.
4. *zich zelve*, itself.

Plural.

1. *zij zelve*, they themselves.
2. *hen zelve*, or, *van zich zelve*, of themselves.
3. *zich*, or, *aan zich zelve*, to themselves.
4. *zich zelve*, themselves.

We must still observe that *zelf* is the pronoun, we have just now spoken of; and *zelfs*, an adverb, signifying *nay*, *moreover*.

Ik heb hem zelf gezien, I have seen him myself.
Ik heb hem zelfs gezien, nay, I have seen him.

When we speak of inanimate objects we use often *dezelve*, instead of the personal pronouns *hen*, *haar*, them.

Waar zijn de pennen? hebt Where are the pens? have
gij dezelve? you them?

E X E R C I C E S,

on the personal pronouns.

N^o. 34.

Who is there? I, he, and she. Who speaks there? They and I. To whom do you speak? To you, to him, to her, and to them. He loves me; she hates her. They punish us. We respect them. You bring them. Do you write a letter to him, to her, or to us? He imagines that when he is rich, he is happy; but he is mistaken. Who was calling me? It was not I.

Who is there?
Who speaks there?
To whom?
Do you speak?
Loves,
Hates,
Punish,
Respect,
Bring,
Do you write?
He imagines,
But he is mistaken,
Who was calling me?

wie is daar?
wie spreekt daar?
tot wien?
spreekt gij?
bemint.
haat.
straffen.
achten.
brengt.
schrijft gij?
hij verbeeldt zich.
maar hij heeft ongelijk.
wie riep mij?

N^o. 35.

Do you know that Lady? Yes Sir, I know her

since long; she is the cousin of my friend. Have you seen her yesterday? No, but I have seen her next week. Where are my brothers, have you spoken to them? Yes Sir, and I have given them the books and the pencases. Will your sister go out to day? I don't know, I have not seen her. Send them some fruits, or some other refreshments. They are tired, give them some rest.

Do you know?
Since long,
Cousin,
Have you seen?
Next week.
Where are?
Spoken,
Given,
Pencase,
Will your sister go out?
To day;
I don't know,
Seen,
Send,
Some fruits,
Refreshments,
Tired,
Rest,

kent gij?
sedert lang.
nicht.
hebt gij gezien?
verledene week.
waar zijn?
gesproken.
gegeven.
pennekoker. m.
zal uwe zuster uitgaan?
van daag
ik weet het niet.
gezien.
zend.
eenige vruchten.
ververschingen.
vermoeid.
rust.

N^o. 36.

Let him come himself, I will be at home. She has done it herself. They will write the letter themselves. We have spoken to her ownself. He had promised it to him, but he gave it to me. He would not sell it them, but he would give it to her. Carry it to him or to her, but not to them. He has written a letter, and shown them the two first lines. I will lend them some very pretty books, but they must render them to day a fortnight.

Let... come,
I will be,
Done,
Promised,

laat... komen.
ik zal zijn.
gedaan.
beloofd.

Gave,
He would not sell,
Carry,
Shown,
The two first lines,
Lend,
Some very pretty,
Render,
To day a fortnight,

gaf.
hij wilde niet verkoopen.
breng.
laten zien.
de twee eerste regels.
leeven.
eenige zeer fraaije.
wedergeven.
van daag over veertien dagen.

§ 2.

Of reciprocal pronouns.

Over de wederkeerige Voornaamwoorden.

There is but one reciprocal pronoun in the Dutch language, viz: *zich*, one's self, used in the reciprocal verbs. It is declined in the following manner:

- 1.
2. *Zijns*, or, *van zich*, of himself.
3. *Zich*, or, *aan zich*, to himself.
4. *Zich*, himself.

In the genitive feminine singular and plural one uses also *harer*, and for the genitive masculine plural *hunner*.

E X E R C I C E

on the reciprocal pronoun.

N°. 37.

Let him be prudent, he exposes himself. They wash themselves, they will go out immediately. I dress myself, I will be soon ready, have patience. Your sister applies herself to study. He warmed himself

when we entered. We saw ourselves exposed to a great danger. They find themselves obliged to go there. We shall submit ourselves to that judgment.

He exposes,	<i>hij stelt bloot.</i>
They wash,	<i>zij waschen.</i>
Immediately,	<i>dadelijk</i>
I dress,	<i>ik kleed.</i>
I will be soon ready,	<i>ik zal weldra gereed zijn.</i>
She applies,	<i>zij legt toe.</i>
To study,	<i>op de studie.</i>
He warmed,	<i>hij warmde zich.</i>
When we entered,	<i>toen wij binnen kwamen.</i>
We saw,	<i>wij zagen.</i>
They find,	<i>zij vinden.</i>
Obliged,	<i>verplicht.</i>
We shall submit,	<i>wij zullen onderwerpen.</i>
Judgment,	<i>vonnis. n.</i>

§ 3.

Of possessive Pronouns.

Van de bezittelijke Voornaamwoorden.

These pronouns are called *possessive*, because they always denote property or possession.

They are divided in two sorts, viz: *adjective* and *substantive*.

The adjective are so called because they are always joined to a substantive: *mijn boek*, my book; *uwe pen*, your pen; *zijn huis*, his house; *haar tuin*, her garden; *onze meid*, our servant; *hunne tafel*, their table.

The substantive stand always alone, as: *de mijne*, mine; *de uwe*, yours; *de zijne*, his; *de hare*, hers; *de onze*, ours; *de hunne*, theirs.

The possessive pronouns of the first and second person denote only the gender of the possession; but those of the third person denote the genders of both, of the possession and of the possessor. Speaking of a man we say: *zijn vader*, his father; *zijne moeder*, his mother; but of a woman; *haar vader*, her father; *hare moeder*, her mother.

It is the same in the plural; of several men we say: *hun huis*, their house; *hunne huizen*, their houses; and of several woman: *haar huis*, their house; *hare huizen*, their houses.

Declension

of the pronouns possessive adjective.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *mijn tuin*, my garden.
2. *mijns tuins*, or, *van mijnen tuin*, of my garden.
3. *mijnen*, or, *aan mijnen tuin*, to my garden.
4. *mijnen tuin*, my garden.

Plural.

1. *mijne tuinen*, my gardens.
2. *mijner*, or, *van mijne tuinen*, of my gardens.
3. *mijnen*, or, *aan mijne tuinen*, to my gardens.
4. *mijne tuinen*, my gardens.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *mijne pen*, my pen.
2. *mijner*, or, *van mijne pen*, of my pen.
3. *mijner*, or, *aan mijne pen*, to my pen.
4. *mijne pen*, my pen.

Plural.

1. *mijne pennen*, my pens.
2. *mijner*, or, *van mijne pennen*, of my pens.
3. *mijner*, or, *aan mijne pennen*, to my pens.
4. *mijne pennen*, my pens.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *mijn paard*, my horse.
2. *mijns paards*, or, *van mijn paard*, of my horse.
3. *mijnen paarde*, or, *aan mijn paard*, to my horse.
4. *mijn paard*, my horse.

Plural.

1. *mijne paarden*, my horses.
2. *mijner*, or, *van mijne paarden*, of my horses.
3. *mijnen*, or, *aan mijne paarden*, to my horses.
4. *mijne paarden*, my horses.

Declension,

of the possessive pronouns substantive.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *de uwe*, yours.
2. *van den uwen*, of yours.
3. *den*, or, *aan den uwen*, to yours.
4. *den uwen*, yours.

Plural.

1. *de uwe*, yours.
2. *der*, or, *van de uwe*, of yours.
3. *den uwen*, or, *aan de uwe*, to yours.
4. *de uwe*, yours.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de uwe*, yours.
2. *der*, or, *van de uwe*, of yours.
3. *der*, or, *aan de uwe*, to yours.
4. *de uwe*, yours.

Plural.

1. *de uwe*, yours.
2. *der*, or, *van de uwe*, of yours.
3. *der*, or, *aan de uwe*, of yours.
4. *de uwe*, yours.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *het zijne*, his.
2. *van het zijne*, of his.
3. *aan het zijne*, to his.
4. *het zijne*, his.

Plural.

1. *de zijne*, his.
2. *van de zijne*, of his.
3. *aan de zijne*, to his.
4. *de zijne*, his.

The other possessive pronoun. are declined in the same manner.

Observations.

Ons, our, changes in *onze* before the substantives masculine and feminine: *onze oom*, our uncle; *onze kamer*, our chamber.

Uw, your, is used in the singular and plural of the possessor: *uw boek*, if one person possesses, and *uw boek*, when several persons possess it together.

We must be careful in distinguishing *mij*, personal pronoun, from *mijn*, possessive pronoun:

Mijn oom gaf mij een boek, my uncle gave me a book.

U, personal pronoun, from *uw* possessive pronoun.

Uwe moeder zend u eenen brief, your mother sends you a letter.

The word *eigen*, own, is very often joined to the possessive pronoun, to denote the possession in a more special manner.

Mijn eigen paard,
Zijn eigen huis,

my own horse.
his own house.

E X E R C I C E S

on the posfessive pronouns.

N^o. 38.

Your uncle and your aunt (*) are arrived yesterday, but my cousin will come the day after to morrow. Our orchard is very fruitful, we have all forts of fruits in it. My nieces were ill, but your nephews were in good health. Our master rewards us often, but yours is always discontent. His sifter is very amiable, and so you are. The nosegay which I gathered in our garden, is for his sifter, and not for his mother.

Arrived,	<i>kwamen aan.</i>
Will come,	<i>zal komen.</i>
The day after to morrow,	<i>overmorgen.</i>
Orchard,	<i>boomgaard. m.</i>
Fruitful,	<i>vruchtbaar.</i>
Sorts,	<i>soorten.</i>
Were ill,	<i>waren ongesteld.</i>
In good health,	<i>gezond.</i>
Rewards,	<i>beloont.</i>
Often,	<i>dikwerf.</i>
Discontent,	<i>ontevreden.</i>
Nosegay,	<i>ruiker. m.</i>
Which I gathered,	<i>welken ik plukte.</i>

N^o. 39.

Bring me my penknife, his grammar, her book of arithmetick, their flates, and our newspapers. Carry that paper to my son's master, or to the attorney.

(*) In Dutch the pronouns must be repeated before every substanti

Your ambition is the only cause of your imprudence. Her affection for me is false, that grieves me. Your horses and carriage are very beautiful, but those of master C. are much more so. The carpenter's son fell from the roof of our stable, and broke his right leg. Holland is a fine country; strangers see its riches and cleanliness with pleasure and astonishment.

Book of arithmetick,
Newspaper,
Attorney,
Ambition,
The only cause,
Imprudence,
Affection,
False,
That grieves me,
Carriage,
Are much more so,
Fell from,
Roof. Stable.
Broke,
Right leg,
Stranger,
Its riches,
Cleanliness,
Astonishment,

rekenboek. n.
nieuwspapier, n.
prokureur. m.
eerzucht. f.
eenige oorzaak. f.
onvoorzigtigheid. f.
genegenheid. f.
geveinsd.
dat smart mij.
koets. f.
zijn nog schooner.
viel van.
dak. n. *stal.* m.
brak.
regter been.
vreemdeling. m.
deszelfs rijkdom. m.
zindelijkheid.
verwondering. f.

N°. 40.

Arnhem is a fine city, I admire its situation. The walks of your country-seat are well kept, I like their regularity. Paris is a great city, but its streets are too narrow. Her house is very inconvenient, but it is too great. Do your sisters learn geography? Yes Sir, since long. His thoughts are confused, do not hear him. Their country-seats are sold to a rich merchant, and their houses are burnt down. How does your mother do? Very well, I thank you.

I admire,
Situation,
Walk,
Country-seat,

ik bewonder.
ligging. f.
wandeling. f. *laan.* f.
buitenplaats. f.

Well kept,
I like,
Regularity,
Narrow,
Convenient.
Do they learn,
Since long,
Thought,
Confused,
Hear,
Sold,
Burnt down,
How does she do?

wel in orde gehouden.
ik hou van.
geregeldheid. f.
naauw.
gemakkelijk.
leeren zij.
sedert lang.
gedachte. f.
verward.
hoor.
verkocht.
afgebrand.
hoe vaart zij?

N^o. 41.

Your daughter is handsomer than mine, but mine has more wit than yours. He deploras his fate and ours. Her soul is more elevated than yours. He tells a falsehood, as often as he opens his mouth. Your illness is dangerous, I know its origine and effects. Flattery has much sweetness in her voice. I have been in his garden and yours. They have met with your father and ours. We have send the itineraries to his tutor and theirs. I pity the old, who cannot get their livelyhood.

Handsome,
Wit,
He deploras,
Fate,
Elevated,
He tells,
Falsehood,
As often as,
Opens,
Illness,
Dangerous,
I know,
Origine,
Effect,
Flattery,
Sweetness,
Met with,
Itinerary,

schoon.
verstand. n.
hij beweent.
noodlot. n.
verheven.
hij vertelt.
leugen. f.
zoo dikwijls als.
opent.
ziekte. f.
gevaarlijk.
ik ken.
oorsprong. m.
uitwerkfel. n.
vleijerij. f.
zachtheid. f.
ontmoet.
reisbeschrijving. f.

Tutor,
I pity the old,
Get the livelyhood,

voogd. m.
ik beklaag de oude lieden.
bestaan verdienen.

N^o. 42.

My brother has read your observations and theirs; his explanation and ours. Her misfortunes are greater than ours and yours. My confidence and hers; their treasures and his; my credulity and yours. They speak of your bookseller and his, and not of our taylor. I ascribe that to his benevolence and yours. You are mistaken. It is possible. Tell him nothing of our adventures and theirs, for he would be exasperated.

Has read,
Observations,
Explanation,
Confidence,
Treasure,
Credulity,
They speak,
I ascribe,
Benevolence,
You are mistaken,
Tell nothing,
Adventure,
Exasperated,

heeft gelezen.
aanmerking. f.
uitlegging. f.
vertrouwen. n.
schat. m.
ligtgeloovigheid. f.
zij spreken.
ik schrijf toe.
weldadigheid.
gij hebt het mis.
vertel niets.
lotgeval. n.
vertoorn.

§ 4.

Of Pronouns interrogative.

Van de vragende Voornaamwoorden.

These pronouns are called interrogative because they are used only in asking questions, and have no antecedent. They are the following: *wie*, who; *wat*, *welke*, which; *hoedanig*, which, of which

Declension.

Masculine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. <i>wie</i> , who. | 1. <i>wie</i> , who. |
| 2. <i>wiens</i> , or, <i>van wien</i> , of whom, whose. | 2. <i>wier</i> , <i>van wie</i> , of whom. |
| 3. <i>wien</i> , <i>aan wien</i> , to whom. | 3. <i>wien</i> , <i>aan wie</i> , to whom. |
| 4. <i>wien</i> , whom. | 4. <i>wie</i> , whome. |

Feminine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. <i>wie</i> , who. | 1. <i>wie</i> , who. |
| 2. <i>van wie</i> , <i>wier</i> , of whom. | 2. <i>van wie</i> , <i>wier</i> , of whom. |
| 3. <i>aan wie</i> , <i>wier</i> , to whom. | 3. <i>aan wie</i> , <i>wier</i> , to whom. |
| 4. <i>wie</i> , who. | 4. <i>wie</i> , whom. |

Neuter singular.

- | | |
|---|---------------------------|
| 1. <i>wat</i> , what. | The neuter has no plural. |
| 2. <i>wiens</i> , or, <i>van wat</i> , of what. | |
| 3. <i>aan wat</i> , to what. | |
| 4. <i>wat</i> , what. | |

Masculine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>welke</i> , which. | 1. <i>welke</i> , which. |
| 2. <i>welks</i> , or, <i>van welken</i> , of which. | 2. <i>welker</i> , or, <i>van welke</i> , of which. |
| 3. <i>welken</i> , or, <i>aan welken</i> , to which. | 3. <i>welken</i> , or, <i>aan welke</i> , to which. |
| 4. <i>welken</i> , which. | 4. <i>welke</i> , which. |

Feminine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>welke</i> , which. | 1. <i>welke</i> , which. |
| 2. <i>welker</i> , or, <i>van welke</i> , of which. | 2. <i>welker</i> , or, <i>van welke</i> , of which. |

- | | |
|--|--|
| 3. <i>welker</i> , or, <i>aan welke</i> .
to which. | 3. <i>welker</i> , or, <i>aan welke</i> ,
to which. |
| 4. <i>welke</i> , which. | 4. <i>welke</i> , which. |

Neuter.

Singular.

- | | |
|---|------------------------------|
| 1. <i>welk</i> , which. | 1. <i>welke</i> , which. |
| 2. <i>welks</i> , of which. | 2. <i>welker</i> , of which. |
| 3. <i>welken</i> , or, <i>aan welk</i> ,
to which. | 3. <i>welken</i> , to which. |
| 4. <i>welk</i> , which. | 4. <i>welke</i> , which. |

Declension of *hoedanig*, joined to a noun.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *hoedanige tuin*, which garden.
2. *van hoedanigen tuin*, of which garden.
3. *aan hoedanigen tuin*, to which garden.
4. *hoedanigen tuin*, which garden.

Plural.

1. *hoedanige tuinen*, which gardens.
2. *van hoedanige tuinen*, of which gardens.
3. *aan hoedanige tuinen*, to which gardens.
4. *hoedanige tuinen*, which gardens.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *hoedanige tafel*, which table.
2. *van hoedanige tafel*, of which table.
3. *aan hoedanige tafel*, to which table.
4. *hoedanige tafel*, which table.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *hoedanig kind*, which child.
2. *van hoedanig kind*, of which child.
3. *aan hoedanig kind*, to which child.
4. *hoedanig kind*, which child.

Plural.

1. *hoedanige kinderen*, which children.
2. *van hoedanige kinderen*, of which children.
3. *aan hoedanige kinderen*, to which children.
4. *hoedanige kinderen*, which children.

The pronoun interrogative *wie*, who, is used for persons in general, and never joined to a substantive, as:

Wie komt daar? who comes there?
Wie zal den brief schrijven? who will write the letter?

Welke is used both for persons and for things:

Welken man hebt gij gezien? which man have you seen?
Welke vrouw zegt dat? which woman says that?
Welke pen hebt gij gevonden? which pen have you found?

Wat is only used in the first and fourth case.

Wat is dat? what is that?
Wat doet gij? what are you doing?

In the third case we use *waaraan*.

Waaraan denkt gij? to which do you think?

In stead of *welke* we use often *wat voor een*, as:

Wat voor een boek is dat? which book is that?
Wat voor een man spreekt daar? which man speaks there?

E X E R C I C E S ,

on the interrogative pronouns.

N^o. 43.

Who was the first king of the Netherlands? William the first. Whom do you seek? Your brother. From whom do you know it? From the advocate. In what city does he live? In Leghorn. In which country was he born? In Norway. Who told you the news? His tutor and yours. What book do you read? The history of Greece by Goldsmith. Here are several pictures, which do you like best? Which of your sisters is married? The youngest.

The first,	<i>de eerste.</i>
Netherlands,	<i>de Nederlanden.</i>
Do you seek,	<i>zoekt gij?</i>
Do you know it?	<i>weet gij het?</i>
Does he live?	<i>woont hij?</i>
Was he born?	<i>werd hij geboren?</i>
Told,	<i>vertelde.</i>
Do you read?	<i>leest zij?</i>
Here are several pictures.	<i>hier zijn verscheidene schilderijen</i>
Do you like best?	<i>verkiest gij?</i>
Married,	<i>getrouwd.</i>

N^o. 44.

Who goes there? The cousin of the tanner. Which of these two poems do you prefer? The former, I don't like the latter. Which of the maritime powers has the best navy? England. What are his motives? I don't know. What do you want, Sir? I want money. What have you done with your money? I have spent it. What do you say of the dutch language? It is difficult. What did your father write?

a french letter to his friends in Paris. Which garden have you bought? To which man did he tell it?

Goes there,	<i>Gaat daar.</i>
Poem,	<i>dichtstuk. n.</i>
Do you prefer,	<i>verkiest gij.</i>
The former,	<i>het eerste.</i>
The latter,	<i>het laatste.</i>
Maritime power,	<i>zeemogendheid. f.</i>
Navy,	<i>zeemagt. f.</i>
Motive,	<i>beweegreden. f.</i>
I don't know,	<i>ik weet niet.</i>
Do you want?	<i>hebt gij noodig?</i>
Have you done?	<i>hebt gij gedaan?</i>
Spent,	<i>verteerd.</i>
Do you say,	<i>zegt gij.</i>
Difficult,	<i>moeijelijk.</i>
Did write,	<i>schreef.</i>
Have you bought?	<i>hebt gij gekocht?</i>
Did he tell it?	<i>vertelde hij het?</i>

§ 5.

Of Pronouns demonstrative.

Van de aanwijzende Voornaamwoorden.

The demonstrative pronouns are thus called, because they point out precisely the subject, to which they relate. They are: *deze*, this; *die*, that; *gene*, that; *diegene*, he that; *degene*, he that; *dusdanig*, *zoodanig*, such; *dezelfde*, the same; *dezelve*, it, them.

Declension,
of these Pronouns.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *deze man*, this man.
2. *dezes mans*, or, *van dezen man*, of this man.

3. *dezen*, or, *aan dezen man*, to this man.

4. *dezen man*, this man.

Plural.

1. *deze mannen*, these men.

2. *dezer*, or, *van deze mannen*, of these men.

3. *dezen*, or, *aan deze mannen*, to these men.

4. *deze mannen*, these men.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *deze pen*, this pen.

2. *dezer*, or, *van deze pen*, of this pen.

3. *dezer*, or, *aan deze pen*, to this pen.

4. *deze pen*, this pen.

The plural is like the singular.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *dit kind*, this child.

2. *dezes kinds*, or, *van dit kind*, of this child.

3. *dezen kinde*, or, *aan dit kind*, to this child.

4. *dit kind*, this child.

Plural.

1. *deze kinderen*, these children.

2. *dezer*, or, *van deze kinderen*, of these children.

3. *dezen*, or, *aan deze kinderen*, to these children.

4. *deze kinderen*, these children.

Die, that.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *die tuin*, that garden.

2. *diens tuins*, or, *van dien tuin*, of that garden.

3. *dien*, or, *aan dien tuin*, to that garden.

4. *dien tuin*, that garden.

Plural.

1. *die tuinen*, those gardens.
2. *dier*, or, *van die tuinen*, of those gardens.
3. *dien*, or, *aan die tuinen*, to those gardens.
4. *die tuinen*, those gardens.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *die koningin*, that queen.
2. *dier*, or, *van die koningin*, of that queen.
3. *dier*, or, *aan die koningin*, to that queen.
4. *die koningin*, that queen.

The declension of the feminine plural, is like the singular. — *Dat*, that, is declined with the prepositions *van*, of, *aan*, to.

Gene, that.

Masculine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>gene</i> , that. | 1. <i>gene</i> , those. |
| 2. <i>genes</i> , of that. | 2. <i>gener</i> , of those. |
| 3. <i>genen</i> , to that. | 3. <i>genen</i> , to those. |
| 4. <i>gene</i> , that. | 4. <i>gene</i> , those. |

Feminine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>gene</i> , that. | 1. <i>gene</i> , those. |
| 2. <i>gener</i> , of that. | 2. <i>gener</i> , of those. |
| 3. <i>gener</i> , <i>gene</i> , to that. | 3. <i>gener</i> , to those. |
| 4. <i>gene</i> , that. | 4. <i>gene</i> , those. |

Neuter.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>gene</i> , that. | 1. <i>gene</i> , those. |
| 2. <i>genes</i> , of that. | 2. <i>gener</i> , of those. |
| 3. <i>genen</i> , to that. | 3. <i>genen</i> , to those. |
| 4. <i>gene</i> , that. | 4. <i>gene</i> , those. |

Degene, and *diegene* are declined like *gene*; the second case is *desgenen*; the third *dengenen*; so that *de* and *die* are as well declined as *gene*.

Dezelfde, the same.

Masculine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. | 1. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |
| 2. <i>deszelfden</i> , or, <i>van den-zelfden</i> , of the same. | 2. <i>derzelfde</i> , of the same. |
| 3. <i>denzelfden</i> , or, <i>aan den-zelfden</i> , to the same. | 3. <i>denzelfden</i> , to the same. |
| 4. <i>denzelfden</i> , the same. | 4. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |

Feminine.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. | 1. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |
| 2. <i>derzelfder</i> , of the same. | 2. <i>derzelfder</i> , of the same. |
| 3. <i>derzelfder</i> , to the same. | 3. <i>derzelfder</i> , to the same. |
| 4. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. | 4. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |

Neuter.

Singular.

Plural.

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>hetzelfde</i> , the same. | 1. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |
| 2. <i>van hetzelfde</i> , of the same. | 2. <i>derzelfder</i> , of the same. |
| 3. <i>aan hetzelfde</i> , to the same. | 3. <i>denzelfden</i> , to the same. |
| 4. <i>hetzelfde</i> , the same. | 4. <i>dezelfde</i> , the same. |

Dezelve is declined in the same manner.

Dusdanige and *zoodanige* are declined like *hoedanige*.

The demonstrative pronouns are repeated before every substantive.

E X E R C I C E S,

on the demonstrative Pronouns.

N°. 45.

Bring him this penknife, this inkhorn and this pen. Carry them these books and those foldingsticks. We have seen the king's palace, and that of the queen. Learn this lesson, it is not so difficult as that. These candlesticks are better than those. I speak to that man and woman, but they answer not. I spoke of this widow, who is rich. That woman changes her resolution every day. This dog has bit my leg. These errors are to great.

Inkhorn,
Foldingstick,
Seen,
Learn,
Candlestick,
I speak. I spoke.
Answer,
Changes,
Resolution,
Every day,
Bit,
Error;

inktkoker. m.
vuwbeen. n.
gezien.
leer.
kandelaar. m.
ik spreek. Ik sprak.
antwoorden.
verandert.
besluit.
elken dag.
gebeten in.
dwaling.

N°. 46.

This man is generous, but that is revengeful. Education is to the mind, what cleanliness is to the body. We have met with the same painter the day before yesterday. Do you speak of the same matter? Yes Sir, I do. Have they bought such (*zoodanig een*) a garden? Yes, they have. He has changed his own name for that of his cousin. The system of Copernicus is more probable than that of Ptolomy. The

disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body. We reward those, who apply themselves.

Generous,	<i>edelmoedig.</i>
Revengeful,	<i>wraakzuchtig.</i>
Is to,	<i>is voor.</i>
Mind,	<i>ziel. f.</i>
Cleanliness,	<i>zindelijkheid. f.</i>
The day before yesterday,	<i>eergisteren.</i>
Do you speak?	<i>spreekt gij?</i>
Matter,	<i>zaak. f.</i>
Yes, I do,	<i>ja.</i>
Bought,	<i>gekocht.</i>
Changed,	<i>veranderd.</i>
Own,	<i>eigen.</i>
System,	<i>stelsel. n.</i>
Probable.	<i>waarschijnlijk.</i>
Disorder,	<i>ziekte. f.</i>
We reward,	<i>wij beloonen.</i>
Who apply themselves.	<i>die zich toeleggen.</i>

N^o. 47.

Those who learn their lessons, may go out to day. I reward that boy, because he is diligent. I have sent him the same letter this morning. This account is not worth our attention. This weakness is the effect of that illness. They, who oppress the poor, shall be punished by God. Those who speak without reflexion, are liable to errors. I know that virtuous man, he has a natural abhorrence of vice. We speak of virtue and vice; love that, and detest this. This book will do you more honour, than all those you have composed before.

Who learn,	<i>die leeren.</i>
May go out,	<i>mogen uitgaan.</i>
Reward,	<i>beloon.</i>
Because,	<i>omdat.</i>
Sent,	<i>gezonden.</i>
Account,	<i>verhaal. n.</i>
Is not worth,	<i>is onwaardig.</i>
Weakness,	<i>zwakte. f.</i>

Effect,	<i>uitwerkfel. n.</i>
Illnes,	<i>ziekte. f.</i>
Oppress,	<i>onderdrukken.</i>
Shall be punished by,	<i>zullen geſtraft worden door.</i>
Without reflexion,	<i>zonder nadenken.</i>
Liable,	<i>onderhevig.</i>
I know,	<i>ik ken.</i>
Natural abhorrence,	<i>natuurlijke afkeer. m.</i>
We ſpeak,	<i>wij ſpreken.</i>
Will do you honour,	<i>zal u eer aandoen.</i>
Compoſed before,	<i>van te voren opgeſteld.</i>

§ 6.

Of pronouns relative.

Van de betrekkelijke Voornaamwoorden.

Theſe pronouns are called relative, becauſe they have always a reference to ſome other noun or pronoun in the diſcourſe, either expreſſed or implied. They are: *die*, *wie*, who, which; *welke*, who, which, *dewelke*, who, which.

Wie, masculine; *wie*, feminine; and *what*, neuter; are declined like *wie*, interrogative.

Welke, masculine; *welke*, feminine; *welk*, neuter; are declined like *welke*, interrogative.

Dewelke, is declined like *dezelfde*; pronoun demonſtrative.

Wat, is only uſed in the firſt and in the fourth caſe.

The noun, or pronoun, to which the pronoun relative has a reference, is called the *antecedent*, with which it muſt agree in gender and number, ex:

Ik ken den man, dien gij I know the man, whom
gezien hebt, you have ſeen.

Ik ken de vrouw, die zij I know the woman, they
beleedigd hadden, had offended.

The relative *who*, *which* and *that* are ſometimes underſtood in Engliſh, but they muſt always be expreſſed in Dutch.

E X E R C I C E,

upon the relative pronouns.

N^o. 48.

The man who speaks is my brother. The book which is on the table costs twelve shillings. The woman whom I see is your cousin. The watch which I have bought, is very fine. All the things which we enjoy come from God. The clemency of which you speak is very great. The bookseller to whom we have paid thousand pounds, is gone on a voyage. The river over which the bridge is built, is very rapid. I know those with whom you converse. Where is the friend to whom you have given your confidence?

Costs,
Shilling,
Watch,
Bought,
Very fine,
We enjoy.
Come,
Clemency,
Paid,
Is gone on a voyage,
Bridge,
Built,
Rapid.
You converse,
Where,
Confidence,

kost,
schelling. m.
horologie. n.
gekocht.
zeer fraai.
wij genieten.
komen.
langmoedigheid. f.
betaald.
is op reis gegaan.
brug, f.
gebouwd.
snelvlietend.
gij verkeert.
waar.
vertrouwen.

Of Verbs.

Van de Werkwoorden.

The verb, as we have already observed, is a word.

which either expresses the state of the subject, or an action, done by the subject, or an action received or suffered by the subject.

They are usually divided into six sorts, viz :

<i>Hulpwerkwoorden,</i>	Auxiliary verbs.
<i>Bedrijvende werkwoorden.</i>	Active verbs.
<i>Lijdende werkwoorden.</i>	Passive verbs.
<i>Onzijdige werkwoorden.</i>	Neuter verbs.
<i>Wederzijde werkwoorden.</i>	Reciprocal verbs.
<i>Onpersoonlijke werkwoorden.</i>	Impersonal verbs.

Some of them are regular, (*regelmatig*) that is to say, they follow the general rule of conjugation; others do not, and are called irregular (*onregelmatig*).

The first sort is called auxiliary verbs, because they are used to conjugate all the compound tenses of the other verbs. In the Dutch language they are four in number, viz: *hebben*, to have; *zijn*, or, *wezen*, to be; *worden*, to be; *zullen*, to shall, to will.

An active verb denotes a *transitive* action, or an action that passes over from the agent to another subject, or an object acted upon, as: *iemand beminnen*, to love somebody; *iemand straffen*, to reprove somebody; *iemand lasteren*, to slander somebody.

A passive verb expresses a passion or a suffering, or the receiving of an action, as: *bemind worden*, to be loved; *gestraft worden*, to be punished.

Verbs neuter may properly be denominated intransitive, because the effect is confined within the subject, and does not pass over to any object: as: *slapen*, to sleep; *beven*, to tremble; *lagchen*, to laugh.

A reciprocal verb expresses an action, which returns upon the agent that produced it, as: *zich waschen*, to wash one's self, *zich kleeden*, to dress one's self. These verbs have always *zich* before their infinitive, and are conjugated with a double pronoun.

The impersonal verbs have but the third person of the singular number, as: *regenen*, to rain; *sneeuwen*, to snow.

Before we proceed any farther on the verbs we shall give an example of the conjugation of the auxiliary verbs. —

C O N J U G A T I O N ,

of the auxiliary verb *hebben*, to have.

Onbepaalde wijs,

Infinitive mood,

Tegenwoordige tijd, hebben,
Verledene tijd, gehad hebben,

Present tense, to have,
Perfect tense, to have had,

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

Tegenwoordige tijd, hebbende,
Verledene tijd, gehad heb-
bende,

Present tense, having,
Perfect tense, having had,

Aantoonende wijs,
Tegenwoordige tijd,

Indicative mood,
Present tense,

Ik heb,
Gij hebt,
Hij heeft,
Wij hebben,
Gij hebt,
Zij hebben,

I have.
Thou hast.
He has.
We have.
You have.
They have.

Onvolmaakt verledene tijd,

Imperfect tense.

Ik had,
Gij hadt,
Hij had,
Wij hadden,
Gij hadt,
Zij hadden,

I had.
Thou hadst.
He had.
We had.
You had.
They had.

Volmaakt verledene tijd.

*Ik heb gehad,
Gij hebt gehad,
Hij heeft gehad,
Wij hebben gehad,
Gij hebt gehad,
Zij hebben gehad,*

Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.

*Ik had gehad,
Gij hadt gehad,
Hij had gehad,
Wij hadden gehad,
Gij hadt gehad,
Zij hadden gehad,*

Eerste toekomstige tijd.

*Ik zal hebben,
Gij zult hebben,
Hij zal hebben,
Wij zullen hebben,
Gij zult hebben,
Zij zullen hebben,*

Tweede toekomstige tijd.

*Ik zal gehad hebben,
Gij zult gehad hebben,
Hij zal gehad hebben,
Wij zullen gehad hebben,
Gij zult gehad hebben,
Zij zullen gehad hebben,*

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

*Ik zou hebben,
Gij zoudt hebben,

Hij zou hebben,
Wij zouden hebben,
Gij zoudt hebben,

Zij zouden hebben,*

Perfect tense.

*I have had.
Thou hast had.
He has had.
We have had.
You have had.
They have had.*

Pluperfect tense.

*I had had.
Thou hadst had.
He had had.
We had had.
Ye or You had had.
They had had.*

First future tense.

*I shall, or will have.
Thou shalt, or wilt have.
He shall, or will have.
We shall, or will have.
Ye or You shall, or will have.
They shall, or will have.*

Second future tense.

*I shall have had.
Thou wilt have had.
He will have had.
We shall have had.
You will have had.
They will have had.*

The conditional tense.

*I should, or would have.
Thou shouldst, or wouldst have.
He should, or would have.
We should, or would have.
Ye or You should, or would have.
They should, or would have.*

De tweede voorwaardelijke tijd.

Ik zou gehad hebben,
Gij zoudt gehad hebben,
Hij zou gehad hebben,
Wij zouden gehad hebben,
Gij zoudt gehad hebben,
Zij zouden gehad hebben,

De gebiedende wijs.

Heb,
Laat hem hebben, or, dat
hij hebbe,
Laat ons hebben,
Hebt,
Laat hen hebben,

De aanvoegende wijs.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

Dat ik hebbe,
Dat gij hebbet,
Dat hij hebbe,
Dat wij hebben,
Dat gij hebbet,
Dat zij hebben,

Onvolmaakt verledene tijd.

Dat ik hadde,
Dat gij haddet,
Dat hij hadde,
Dat wij hadden,
Dat gij haddet,
Dat zij hadden,

Volmaakt verledene tijd.

Dat ik gehad hebbe,
Dat gij gehad hebbet,
Dat hij gehad hebbe,
Dat wij gehad hebben,
Dat gij gehad hebbet,
Dat zij gehad hebben,

Second future tense.

I should have had.
 Thou wouldst have had.
 He would have had.
 We would have had.
 You would have had.
 They would have had.

The imperative mood.

Have.
 Let him have.
 Let us have.
 Have.
 Let them have.

The subjunctive mood.

The present tense.

That I have.
 That thou have.
 That he have.
 That we have.
 That you have.
 That they have.

Imperfect tense

That I had.
 That thou had.
 That he had.
 That we had.
 That you had.
 That they had.

Perfect tense.

That I have had.
 That thou have had.
 That he have had.
 That we have had.
 That you have had.
 That they have had.

Meer dan volmaakt ver-
ledene tijd.

*Dat ik gehad hadde ,
Dat gij gehad haddet ,
Dat hij gehad hadde ,
Dat wij gehad hadden ,
Dat gij gehad haddet ,
Dat zij gehad hadden ,*

Pluperfect tense.

That I had had.
That thou had had.
That he had had.
That we had had.
That you had had.
That they had had.

The auxiliary verb *zijn*, to be.

Onbepaalde wijs ,

Infinitive mood.

*Tegenwoordige tijd , zijn ,
Verledene tijd , geweest zijn ,*

*Present tense , to be.
Perfect tense , to have be.*

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

*Tegenwoordige tijd , zijnde ,
Verledene tijd , geweest ,*

*Present tense , being.
Perfect tense , been.*

Aantoonende wijs ,

Indicative mood.

*Ik ben ,
Gij zijt ,
Hij is ,
Wij zijn ,
Gij zijt ,
Zij zijn ,*

I am.
Thou art.
He is.
We are.
You are.
They are.

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

Imperfect tense.

*Ik was ,
Gij waart ,
Hij was ,
Wij waren ,
Gij waart ,
Zij waren ,*

I was.
Thou wast.
He was.
We were.
You were.
They were.

Volmaakt verledene tijd.

*Ik ben geweest,
Gij zijt geweest,
Hij is geweest,
Wij zijn geweest,
Gij zijt geweest,
Zij zijn geweest.*

Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.

*Ik was geweest,
Gij waart geweest,
Hij was geweest,
Wij waren geweest,
Gij waart geweest,
Zij waren geweest.*

Eerste toekomende tijd.

*Ik zal zijn,
Gij zult zijn,
Hij zal zijn,
Wij zullen zijn,
Gij zult zijn,
Zij zullen zijn,*

Tweede toekomende tijd.

*Ik zal geweest zijn,
Gij zult geweest zijn,
Hij zal geweest zijn,
Wij zullen geweest zijn,
Gij zult geweest zijn,
Zij zullen geweest zijn,*

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

*Ik zou zijn,
Gij zoudt zijn,

Hij zou zijn,
Wij zouden zijn,
Gij zoudt zijn,
Zij zouden zijn,*

Perfect tense.

**I have been.
Thou hast been.
He has been.
We have been.
You have been.
They have been.**

Pluperfect tense.

**I had been.
Thou hadst been.
He had been.
We had been.
You had been.
They had been.**

First future tense.

**I shall or will be.
Thou shalt or wilt be.
He shall or will be.
We shall or will be.
You shall or will be.
They shall or will be.**

Second future tense.

**I shall have been.
Thou wilt have been.
He will have been.
We shall have been.
You will have been.
They will have been.**

The conditional tense.

**I should, or would be.
Thou shouldst, or wouldst be.
He should, or would be.
We should, or would be.
You should, or would be.
They should, or would be.**

De tweede voorwaardelijke tijd.

*Ik zou geweest zijn,
Gij zoudt geweest zijn,
Hij zou geweest zijn,
Wij zouden geweest zijn,
Gij zoudt geweest zijn,
Zij zouden geweest zijn,*

De gebiedende wijs.

*Zijt, of wees,
Laat hem zijn,
Laat ons zijn,
Zijt, of weest,
Laat hen zijn,*

De aanvoegende wijs.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

*Dat ik zij,
Dat gij zijt,
Dat hij zij,
Dat wij zijn,
Dat gij zijt,
Dat zij zijn,*

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

*Dat ik ware,
Dat gij waret,
Dat hij ware,
Dat wij waren,
Dat gij waret,
Dat zij waren,*

De volm. verl. tijd.

*Dat ik zij geweest.
Dat gij zijt geweest.
Dat hij zij geweest,
Dat wij zijn geweest,
Dat gij zijt geweest,
Dat zij zijn geweest,*

The second conditional tense.

I should have been.
Thou wouldst have been.
He would have been.
We should have been.
You would have been.
They would have been.

The imperative mood.

Be.
Let him be.
Let us be.
Be,
Let them be.

The subjunctive mood.

The present tense.

That I be.
That thou be.
That he be.
That we be.
That you be.
That they be.

Imperfect tense.

That I were.
That thou were.
That he were.
That we were.
That you were.
That they were.

Perfect tense.

That I have been.
That thou have been.
That he have been.
That we have been.
That you have been.
That they have been.

Meer dan volmaakt ver-
leden tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

*Dat ik ware geweest,
Dat gij waret geweest,
Dat hij ware geweest,
Dat wij waren geweest,
Dat gij waret geweest,
Dat zij waren geweest,*

That I had been.
That thou had been.
That he had been.
That we had been.
That you had been.
That they had been.

The auxiliary verb *zullen*, to be.

Tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

*Ik zal,
Gij zult,
Hij zal,
Wij zullen,
Gij zult,
Zij zullen,*

I shall.
Thou shalt.
He shall.
We shall.
You shall.
They shall.

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

Imperfect tense.

*Ik zoude,
Gij zoudet,
Hij zoude,
Wij zouden,
Gij zoudet,
Zij zouden.*

I should.
Thou shouldst.
He should.
We should.
You should.
They should.

The auxiliary verb *worden*, to be.

Onbepaalde wijs.

Infinitive mood.

*Tegenw. tijd, worden,
Verled. tijd, geworden zijn,*

Present tense, to be.
Perfect tense, to have been.

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

*Tegenw. tijd, wordende,
Verledene tijd, geworden,*

Present tense, being.
Perfect tense, been.

Aantoonende wijs.

Indicative mood.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

*Ik word ,
Gij wordt ,
Hij wordt ,
Wij worden ,
Gij wordt ,
Zij worden ,*

*I am.
Thou art.
He is.
We are.
You are.
They are.*

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

Imperfect tense.

*Ik werd ,
Gij werdt ,
Hij werd ,
Wij werden ,
Gij werdt ,
Zij werden .*

*I was.
Thou wast,
He was.
We were.
You were.
They were.*

Volmaakt verl. tijd.

Perfect tense.

*Ik ben geworden ,
Gij zijt geworden ,
Hij is geworden ,
Wij zijn geworden ,
Gij zijt geworden ,
Zij zijn geworden ,*

*I have been.
Thou hast been.
He has been.
We have been.
You have been.
They have been.*

Meer dan volmaakt ver-
ledene tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

*Ik was geworden ,
Gij waart geworden ,
Hij was geworden ,
Wij waren geworden ,
Gij waart geworden ,
Zij waren geworden ,*

*I had been.
Thou hadst been.
He had been.
We had been.
You had been.
They had been.*

De toekomstige tijd.

The future tense.

*Ik zal worden ,
Gij zult worden ,
Hij zal worden ,
Wij zullen worden ,
Gij zult worden ,
Zij zullen worden ,*

*I shall or will be.
Thou shalt or will be.
He shall or will be.
We shall or will be.
You shall or will be.
They shall or will be.*

De tweede toekom. tijd.

*Ik zal geworden zijn,
Gij zult geworden zijn,
Hij zal geworden zijn,
Wij zullen geworden zijn,
Gij zult geworden zijn,
Zij zullen geworden zijn,*

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

*Ik zou worden,
Gij zoudt worden,*

*Hij zou worden,
Wij zouden worden,
Gij zoudt worden,
Zij zouden worden,*

De tweede voorwaardelijke tijd.

*Ik zou geworden zijn,
Gij zoudt geworden zijn,
Hij zou geworden zijn,
Wij zouden geworden zijn,
Gij zoudt geworden zijn,
Zij zouden geworden zijn,*

Gebiedende wijs.

*Word,
Laat hem worden,
Laat ons worden,
Wordt,
Laat hen worden,*

De aanvoegende wijs.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

*Dat ik worde,
Dat gij wordet,
Dat hij worde,
Dat wij worden,
Dat gij wordet,
Dat zij worden,*

The second future tense.

*I shall have been.
Thou wilt have been.
He will have been.
We shall have been.
You will have been.
They will have been.*

The conditional tense.

*I should or would be.
Thou shouldst or wouldst be.
He should or would be.
We should or would be.
You should or would be.
They should or would be.*

The second conditional tense.

*I should have been.
Thou shouldst have been.
He should have been.
We should have been.
You should have been.
They should have been.*

Imperative mood.

*Be.
Let him be.
Let us be.
Be.
Let them be.*

Subjunctive mood.

Present tense.

*That I be.
That thou be.
That he be.
That we be.
That you be.
That they be.*

De onvolmaakt verle-
dene tijd.

Imperfect tense.

*Dat ik wierde ,
Dat gij wierdet ,
Dat hij wierde ,
Dat wij wierden ,
Dat gij wierdet ,
Dat zij wierden ,*

That I were.
That thou were.
That he were.
That we were.
That you were.
That they were.

De volmaakt verl. tijd.

Perfect tense.

*Dat ik zij geworden ,
Dat gi zitt geworden ,
Dat hij zij geworden ,
Dat wij zijn geworden ,
Dat gij zitt geworden ,
Dat zij zijn geworden ,*

That I have been.
That thou have been.
That he have been.
That we have been.
That you have been.
That they have been.

De meer dan volmaakt
verleden tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

*Dat ik ware geworden ,
Dat gij waret geworden ,
Dat hij ware geworden ,
Dat wij waren geworden ,
Dat gij waret geworden ,
Dat zij waren geworden ,*

That I had been.
That thou had been.
That he had been.
That we had been.
That you had been.
That they had been.

We must observe that the two first verbs, *hebben*, to have, and *zijn*, to be, are only auxiliaries when they are joined with some participle passive of another verb; otherwise *zijn*, to be, may properly be called a substantive verb, that is, a verb which only expresses the affirmation, without any inherent quality; and the verb *hebben*, to have, is an active one, which signifies to possess.

Verbs are conjugated in four different manners, viz: *affirmatively*, *negatively*, *interrogatively* and with an *interrogation negative*.

When the verbs are conjugated negatively, the negative adverb *niet*, not, is added.

Present tense,

of the verb *hebben*, to have.

<i>Ik heb niet,</i>	I have not.
<i>Gij hebt niet,</i>	Thou hast not.
<i>Hij heeft niet,</i>	He has not.
<i>Wij hebben niet,</i>	We have not.
<i>Gij hebt niet,</i>	You have not.
<i>Zij hebben niet,</i>	They have not.

Present tense,

of *zijn*, to be

<i>Ik ben niet,</i>	I am not.
<i>Gij zijt niet,</i>	Thou art not.
<i>Hij is niet,</i>	He is not.
<i>Wi zijn niet,</i>	We are not.
<i>Gij zijt niet,</i>	You are not.
<i>Zij zijn niet,</i>	They are not.

Interrogatively.

Present tense,

of the verb to have, *hebben*.

<i>Heb ik?</i>	Have I?
<i>Hebt gij?</i>	Hast thou?
<i>Heeft hij?</i>	Has he?
<i>Hebben wij?</i>	Have we?
<i>Hebt gij?</i>	Have you?
<i>Hebben zij?</i>	Have they.

Present tense,

of the verb to be, *zijn*.

<i>Ben ik?</i>	Am I?
<i>Zijt gij?</i>	Art thou?

Is hij ?
Zijn wij ?
Zijt gij ?
Zijn zij ?

Is he ?
 Are we ?
 Are you ?
 Are they ?

With an interrogation negative.

Present tense.

Heb ik niet ?
Hebt gij niet ?
Heeft hij niet ?
Hebben wij niet ?
Hebt gij niet ?
Hebben zij niet ?

Have I not ?
 Hast thou not ?
 Has he not ?
 Have we not ?
 Have you not ?
 Have they not ?

Present tense,

of to be, *zijn*.

Ben ik niet ?
Zijt gij niet ?
Is hij niet ?
Zijn wij niet ?
Zijt gij niet ?
Zijn zij niet ?

Am I not ?
 Art thou not ?
 Is he not ?
 Are we not ?
 Are you not ?
 Are they not ?

Perfect tense.

Ben ik niet geweest ?
Zijt gij niet geweest ?
Is hij niet geweest ?
Zijn wij niet geweest ?
Zijt gij niet geweest ?
Zijn zij niet geweest ?

Have I not been ?
 Hast thou not been ?
 Has he not been ?
 Have we not been ?
 Have you not been ?
 Have they not been ?

E X E R C I S E S

on the auxiliary verbs.

N^o. 49.

I have books. Thou hast a pen. He has money. We have swords. You have friends. They have country-seats. I am happy, and he is unhappy. Thou art ready. He is grateful, but his sister is ungrateful. We are diligent and obedient. You are loved by every body. They are very glad to see me. They have a dictionary, and you have a grammar. Are they virtuous? He has fine weather, he is pleased. She is prudent and modest. We have good neighbours.

Sword,
Ready,
Grateful,
Very glad,
Dictionary,
Pleased,
Modest,

zwaard. n.
gereed.
dankbaar.
zeer verblijd.
woordenboek. n.
tevreden.
zedig.

N^o. 50.

We had new stockings, and they had sincere friends. I had precious jewels, and she had a fine nosegay. They had delightful landscapes, and you had money enough. Had they an enlightened judge? Yes Sir. I have had faithful servants. He has had elevated sentiments. We have had a regular conduct. He was a brave soldier. She was very generous. We were careful and attentive. They were ridiculous.

Sincere,
Precious jewels,

oprecht.
kostbare juweelen.

Nosegay,	<i>ruiker. m.</i>
Delightful,	<i>heerlijk.</i>
Landscape,	<i>landschap. n.</i>
Enlightened,	<i>verlicht.</i>
Judge,	<i>regter. m.</i>
Faithful,	<i>getrouw.</i>
Elevated,	<i>verheven.</i>
Sentiments,	<i>gevoelen.</i>
Regular,	<i>geregeld.</i>
Brave,	<i>dapper.</i>
Careful,	<i>zorgvuldig.</i>
Ridiculous.	<i>belagchelijk.</i>

N^o. 51.

I have been credulous, and he has been cruel. Thou hast been ungrateful. He has been economical and temperate. We have always been indulgent and kind. You have been firm and courageous. They have been, more than once, unreasonable. I shall have books and maps. He will have a pension. She will have pleasure. We shall have better watches. You will have to morrow a holy-day. They will have a beautiful coach.

Credulous,	<i>ligtgeloovig.</i>
Economical,	<i>zuinig.</i>
Temperate,	<i>matig.</i>
Indulgent,	<i>toegevend.</i>
Kind,	<i>vriendelijk.</i>
Firm,	<i>standvastig.</i>
Courageous,	<i>moedig.</i>
Unreasonable,	<i>onredelijk.</i>
Maps,	<i>kaarten. f.</i>
Pension,	<i>jaarwedde. f.</i>
A holy-day,	<i>vacantie. f.</i>
Beautiful,	<i>fraai.</i>

N^o. 52.

Am I not very unhappy? Is your friend beloved

by his fellow-citizens? Are we hungry and thirsty? How old are you? I am twenty years old. How old is your grand-mother? Eighty five years. You are mistaken, I believe. Had your father an extensive knowledge? Was this event not pernicious to our country? Were they dissatisfied? I don't know. Are we not mortal? Yes, but our souls are immortal.

Beloved,
Fellow-citizens,
Hungry,
Thirsty,
Old,
Eighty five,
You are mistaken,
Believe,
Extensive,
Event,
Pernicious,
Dissatisfied,

bemind.
landgenooten.
hongerig.
dorstig.
oud.
vijf en tachtig.
gij vergist u.
geloof.
uitgebreid.
gebeurtenis. f.
onadeelig.
ontevreden.

N^o. 53.

I had had a great library, and they had had fine pictures. He had had the poems of Homer, and we the travels of Cook. You had had diamonds, pearls and golden watches. I shall be to morrow at home, but she will be in the play. We shall have modesty, but they shall have pride. The enemies are on the mountain, let us be prudent. Revenge is always the pleasure of a weak mind. Italy has always been the garden of Europe. Is justice not the mistress and queen of virtue? Is the fate of nations not governed by providence? Have they always been courageous? Have they a description of America? I don't know.

Library,
Picture,
Poem,
Travel,
Diamond,
Pearl,
Play,

bibliotheek. f.
schilderij. f.
dichtstuk. n.
reis. f.
diamant. m.
parel. m.
schoonwburg. m.

Modesty,	<i>zedigheid.</i> f.
Pride,	<i>hoogmoed.</i> m.
Mountain,	<i>berg.</i> m.
Revenge,	<i>wraak.</i> f.
Weak mind,	<i>zwakke ziel.</i>
Justice,	<i>regtvaardigheid.</i>
Fate,	<i>lot.</i> n.
Governed,	<i>bestuurd.</i>
Providence,	<i>voorzienigheid.</i> f.
Courageous,	<i>moedig.</i>
Description,	<i>beschrijving.</i> f.

N^o. 54.

I shall have been in the garden, when you come home. You shall have been prudent, but she will have been imprudent. He should be glad, if you were content. We should be content, if we had what we wish. They should be indulgent, if we were obedient. You would be invincible, if you had courage. We shall have had valuable possessions, and you shall have had much money. Will he be next week at the country-seat? No, Sir. Would they be the day after to morrow in your company? Certainly. Would they have merchandises? More than enough. Would we be negligent? Not at all. Has he always been charitable? I can't tell. Have they not had a great deal of trouble? You could have bought, if you had had money.

Glad,	<i>verheugd.</i>
What we wish,	<i>wat wij wenschen.</i>
Indulgent,	<i>toegevend.</i>
Invincible,	<i>onoverwinnelijk.</i>
Courage,	<i>moed.</i> m.
Valuable,	<i>kostbaar.</i>
Possession,	<i>bezitting.</i> f.
Next week,	<i>aanstaande week.</i>
Company,	<i>gezelschap.</i> n.
Certainly,	<i>zekerlijk.</i>
Merchandises,	<i>koopwaren.</i> f.
Negligent,	<i>nalatig.</i>
Not at all,	<i>in het geheel niet.</i>

Charitable,
I can't tell,
A great deal of trouble,

liefdadig.
ik kan het u niet zeggen.
veel moeite.

N^o. 55.

Have patience, and be indulgent. Let us have at least gratitude for these benefits. Let us be joyful. Let them be cast down. Let them have beautiful flowers. Your brothers had learning, they were loved by every body. Are these factions not pernicious? Was that empire not of great duration? Is Tasco not the author of Jerusalem delivered? Are those liars not despised by every one? Be faithful to your friend in this unfortunate event. Caesar would have done more Honour to humanity, if he had been less ambitious. Would the reign of that king not have been long and glorious? Is any thing more odious than a seducer?

At least,
Gratitude,
Benefit,
Joyful,
Learning,
Faction,
Pernicious,
Empire,
Duration,
Author,
Jerusalem delivered,
Liar,
Despised,
Faithful,
Unfortunate event,
Humanity,
Less,
Reign,
Glorious,
Odious,
Seducer,

ten minste.
dankbaarheid. f.
weldaad. f.
vrolijk.
geleerdheid. f.
partijfchap. f.
nadeelig.
rijk. n.
duur. m.
schrijver.
Jeruzalem verlost.
Leugenaar.
veracht.
getrouw.
ongelukkige gebeurtenis. f.
menschdom. n.
minder.
regering. f.
roemrijk.
hatelijk.
verleider.

N°. 56.

We would have no pleasure at all, if you were absent. Your cousin has had the reckoning, and your sister the money. They have been unsuccessful in their undertakings, and that is the cause of my grief. Democrit says: men would be happy, if they had not so many wants. I am astonished, tell me an other story. I have been fatigued, and you have been indisposed. Is experience not the best adviser? Was Cicero not the most learned of all orators? Were the Romans not long invincible? Have the Grecians not been valiant? Was Alexander the great not a famous general? Is paternal authority not the most respectable of all laws? Is a lie not unworthy of an honest man? Did you not know that Saturn is the most distant planet?

No pleasure at all,
Absent,
Reckoning,
Unsuccessful,
Undertaking,
Grief,
Wants,
Astonished,
Fatigued,
Indisposed,
Experience,
Adviser,
Orator,
Roman,
Grecian,
Paternal authority,
Respectable,
Unworthy,
Saturn,
Most distant,

volstrekt geen vermaak.
afwezend.
rekening. f.
ongelukkig.
onderneming. f.
droefheid. f.
behoefsten.
verwonderd.
vermoeid.
ongesteld.
ondervinding. f.
raadgever. m.
redenaar. m.
Romein.
Grieksch.
vaderlijk gezigt;
eerbiedwaardig.
onwaardig.
Saturnas.
verste.

N°. 57.

Do nothing to day, that thou mayst repent of to

morrow. You will not be esteemed, though you be rich. I will not reward him, unless he be diligent and obedient. I will not pay him, unless he have patience. We would not assist them, though they were in a great danger. He will never become learned, unless he study methodically. They will never become rich, unless they be frugal and assiduous. I shall be attentive, that we might not be deceived. If she had married him, she would have had a good husband. Should we not have been rich? Would they not have been curious and discontent? Will he have been obstinate? You ask too much.

That thou mayst repent of,
 Though,
 To reward,
 Unless,
 Pay,
 Assist,
 Danger,
 To become learned,
 To study,
 Methodically,
 Frugal,
 Assiduous,
 Deceived,
 To marry,
 Husband,
 Curious,
 Obstinate,
 You ask,

waarvan gij berouw kunt hebben,
alhoewel.
beloonen.
ten zij.
betalen.
helpen.
gevaar. n.
geleerd worden.
studeren.
geregeld.
zuinig.
naarstig.
bedrogen.
trouwen.
man.
nieuwsgierig.
stijfhoofdig.
gij vraagt.

N°. 58.

Has your brother had money enough to pay his debts? Has your sister not been uneasy during that storm? Are the tyrants ever without fear? Had these gentlemen been on a voyage? Would these children have been merry? Had your sisters beautiful flowers, and nosegays? Had these girls had so much modesty? Had these fathers had so much tenderness? Had you not entertained great hopes? Was this student not ambitious and proud? Had the pupils not

been lazy and inattentive? Should your father be loved by his friends and acquaintances? Are you able to answer me? No, Sir, not at all, you have asked me too much.

Enough,	<i>genog.</i>
Debt,	<i>schuld. f.</i>
Uneasy,	<i>ongerust.</i>
During,	<i>gedurende.</i>
Tyrant,	<i>tiran.</i>
Without fear,	<i>zonder vrees.</i>
On a voyage,	<i>op reis.</i>
Beautiful,	<i>fraai.</i>
Nofegay,	<i>ruiker. m.</i>
Tenderness,	<i>tederheid. f.</i>
Entertained hopes,	<i>hoop voeden.</i>
Proud,	<i>hoogmoedig.</i>
Lazy,	<i>lui.</i>
Loved,	<i>bemind.</i>
To answer,	<i>antwoorden.</i>
To ask,	<i>vragen.</i>

N°. 59.

She has no vanity enough to believe all that. Has that man your protection? Has this been your desire? Had they been truly your friends? Is geography a useful science? Had your brothers been happy in that situation? Do not gather those apples, they are not yet good to eat. That country-house was to let, but it is burnt down. Is that science not worthy of cultivation? Would you not be very glad to read and speak dutch? Is there any thing more glorious? I do you service, as long as it is in my power. Have you a mind to do what you have promised me? Were they not all glad to hear it?

Vanity,	<i>verwaandheid. f.</i>
Protection,	<i>bescherming. f.</i>
Desire,	<i>begeerte. f.</i>
Truly,	<i>waarlijk.</i>
Science,	<i>wetenschap.</i>
Situation,	<i>toestand. m.</i>
To gather,	<i>plukken.</i>

Country-house,
To let,
Burnt down,
Worthy of cultivation,
Glorious,
Service,
Power,
A mind,
Promised,
To hear,

landhuis. n.
te huur.
verbrand.
waard aangekweekt te worden.
roemrijk.
diens.
magt.
lust.
beloofd.
hooren.

N°. 60.

I doubt whether he have been at home. When you have been at church, you shall come to me. I wish you may be happy in that new condition. Be short and concise in your description and explanation. Tuscany was once in Italy, what Athens has been in Greece. Was Xenocrates not the most rigid and severe of all the philosophers? The whales are very numerous near Spitzberg, in the frozen ocean. Is Britain not the most famous island in the world? Is the sun not the most striking emblem of divinity? What is more ridiculous than this quarrel? Was Tasſo not superior to Ariosto? Is the rainbow not formed from the sun-beams, reflected by drops of rain? Has there not been a great difference between these men?

I doubt whether,
At church,
I wish,
Condition,
Short,
Concise,
Description,
Explanation,
Tuscany,
Athens,
Rigid. Severe.
Whale,
Frozen Ocean,
Emblem,

ik twijfel of.
in de kerk.
ik wensch.
stand.
kort.
beknopt.
beschrijving. f.
uitlegging f.
Toskanen.
Athenen.
stipt. Streng.
walvisch. m.
Ts-zee. f.
zinnebeeld. n.

Ridiculous,
Superior to.
Rainbow,
Reflected,

belagchelijk.
verheven boven.
regenboog. m.
teruggekaatst.

N^o. 61.

Is there any body free from passion? Have they not always been ungrateful towards me? Would there be a distinction of rank between them? Men have been the same from the beginning of the world. Are there no animals above and under ground? Has ambition not always been the great disturber of peace? Your brother ought to be maintained against your cousin. Ought the woman not always to be dressed decently? Does rudeness not proceed from want of good breeding? After Numa's reign Janus's temple was only twice shut. Was Augustus not victorious in the battle of Actium? Is the world not a wilderness without friends?

Passion,
Ungrateful,
Distinction,
Disturber,
Ought to be,
Maintained,
Decently,
Rudeness,
Proceed from,
Good breeding,
Victorious,
Wilderness,

drift. f.
ondankbaar.
onderscheid.
verstoorder.
moest zijn.
ondersteund.
betamelijk.
onbeschaafdheid.
voortkomen van.
goede opvoeding.
overwinnend.
wildernis. f.

C O N J U G A T I O N

of the regular verb, *leeren*, to learn.

Onbepaalde wijs,

Infinitive mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd, *leeren*, Present tense, to learn.

Verledene tijd, *geleerd hebben*, Perfect tense, to have learned

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

Tegenwoordige tijd, *leerende*, Present tense, learning.

Verledene tijd, *geleerd hebbende*, Perfect tense, having learnt.

Aantoonende wijs.

Indicative mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

Ik leer,

I learn.

Gij leert,

Thou learnst.

Hij leert,

He learns.

Wij leeren,

We learn.

Gij leert,

You learn.

Zij leeren,

They learn.

Onvolmaakt verledene
tijd.

Preter Imperfect tense.

Ik leerde,

I learned.

Gij leerdet,

Thou learnedst.

Hij leerde,

He learned.

Wij leerden,

We learned.

Gij leerdet,

You learned.

Zij leerden,

They learned.

Volmaakt verledene tijd.

Perfect tense.

*Ik heb geleerd ,
Gij hebt geleerd ,
Hij heeft geleerd ,
Wij hebben geleerd ,
Gij hebt geleerd ,
Zij hebben ,*

**I have learned.
Thou hast learned.
He has learned.
We have learned.
You have learned.
They have learned.**

Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.

Preter pluperfect tense.

*Ik had geleerd ,
Gij hadt geleerd ,
Hij had geleerd ,
Wij hadden geleerd ,
Gij hadt geleerd ,
Zij hadden geleerd ,*

**I had learned.
Thou hadst learned.
He had learned.
We had learned.
You had learned.
They had learned.**

Eerste toekomstige tijd.

First future tense.

*Ik zal leeren ,
Gij zult leeren ,
Hij zal leeren ,
Wij zullen leeren ,
Gij zult leeren ,
Zij zullen leeren ,*

**I shall or will learn.
Thou wilt or shalt learn.
He will or shall learn.
We shall or will learn.
You will or shall learn.
They will or shall learn.**

Tweede toekomstige tijd.

Second future tense.

*Ik zal geleerd hebben ,
Gij zult geleerd hebben ,
Hij zal geleerd hebben ,
Wij zullen geleerd hebben ,
Gij zult geleerd hebben ,
Zij zullen geleerd hebben ,*

**I shall have learned.
Thou wilt have learned.
He will have learned.
We shall have learned.
You will have learned.
They will have learned.**

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

Conditional tense.

*Ik zou leeren ,
Gij zoudt leeren ,
Hij zou leeren ,*

**I should or would learn.
Thou wouldst or shouldst learn.
He would or should learn.**

Wij zouden leeren,
Gij zoudt leeren,
Zij zouden leeren,

We should or would learn.
You would or should learn.
They would or should learn.

De tweede voorwaarde-
lijke tijd.

Second conditional tense.

Ik zou geleerd hebben,
Gij zoudt geleerd hebben,
Hij zou geleerd hebben,
Wij zouden geleerd hebben,
Gij zoudt geleerd hebben,
Zij zouden geleerd hebben,

I should have learned.
Thou shouldst have learned.
He should have learned.
We should have learned.
You should have learned.
They should have learned.

De gebiedende wijs.

The imperative mood.

Leer,
Laat hem leeren, of, dat
hij leere,
Laat ons leeren,
Leert,
Laat hen leeren,

Learn.
Let him learn.
Let us learn.
Learn.
Let them learn.

De aanvoegende wijs.

The subjunctive mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd.

The present tense.

Dat ik leere,
Dat gij leeret,
Dat hij leere,
Dat wij leeren,
Dat gij leeret,
Dat zij leeren,

That I learn.
That thou learn.
That he learn.
That we learn.
That you learn.
That they learn.

Onvolmaakt verledene tijd.

Preter imperfect tense.

Dat ik leerde,
Dat gij leerdet,
Dat hij leerde,
Dat wij leerden,
Dat gij leerdet,
Dat zij leerden,

That I learned.
That thou learned.
That he learned.
That we learned.
That you learned.
That they learned.

Volmaakt verledene tijd. *Preter perfect tense.*

<i>Dat ik geleerd hebbe,</i>	That I have learned.
<i>Dat gij geleerd hebbet,</i>	That thou have learned.
<i>Dat hij geleerd hebbe,</i>	That he have learned.
<i>Dat wij geleerd hebben,</i>	That we have learned.
<i>Dat gij geleerd hebbet,</i>	That you have learned.
<i>Dat zij geleerd hebben,</i>	That they have learned.

Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd. *Preter pluperfect tense.*

<i>Dat ik geleerd hadde,</i>	That I had learned.
<i>Dat gij geleerd haddet,</i>	That thou had learned.
<i>Dat hij geleerd hadde,</i>	That he had learned.
<i>Dat wij geleerd hadden,</i>	That we had learned.
<i>Dat gij geleerd haddet,</i>	That you had learned.
<i>Dat zij geleerd hadden,</i>	That they had learned.

Of persons, numbers, tenses and moods.

Van de personen, getallen, tijden en wijzen.

Verbs have two numbers, the singular and the plural. In each number there are three persons, as:

First person.	<i>Ik leer,</i>	<i>wij leeren.</i>
Second person.	<i>Gij leert,</i>	<i>gij leert.</i>
Third person.	<i>Hij leert,</i>	<i>zij leeren.</i>

Thus the verb varies its endings to express, or agree with; different persons of the same number, as: *ik leer, hij leert*: and also to express different numbers of the same person; as: *ik leer, wij leeren*. The second person singular, however, is the same as the second person plural, and the first person plural is the same as the third; but this causes no ambiguity, the verb being always attended, either with the noun expressing the subject acting or acted upon, or with the pronoun representing it.

Moods.

Mood or Mode is a particular form of the verb, showing the manner, in which the action is represented.

There are in the Dutch language four moods, absolutely distinct from each other, by several inflexions, or by some other difference. They are:

<i>De onbepaalde wijs,</i>	the infinitive mode.
<i>De aantoonende wijs,</i>	the indicative.
<i>De gebiedende wijs,</i>	the imperative.
<i>De aanvoegende wijs,</i>	the subjunctive.

The infinitive mood is so called, because it only expresses the action or signification of the verb, in an indefinite and indeterminate manner, that is, without affirmation, and without any relation as to persons and numbers, as: *spreken*, to speak; *loopen*, to run.

The indicative mood simply indicates or declares a thing, as: *ik bemin*, I love; *ik schrijf*, I write.

The imperative mood is used for commanding, exhorting, entreating or permitting, as: *leer uwe les*, learn your lesson; *spreek hollandsch*, speak dutch.

This mood has no first person in the singular, because a man does not command himself; and if it have the first person plural, it is because we speak as much to others as to ourselves.

The subjunctive mood represents a thing under a condition, motive, wish, supposition, etc. and is preceded by a conjunction, expressed or understood, and attended by another verb, as: *ik zal komen, alhoewel hij boos zij*, I will come, though he be angry.

Tenses.

Tense, being the distinction of time, might seem to admit only of the present, past and future; but to mark it more accurately, it is made to consist of eight variations, viz:

De tegenwoordige tijd, the present tense.

<i>De onvolmaakt verledene tijd,</i>	the preter imperfect tense.
<i>De volmaakte tijd,</i>	the perfect tense.
<i>De meer dan volmaakte tijd.</i>	the pluperfect tense.
<i>De toekomende tijd,</i>	the future tense.
<i>De tweede toekomende tijd,</i>	the second future tense.
<i>De voorwaardelijke tijd,</i>	the conditional tense.
<i>De tweede voorwaardelijke tijd.</i>	the second conditional tense.

Tenses are also divided in *simple* and *compound*.

In the simple tenses the verb is expressed in one word, as:

<i>Ik leer,</i>	I learn.
<i>Ik leerde,</i>	I learned.

The compound tenses are conjugated with some one of the auxiliary verbs, as:

<i>Ik heb geleerd,</i>	I have learned.
<i>Hij had gespeeld,</i>	He had played.

The *present tense* represents an action or event, as passing at the time, in which it is mentioned, as:

<i>Hij speelt op de fluit,</i>	He plays upon the flute.
<i>Zij schrijft eenen brief,</i>	She writes a letter.

The *preter imperfect tense* expresses an action, past at the time in which I speak, but still present at the time of which I speak, as:

<i>Mijn broeder leerde zijne les, toen gij binnen kwaamt,</i>	My brother was learning his lesson, when you came in.
---	---

In this sentence the act of learning, though past with respect to my narration, was present at the moment your arrival took place.

The *perfect tense* expresses an action, not only past at the time, in which we speak, but also at that, of which we speak, as:

<i>Wij hadden gegeten, toen hij aankwam,</i>	We had dined, when he arrived.
--	--------------------------------

The *future tense* represents the action as yet to come, either with or without respect to the precise time, as :

De zon zal morgen op- The sun will rise to-morrow.
komen,

Wij zullen hen zien, We shall see them.

The *second future tense* intimates that the action will be fully accomplished at or before the time of an other future action or event, as :

Ik zal, ten een uur, ge- I shall have dined at one
eten hebben, a clock.

Hij zal gespeeld hebben, He will have played when
als zij aankomt, she arrives.

The *conditional tense.* The name of this time is a true definition of it, for it is always used to express some condition or supposition. It intimates that the action is future, under a condition, as :

Ik zou betalen, indien ik I should pay, if I had mo-
geld hadde, ney.

The *second conditional tense* expresses an action, which has been future under a condition, as :

Wij zouden betaald heb- We should have paid, if
ben, indien wij geld ge- we had had money,
had hadden,

Of the formation of tenses.

The participle is a certain form of the verb, and derives its name from its participating, not only of the properties of a verb, but also of those of an adjective.

There are two participles, the participle active, *te-geenwoordig deelwoord*, and the participle passive, *verleden deelwoord*.

The participle active terminates in *de*, as: *spelen*, to play; *spelende*, playing; *leeren*, to learn; *leerende*, learning, etc.

The participle passive is generally formed by prefixing the preposition *ge*, to the verb, whose termination changes at the same time, as: *spelen*, to play; *gespeeld*, played; *leven*, to live; *geleefd*, lived.

The verbs, which have the participle passive in *d*, are those, ending in: *ben*, *den*, *gen*, *jen*, *len*, *men*, *nen*, *ren*, *wen*, as:

Infinitive.

Participle passive.

Krabben, to scratch.
Bespieden, to spy.
Zagen, to saw.
Zaaijen, to sow.
Halen, to fetch.
Zoomen, to seam.
Kennen, to know.
Paren, to couple.
Schreeuwen, to cry.

Gekrabd, scratched.
Bespied, spied.
Gezaagd, sawn.
Gezaaid, sown.
Gehaald, fetched.
Gezoomd, seamed.
Gekend, known.
Gepaard, coupled.
Geschreeuwd, cried.

The participle passive ends in *t*, when the last syllable of the verb begins by *f*, *k*, *p*, *s*, *t*, as:

Blaffen, to bark.
Pakken, to pack up.
Foppen, to deceive.
Pasfen, to try on.
Zetten, to place.

Geblaft, barked.
Gepakt, packed.
Gesoft, deceived.
Gepast, tried on.
Gezet, placed.

The *v*, of the verbs ending in *ven*, changes always in *f*, as:

Leven, to live.
Beven, to tremble.

Geleefd, lived.
Gebcefd, trembled.

Some participles passive terminate in *en*, as:

Lagchen, to laugh.
Bannen, to banish.

Gelagchen, laughed.
Gebannen, banished.

The syllable *ge* must not be prefixed to participles of verbs, which begin with the inseparable prepositions *be*, *ge*, *her*, *ont*, *ver*, etc. as:

Begeren, to desire.
Gelooven, to believe.
Herleven, to revive.
Ontvangen, to receive.
Vervloeken, to curse.

Begeerd, desired.
Geloofd, believed.
Herleefd, revived.
Ontvangen, received.
Vervloekt, cursed.

The first person of the present tense is formed by retrenching *en*, the general termination of all the dutch verbs, as :

<i>Begeeren</i> , to desire.	<i>Ik begeer</i> , I desire.
<i>Beheeren</i> , to govern.	<i>Ik beheer</i> , I govern.

When the penultima, or last syllable but one, has only one vowel, this must be doubled in the first person of the present tense, as :

<i>Dwalen</i> , to err.	<i>Ik dwaal</i> , I err.
<i>Overwegen</i> , to consider.	<i>Ik overweeg</i> , I consider.
<i>Duren</i> , to endure.	<i>Ik duur</i> , I endure.
<i>Schromen</i> , to fear.	<i>Ik schroom</i> , I fear.

The second and third person, are formed of the first, by adding *t*.

<i>Ik leef</i> , I live.	<i>Gij leeft</i> , thou livest.
	<i>Hij leeft</i> , he lives.
<i>Ik dwaal</i> , I err,	<i>Gij dwaalt</i> , thou errst.
	<i>Hij dwaalt</i> , he errs.

The first and third person of the plural, are the same as the infinitive mood, as :

<i>Dwalen</i> , to err.	<i>Wij dwalen</i> , we err.
	<i>Zij dwalen</i> , they err.
<i>Beloonen</i> , to reward.	<i>Wij beloonen</i> , we reward.
	<i>Zij beloonen</i> , they reward.

The *y* of the infinitive mood changes, in the singular of the present tense in *f*; the *z* in *s*, as :

<i>Geven</i> , to give.	<i>Ik geef</i> , I give.
<i>Beyen</i> , to tremble.	<i>Ik beef</i> , I tremble.
<i>Verhuizen</i> , to dislodge.	<i>Ik verhuis</i> , I dislodge.

The singular of the present tense, of verbs ending in *schen*, has *sch*.

<i>Wenschen</i> , to wish.	<i>Ik wensch</i> , I wish.
<i>Hijfschen</i> , to hoist up.	<i>Ik hijfsch</i> , I hoist up.

The singular of verbs ending in *jen*, terminates in *i*.

<i>Draai-jen</i> , to turn.	<i>Ik draai</i> , I turn.
<i>Groei-jen</i> , to grow.	<i>Ik groei</i> , I grow.
<i>Stoci-jen</i> , to dally.	<i>Ik stoci</i> , I dally.

The *preter imperfect tense* is formed of the participle passive by retrenching *ge*, and adding *e*.

<i>Gebeefd</i> , trembled.	<i>Ik beefde</i> , I trembled.
<i>Gedanst</i> , danced.	<i>Ik danste</i> , I danced.
<i>Geschopt</i> , kicked.	<i>Ik schopte</i> , I kicked.

When the last syllable of the infinitive mood begins with *d* or *t*, that letter is doubled in the imperfect tense, as:

<i>Branden</i> , to burn.	<i>Het brandde</i> , it burned.
<i>Verpanden</i> , to pawn.	<i>Ik verpandde</i> , I pawned.
<i>Planten</i> , to plant.	<i>Ik plantte</i> , I planted.

The double *d* or *t* of the infinitive are preserved in the imperfect tense.

<i>Bedotten</i> , to deceive.	<i>Ik bedotte</i> , I deceived.
-------------------------------	---------------------------------

The *imperative mood*, second person, is formed of the first person of the present tense, as:

<i>Ik sterf</i> , I die.	<i>Sterf</i> , die.
<i>Ik bid</i> , I pray.	<i>Bid</i> , pray.

The second person of the plural is formed of that of the singular, by adding *t*. Speaking to several men, we say: *sterft*, die; *bidt*, pray.

The *present tense*, of the subjunctive mood, is formed of the infinitive mood, by retrenching *n*, as:

<i>Wenschen</i> , to wish.	<i>dat ik wensche</i> , that I wish.
<i>Gelooven</i> , to believe.	<i>dat ik geloove</i> , that I believe.
<i>Huren</i> , to hire.	<i>dat ik hure</i> , that I hire.
<i>Plagen</i> , to torment,	<i>dat ik plage</i> , that I torment.

The *imperfect tense* of the subjunctive mood is the same as that of the indicative mood, preceded by *dat*.

<i>Ik speelde</i> , I played.	<i>dat ik speelde</i> , that I played.
<i>Ik plantte</i> , I planted.	<i>dat ik plantte</i> , that I planted.

All the other tenses are compound, and formed by the auxiliary verbs.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the regular verbs.

N^o. 62.

I play and learn. Thou learnst and plays. He learns his lessons. We learn twice a day. You learn and play enough. They learn always. I desire, I desired and I shall always desire the very same thing. He wept for joy, and she laughed.. Did they weep also? No, Sir. Have they played together? I don't know. I judge, I play, I learn, I laugh and I weep. He judged, played, learned, laughed and wept. They pillaged, bridled, neglected and changed. I have danced, played and laughed, but you have wept. And what has my brother done? Nothing.

To play,
Twice a day,
Enough,
To desire,
The very same thing,
To laugh,
To weep,
To judge,
To pillage,
To bridle,
To neglect,
To change,
To dance,
Done,

spelen.
tweemaal daags,
genoeg.
begeeren.
hetzelfde ding.
lagchen.
weenen.
oordeelen.
plunderen.
toomen.
verzuimen.
veranderen.
dansen.
gedaan.

N^o. 63.

I had exercised my talents. Thou hadst borrowed money. He had emptied the bottle. We had pillaged

the town. You had neglected your affairs. They had engaged them to go thither. I have judged favourably, but he has despised you. Thou hast illuminated, but he has done nothing. We have denied the fact. You have imitated their manners. They have executed your commands. Have I lighted a fire? I always finish my work before you. Your friend does not succeed in his undertaking. He hates your brother, but he loves your sister. The mountains resounded with their cries, they alarmed all the countrymen.

To exercise,
Talents,
To borrow,
To empty,
To engage,
To go thither,
Favourably,
To despise,
To illuminate,
To deny,
Fact,
To imitate,
Manners,
To execute,
To light,
To succeed,
To hate,
To refund,
Cry,
To alarm,

oefenen.
talenten. n.
leenen.
ledigen.
overhalen.
om daar naar toe te gaan.
gunstiglijk.
verachten.
verlichten.
loochenen.
daad. f.
navolgen.
zeden. f.
uitvoeren.
aansteken.
slagen.
haten.
weergalmen.
schreeuw.
ontrusten.

N^o. 64.

Your children will bless you for your benefits. I wish, I wished, and I shall always wish that he may succeed. I banish, I banished, and I shall always banish these thoughts from my mind. This plant blossoms, blossomed and will blossom every year. He acts and he will act with much severity, because you have neglected your duty. I have filled my cellar with good wine, for the next feast. (We have finished

our work, we are going to take a walk. He has not yet built his house, he has had no money. I obey, I obeyed, and I will always obey my parents, my masters, and all my superiors. We have weakened his courage, and therefore he shall not succeed.

To bless,	<i>zegenen.</i>
Benefit,	<i>weldaad. f.</i>
To wish,	<i>wenschen.</i>
To banish,	<i>bannen.</i>
Thought,	<i>gedachte. f.</i>
Mind.	<i>hart. n.</i>
To blossom,	<i>bloetjen.</i>
To act.	<i>handelen.</i>
Severity,	<i>strengheid. f.</i>
Duty,	<i>pligt. m.</i>
To fill,	<i>vullen.</i>
Cellar,	<i>kelder. m.</i>
Feast,	<i>feest. n.</i>
We are going to take a walk,	<i>wij zullen gaan wandelen.</i>
To build,	<i>bouwen.</i>
To obey,	<i>gehoorzamen.</i>
Superior,	<i>meerdere.</i>
To weaken,	<i>verzwakken.</i>

N^o. 30.

We have entertained great hope, but you have been frustrated. They have adorned their garden, and dazzled their friends. We oblige, we obliged, and we shall oblige these obstinate children to behave well. He warns, he warned, and he will warn those, who wander from the path of virtue. I shall have answered my friend, the day after to morrow, and he will have finished his letters. I should learn my lessons, if I had time enough. He should have thanked you for your good advice, if he had had the pleasure of seeing you. We should employ our time better, if we feared your displeasure. They should pay all the debts, if they had money. We expect our friend to day, therefore we stay at home. Have you not expected them yesterday?

To entertain,

voeden. Digitized by Google

To frustrate,	<i>te leur stellen,</i>
To adorn,	<i>versieren.</i>
To dazzle,	<i>verblinden.</i>
To oblige,	<i>verpligten.</i>
Obstinate,	<i>koppig.</i>
To behave well,	<i>om zich wel te gedragen.</i>
To warn,	<i>waarschuwen.</i>
To wander from,	<i>afdwalen van.</i>
Path,	<i>pad. n.</i>
To answer,	<i>antwoorden.</i>
To thank,	<i>bedanken.</i>
Advice,	<i>raad. m.</i>
To employ,	<i>besteden.</i>
To fear,	<i>vreezen.</i>
Displeasure,	<i>misnoegen.</i>
To expect,	<i>verwachten.</i>
To remain,	<i>blijven.</i>

N°. 66.

We would have defended you, if we had known that you were in danger. He would have spilled the wine, if I had not warned him. I would have answered all the letters, if I had had time. They would have waited for you, if they had known that you would come. Hear, what I say, and be content. Play upon the flute, to please the company. Let us read the letter, and answer it next week. Let them employ their time better. Let us punish these naughty children. He will pay your debts, though you spend your money in trifles. He does not pity you, though you burst into tears. He will not pay you, unless you come in due time. As soon as he perceived me, he ran away. Discharge the duties of your office.

To defend,	<i>verdedigen.</i>
Known,	<i>geweten.</i>
Danger,	<i>gevaar.</i>
To spill,	<i>storten.</i>
To wait for one,	<i>iemand wachten.</i>
To hear.	<i>hooren.</i>
To play upon.	<i>spelen op.</i>
To please.	<i>behagen.</i>
Company,	<i>gezelschap. n.</i>

To read.
 To punish,
 Naughty,
 To pay,
 Though,
 To spend in trifles,
 To pity,
 To burst,
 Unless,
 In due time,
 To perceive,
 He ran away,
 To discharge,
 Office.

lezen.
straffen.
ondeugend.
besalen.
alhoewel.
aan kleinigheden besteden.
beklagen.
uitbersten.
ten zij.
ter geschikter tijd.
bemerken.
hij liep weg.
vervullen.
ambt.

N°. 67.

If my father were rich, he would rebuild his country-house. I am certain (that) they would reward you, if you deserved it. Write to me by the first post, that I may receive your letter before my departure from the Hague. Though he hear what you say, yet he shall not obey. He is never pleased, though we obey him. He will pay them, provided they wait a little longer. We have faithfully executed your orders; but you have not thanked us. He would have been punished, if he had not defended his right. We had obliged him to wait for you, though he had no time. Has your sister succeeded in her undertaking? Yes, Sir. Have they paid you a great deal of money? You ask too much Sir. Let us thank God for the good news we received yesterday.

To rebuild,
 Country-house,
 Certain,
 To reward,
 To deserve,
 To write,
 To receive,
 Departure,
 Pleased,
 Provided,

herbouwen.
landhuis. n.
zeker.
beloonen.
verdienen.
schrijven.
ontvangen.
vertrek. n.
tevreden.
mitsdien.

A little longer,
Faithfully,
To execute,
To defend.
To ask.
A great deal,
Received,

wat langer.
getrouwelijk.
uitvoeren.
verdedigen.
vragen.
veel.
ontvingen.

N°. 68.

I do not oblige you to go thither. Thou dost not oblige her to walk. He does not oblige us to play. We do not oblige them to depart. You do not oblige my cousin to execute that order. They do not oblige me to finish my work. I did not tell a story. Thou didst not believe us. He deserved not to be rewarded. We did not indulge her. You did not pity my friends. They did not contemplate the object. Have I not admired the beauty of this garden? Has he not protected the innocent girl? Have we not proposed that salutary advice? They have not saluted their friends. I had not announced good news. He had not humbled the pride of this young man. We had not decided the question. They had not declared war against England.

To oblige,
To depart,
To execute,
Order,
To tell a story,
To believe,
To indulge,
To pity,
To contemplate,
Object,
To admire,
To protect,
Innocent,
To propose,
Salutary advice,
To salute,
To announce,

verpligten.
vertrekken.
uitvoeren.
bevel. n.
eene geschiedenis vertellen.
gelooven.
dulden.
beklagen.
befchouwen.
voorwerp.
bewonderen.
befchermen.
onfchuldig.
voorstellen.
heilzame raad. w.
groeten.
aankondigen.

To humble, Pride.
 To decide a question,
 To declare,

vernederen. Hoogmoed. m.
eene zaak beslissen.
verklaren.

N^o. 69.

I shall not appease his anger. He will not warn your brother, because he hates him mortally. We shall not convert the impious. They will languish a long while. I would not feed the chicken. We would not weaken your party. They would not embellish their garden. I should not have paid my debts, if they had not obliged me. We should not have taken a walk, if it had not been fine weather. We should not have pitied you, if we had not felt the horror of your situation. Do I not enrich my family? Does he not offer his services to your father? Do we not discover your design? Do you not conceive great hopes? Do they not punish the guilty? Do they please all the family? I don't know. Are they all displeas'd?

To appease,
 To warn,
 Mortally,
 To convert,
 Impious,
 To languish,
 To feed,
 To weaken,
 To embellish,
 To take a walk,
 To feel. Horror.
 Situation,
 To enrich,
 To offer,
 To discover.
 Design,
 To conceive hopes,
 The guilty,
 To please,
 Displeas'd,

stillen.
waarschuwen.
doodelijk.
bekeeren.
de sechten.
kwijnen.
voeden.
verzwakken.
versieren.
wandelen.
voelen. Het afschuwelijke.
toestand. m.
verrijken.
aanbieden.
ontdekken.
voornemen. n.
hoop voeden.
de schuldige. m.
behagen.
ontevreden.

N°. 70.

I laugh at you, but she laughs at your sister and hers. He does not work, he plays. Whom do you ask that? Why do you weep, my children, who has afflicted you? Do they learn music? Yes, Sir, since long. Whom did they look for? Did they not look for your brother in law? Have they not quarrel'd together? Not at all. Had they not learned the lessons, which the master had given? Shall you not employ your time better, my friend? Let them be pleased in cultivating arts and sciences. They are very angry, they complain of you and your cousins. Do they not fear to displease their master? Did they not feign to be sick? The general has compelled the soldiers to fight.

To laugh at,	<i>lagchen om.</i>
To work.	<i>werken.</i>
To ask.	<i>vragen aan.</i>
To weep,	<i>weenen.</i>
To afflict,	<i>bedroeven.</i>
Music,	<i>muzijk.</i>
To look for,	<i>zoeken.</i>
To quarrel,	<i>twisten.</i>
Given,	<i>gegeven.</i>
To be pleased,	<i>vermaak scheppen.</i>
To cultivate,	<i>aankweeken.</i>
Arts and sciences,	<i>kunsten en wetenschappen.</i>
To complain,	<i>klagen.</i>
To fear,	<i>vreezen.</i>
To displease,	<i>misvallen.</i>
To feign,	<i>veinzen.</i>
To compell,	<i>noodzaken.</i>
To fight,	<i>vechten.</i>

N°. 71.

Have I not joined my efforts to yours? Did we not fear the effects of his levity? Fear God during all thy life, and do not neglect your duties. Had

they not recognized your handwriting? Did they not know the world at that time? Have they not encreased every day their possessions? She will not acknowledge her errors; she is obstinate. Has he not translated the works of Homer, Sophocles and Euripides? Has the king of the Netherlands not constructed a palace? Do not translate your exercises literally? They should have answered impudently, if they had heard that great noise. Did we not always expect happiness from ourselves?

To join to,	<i>voegen bij.</i>
Effort,	<i>poging. f.</i>
Effect,	<i>uitwerksel. n.</i>
Levity,	<i>ligtzinnigheid. f.</i>
To recognize,	<i>herkennen.</i>
Handwriting,	<i>handschrift. n.</i>
To encrease,	<i>vermeerderen.</i>
Possession,	<i>bezitting. f.</i>
To acknowledge,	<i>erkennen.</i>
Error,	<i>dwaling. f.</i>
To translate,	<i>vertalen.</i>
To construct,	<i>bouwen.</i>
Litterally,	<i>letterlijk.</i>
Impudently,	<i>onbeschaamd. \</i>
Noise,	<i>geraas.</i>
To hear,	<i>hooren.</i>

N°. 72.

Have we not suspended our judgment, when they told us that the enemies spread terror every where? Did they not spill human blood in the defence of their country? Had they not waited for an answer several months? Why would he not hear the justifications of all these persons? Have we not ordered our scholars several times, to study more attentively? Have they not yet conjugated the regular verbs of the dutch language? Why do you not answer to all my questions? Because you ask too much Sir. Had they already filled all the bottles? Not yet. Have I not several times blamed your conduct and

that of the merchant's son? Why have you threatened him and her?

To suspend,	<i>opfchorten.</i>
Judgment,	<i>oordeel.</i>
To spread terror.	<i>schrik verspreiden.</i>
To spill,	<i>storten.</i>
Human blood,	<i>menschenbloed. n.</i>
Defence,	<i>verdediging.</i>
To wait for,	<i>wachten naar.</i>
Justification,	<i>regtvaardiging. f.</i>
Ordered,	<i>bevolen.</i>
Several times,	<i>verscheidene malen.</i>
Attentively,	<i>aandachtiglijk.</i>
To conjugate.	<i>vervoegen.</i>
Regular,	<i>regelmatig.</i>
To fill,	<i>vullen.</i>
Bottle,	<i>flesch. f.</i>
To blame,	<i>berispen.</i>
To threaten,	<i>bedreigen.</i>

N^o. 73.

Did these children not despise the salutary exhortations of their master? Have they not always punished severely laziness and inattention? We would serve you with all our heart, if we could. The more we are above others, the more it becomes us to be modest and humble. I maintain, and I shall always maintain, that men cannot be happy without virtue. You will become a great man, if you continue to study with the same assiduity. Has the emperor not invested that ambassador with all his authority? Do you know what has happened her? Is it not much better to be unfortunate than criminal? Severity and rigor may excite fear, but not love. You have seen the danger, why have you not endeavoured to avoid it?

To despise,	<i>verachten.</i>
Exhortation,	<i>vermaning. f.</i>
Laziness,	<i>luiheid, f.</i>
To serve,	<i>dienen.</i>
With all our heart,	<i>van harte gaarne.</i>

If we could,
 The more,
 To become,
 Modest,
 To maintain,
 If you continue,
 Assiduity,
 To invest,
 Authority,
 To happen,
 Criminal,
 Severity. Rigor,
 To excite,
 To endeavour,
 To avoid,

indien wij kunnen.
hoe meer.
passen, voegen.
zedig.
beweren.
indien gij voortgaat.
werkzaamheid. f.
bekleeden.
gezag. n.
gebeuren.
schuldig.
strengheid, strafheid.
verwekken.
trachten.
vermijden.

N^o. 74.

Our allies have pursued the enemy briskly, and have ended the war that very day. If I would have believed him, he would have persuaded me to go to Italy with him. These flowers would grow much better, if it rained a little. Tell the truth with modesty; they who do not love it, will always respect and fear it. I hope she will not tell what happened me yesterday. Your son joins to the love of study the desire of surpassing his companions. Whatever merit a master has, he cannot succeed in teaching young people, if he do not join practice to theory. The same men, who seem not to fear death, when they are in good health, often dread it, when they are sick. Does she not join to the qualities of the body, those of the mind?

Ally,
 To pursue briskly,
 To end,
 That very day,
 To persuade,
 Grow,
 If it rained,
 To tell the truth,
 To respect,
 To happen,

bondgenoot. m.
hevig vervolgen.
eindigen.
dienzelfden dag.
overhalen.
groeijen.
indien het regende.
de waarheid zeggen.
eerbiedigen.
gebeuren.

To join to,	<i>voegen bij.</i>
Love of study,	<i>liefde tot studie.</i>
Desire,	<i>begeerte. f.</i>
To surpass,	<i>voorbij streven.</i>
Companion,	<i>makker.</i>
Whatever merit a master has,	<i>welke verdiensten een onderwij- zer ook hebbe.</i>
To teach,	<i>onderwijzen.</i>
Practice,	<i>praktijk. f.</i>
Theory,	<i>theorie. f.</i>
To seem,	<i>schijnen.</i>
To fear, to dread,	<i>vreezen.</i>
In good health,	<i>gezond.</i>
Quality,	<i>hoedanigheid. f.</i>
Mind,	<i>geest. m.</i>

N^o. 75.

Virtue procures and preserves friendship, but vice produces hatred and quarrels. These children, who learn diligently their lessons, are the delights of their master. Did not the idea of his misfortunes pursue him every where? Do not judge of others by appearance. Have you not seduced us by your fine promises? Do we not learn more easily the things which we understand, than those which we understand not? Why do they not follow the advice of your grandfather? He has employed the means you have pointed out, but he has not succeeded. They had disguised themselves so cleverly, that they were unknown to every one. Had they not gathered fruits, which were not ripe? Practise virtue, if you wish to be happy.

To procure,	<i>verschaffen.</i>
To preserve,	<i>bewaren.</i>
Vice,	<i>ondeugd. f.</i>
Produce,	<i>brengt voort.</i>
Diligently,	<i>vlijtiglijk.</i>
Delight,	<i>genoegen. n.</i>
Idea,	<i>denkbeeld. n.</i>
To pursue,	<i>vervolgen.</i>
To judge,	<i>oordeelen.</i>
By appearance,	<i>naar den schijn.</i>
To seduce,	<i>verleiden.</i>

Promise,	<i>belofte.</i>
More easily,	<i>gemakkelijker.</i>
To understand,	<i>verstaan, begrijpen.</i>
Means,	<i>middel. n.</i>
You have pointed out,	<i>dat gij aangewezen hebt.</i>
They had disguised themselves.	<i>zij hadden zich vermomd.</i>
Cleverly,	<i>behendiglijk.</i>
Unknown,	<i>onbekend.</i>
To gather,	<i>plukken.</i>
Ripe,	<i>rijp.</i>
Practice,	<i>beoefen.</i>

N^o. 76.

Has Alexander the great not waged war against Darius, the last king of Persia? Has Master W. not translated the works of Virgil and Horace? The newspapers mention astonishing news from America. It was about the middle of the fifteenth century, that they made use of coffee at Aden, a famous port in the gulph of Arabia. There will be always war among men, because they are ambitious and governed by interest. Have we not felt how hard it is to bear an injury? They have drawn a great many diamonds from the mines of Golconda and Visapour, the most renowned which are in the East-Indies. Had these birds not built their nests with much art and skill? Has Plutarch not called love a double intoxication?

To wage war,	<i>oorlog voeren.</i>
Last,	<i>laatste.</i>
Virgil, Horace,	<i>Virgilius, Horatius.</i>
Newspaper,	<i>nieuwspapier. n.</i>
To mention,	<i>melden.</i>
Astonishing,	<i>verbazend.</i>
About the middle,	<i>omtrent het midden.</i>
Century,	<i>eeuw. f.</i>
To make use,	<i>gebruik maken.</i>
Famous port,	<i>beroemde haven.</i>
Ambitious,	<i>heerschzuchtig.</i>
To govern,	<i>regeren.</i>
Interest,	<i>eigenbelang.</i>
To bear,	<i>verdragen.</i>

Injury,	<i>belediging. f.</i>
To draw,	<i>halen.</i>
Renowned,	<i>beroemd.</i>
East-Indies,	<i>Oost Indië.</i>
Bird,	<i>Vogel. m.</i>
To build,	<i>bouwen.</i>
Art and skill,	<i>kunst en behendigheid.</i>
To call,	<i>noemen.</i>
Intoxication,	<i>dronkenschap. f.</i>

Of pasfive verbs.

Van de lijdende werkwoorden.

The pasfive verbs are formed by adding the pasfive participle to the auxiliary *worden*, to be, through all its changes of number, person, mood and tense, in the following manner.

C O N J U G A T I O N,

of the pasfive verb, *beloond worden*, to be rewarded.

Onbepaalde wijs.

Infinitive mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd, beloond worden. Present tense, to be rewarded.

Volmaakte tijd, beloond geworden zijnde. Perfect tense, to have been rewarded.

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

Tegenwoordige tijd, beloond wordende. Present tense, being rewarded.

Verledene tijd, beloond geworden. Perfect tense, been rewarded.

Aantoonende wijs.

Indicative mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

*Ik word beloond,
Gij wordt beloond,
Hij wordt beloond,
Wij worden beloond,
Gij wordt beloond,
Zij worden beloond,*

I am rewarded.
Thou art rewarded.
He is rewarded.
We are rewarded.
You are rewarded.
They are rewarded.

De onvolmaakt verle-
dene tijd.

Imperfect tense.

*Ik werd beloond,
Gij werdt beloond,
Hij werd beloond,
Wij werden beloond,
Gij werdt beloond,
Zij werden beloond.*

I was rewarded.
Thou wast rewarded.
He was rewarded.
We were rewarded.
You were rewarded.
They were rewarded.

De volmaakt verl. tijd.

Perfect tense.

*Ik ben
Gij zijt
Hij is
Wij zijn
Gij zijt
Zij zijn* } *beloond gewor-
den,*

I have
Thou hast
He has
We have
You have
They have

} *been rewar-
ded.*

De meer dan volmaakt
verledene tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

*Ik was
Gij waart
Hij was
Wij waren
Gij waart
Zij waren* } *beloond gewor-
den.*

I had
Thou hadst
He had
We had
You had
They had.

} *been rewar-
ded.*

Eerste toekomstige tijd.

First future tense.

*Ik zal
Gij zult
Hij zal
Wij zullen
Gij zult
Zij zullen* } *beloond wor-
den.*

I shall or will
Thou wilt or shalt
He will or shall
We shall or will
You will or shall
They will or shall

} *be re-
war-
ded.*

De tweede toekom. tijd.

The second future tense.

Ik zal
Gij zult
Hij zal
Wij zullen
Gij zult
Zij zullen

} *beloond geworden zijn,*

I shall
Thou wilt
He will
We shall
You will
They will

} *have been rewarded.*

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

The conditional tense.

Ik zou
Gij zoude

} *beloond worden.*

Hij zou
Wij zouden
Gij zoude
Zij zouden

I should or would
Thou wouldst or shouldst
He would or should
We should or would
You would or should
they would or should

} *be rewarded.*

De tweede voorwaardelijke tijd.

The second conditional tense.

Ik zou
Gij zoude
Hij zou
Wij zouden
Gij zoude
Zij zouden

} *beloond geworden zijn.*

I should
Thou wouldst
He would
We should
You would
They would

} *have been rewarded.*

Gebiedende wijs.

Imperative mood.

*Word beloond,
Laat hem beloond worden,
Laat ons beloond worden,
Wordt beloond,
Laat hen beloond worden,*

Be rewarded.
Let him be rewarded.
Let us be rewarded.
Be rewarded.
Let them be rewarded.

De aanvoegende wijs.

Subjunctive mood.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

*Dat ik beloond worde,
Dat gij beloond wordet,
Dat hij beloond worde,
Dat wij beloond worden,
Dat gij beloond wordet,
Dat zij beloond worden,*

That I be rewarded.
That thou be rewarded.
That he be rewarded.
That we be rewarded.
That you be rewarded.
That they be rewarded.

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

Imperfect tense.

Dat ik beloond wierde,
Dat gij beloond wierdet,
Dat hij beloond wierde,
Dat wij beloond wierden,
Dat gij beloond wierdet,
Dat zij beloond wierden,

That I were rewarded.
 That thou were rewarded.
 That he were rewarded.
 That we were rewarded.
 That you were rewarded.
 That they were rewarded.

De volm. verl. tijd.

Perfect tense.

Dat ik beloond geworden zij,
Dat gij beloond geword. zijt,
Dat hij beloond geworden zij,
Dat wij beloond geword. zijn,
Dat gij beloond geword. zijt,
Dat zij beloond geworden zijn

That I have
 That thou have
 That he have
 That we have
 That you have
 That they have
 } been re-
 warded.

Meer dan volmaakt ver-
 ledene tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

Dat ik beloond geworden
ware,
Dat gij beloond geworden
waret,
Dat hij beloond geworden
ware,
Dat wij beloond geworden
waren,
Dat gij beloond geworden
waret.
Dat zij beloond geworden
waren,

That I had
 That thou had
 That he had
 That we had
 That you had
 That they had
 } been re-
 warded.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the pasfive verbs.

N°. 77.

Let us conjugate verbs, my friends, to amuse

ourselves. I love, and I am loved. Thou lovest, and thou art loved. He loves, and he is loved. We love, and we are loved. You love, and you are loved. They love, and they are loved. These children, who neglect their duties, are hated and despised; but your comrades, who have finished their work, are rewarded and praised. The king of England is beloved by all his subjects, and the Prins Regent too. All the rebels were punished severely by the court of justice. Those criminals were transported to Botany-bay. I have been pitied and lamented, but she has been laughed at. They have all been punished, because they are neglectful and disobedient.

To conjugate,
To amuse ourselves,
Duty,
To hate,
Despised,
Comrade,
Praised,
Beloved,
Subject,
Prins Regent,
Rebels,
Court of Justice,
Criminal,
Transported,
To cherish,
To lament,
To be laughed at,

vervoegen.
om ons te vermaken.
pligt m.
haten.
veracht.
makker.
geprezen.
bemind.
onderdaan. m.
Prins Regent.
oproerigen.
gerechtshof. n.
misdadiger.
overgevoerd.
beminnen.
bejammeren.
uitgelagchen worden.

N^o. 78.

They have loaded us with benefits, and therefore we are grateful. The human body is weakened by luxury and debauches. These troops have been exposed to the fire of the enemies; a great many of them are killed. Have these young men been seduced by others? I shall be rewarded and loved, and you will be despised. The army of the allies should have been destroyed, if they had not received a great reinforcement. Your preceptor has always been respected by

his pupils. All these promises should be accomplished, if your brother came back. Those thoughts have been banished from my mind. Have the plants in your garden not been watered? Had their relations not been warned?

To load,	<i>overladen.</i>
Grateful,	<i>dankbaar,</i>
To be weakened,	<i>verzwakt worden.</i>
Debauches,	<i>zweigerijen. f.</i>
To be exposed,	<i>blootgesteld worden.</i>
To be killed,	<i>gedood worden.</i>
To be seduced,	<i>verleid worden.</i>
To be destroyed,	<i>vernield worden.</i>
Received,	<i>ontvangen.</i>
Reinforcement,	<i>versterking. f.</i>
Preceptor,	<i>leermeester. m.</i>
To be respected,	<i>geëerbiedigd worden.</i>
To be accomplished,	<i>vervuld worden.</i>
Came back,	<i>terugkwam.</i>
To be banished,	<i>verbannen worden.</i>
To be watered,	<i>begoten worden.</i>
Relations,	<i>bloedverwanten.</i>
To be warned,	<i>gewaarschuwd worden.</i>

N^o. 79.

These houses have been demolished sometime ago. The diseases of the body have been cured by the physician. Have these deserters not been imprisoned before the end of the last war? Had the bills of exchange been accepted by that rich merchant, whom you call a miser? Should the industrious not have been encouraged by the government? Has such a conduct not been despised by all the virtuous? This affair should have been neglected by your bookkeeper, if I had not warned him twice. The capital has been pillaged by the soldiers; many palaces are burnt down. Those favours have been granted by your grandfather. These islands have been discovered by Cook and others navigators.

To be demolished,	<i>afgebroken worden.</i>
Some time ago,	<i>cenigen tijd geleden.</i>

Disease,	<i>ongesteldheid. f.</i>
To be cured,	<i>genezen worden.</i>
Physician,	<i>geneesheer.</i>
Deferter,	<i>deserfeur.</i>
To be imprisoned.	<i>gevangen gezet worden.</i>
Bill of exchange,	<i>wisfelbrief. m.</i>
To be accepted,	<i>aangenomen worden.</i>
Mifer,	<i>gierigaard.</i>
Industrious,	<i>de vlijtige.</i>
To be encouraged,	<i>aangemoedigd worden.</i>
Government,	<i>regering. f.</i>
Conduct,	<i>gedrag. n.</i>
Neglected,	<i>verzuimd.</i>
Bookkeeper,	<i>boekhouder.</i>
To warn twice,	<i>tweemaal waarschuwen.</i>
Burnt down,	<i>afgebrand.</i>
To be granted,	<i>bewezen worden.</i>
To be discovered,	<i>ontdekt worden.</i>
Navigators,	<i>zeekeden.</i>

N°. 80.

Has the fire not been extinguished? Has your son not been compelled to learn mathematicks? Has this shipwreck not been painted by your cousin? Long swords and very small shields were used by the inhabitants of Great-Britain, when Cæsar landed there. Herodotus tells us that the sons of the ancients Persians were instructed, from the age of five years to twenty, in three things, to manage the horse, to make use of the bow, and to speak truth. The thief is afraid of being discovered; the rogue of being known; the sharper of being surpris'd, and the robber of being taken. The truth has been represented to him without fear and flattery. Should the supreme power not have been usurped by that tyrant.

To be extinguished,	<i>uitgedoofd worden.</i>
To be compelled,	<i>genoodzaakt worden.</i>
Shipwreck,	<i>schipbreuk. f.</i>
Mathematicks,	<i>wiskunde. f.</i>
Sword, Shield,	<i>zwaard. n. schild. n.</i>
To be used,	<i>gebruikt worden.</i>
To land,	<i>landen.</i>

Ancient Persians,	<i>oude Perzen.</i>
To be instructed,	<i>onderwezen worden.</i>
From the age of five to twenty,	<i>van vijf tot twintig jaren.</i>
To manage,	<i>besturen.</i>
Bow,	<i>boog. m.</i>
Truth,	<i>waarheid. f.</i>
Rogue,	<i>schelm, schurk.</i>
Sharper,	<i>gaauwdief. m.</i>
To be surprised,	<i>verrascht worden.</i>
Robber,	<i>straatruover. m.</i>
Taken,	<i>gevat.</i>
To be represented,	<i>voorgesteld worden.</i>
Flattery,	<i>vleijerij. f.</i>
Supreme power,	<i>oppermagt. f.</i>
To be usurped,	<i>overweldigd worden.</i>
Tyrant,	<i>tiran. m.</i>

Of neuter Verbs.

Van de onzijdige Werkwoorden.

The conjugation of these verbs is like that of the active.

Learners may easily know a neuter verb from an active one; because the latter has, or can always have, a direct case after it; whereas the neuter verb never has, or can have it. *Slapen*, to sleep; *komen*, to come; *beven*, to tremble, are neuter verbs, because we can not say: *iemand beven*, to tremble somebody; *iemand slapen*, to sleep somebody.

Some neuter verbs become active by prefixing a preposition to them. *Weenen*, to weep, is neuter; but *beweenen*, to bewail, active, because it governs a direct case as:

Zij beweent hare zonden, She bewails her sins.

Some of the neuter verbs conjugate their compound tenses by the auxiliary verb *hebben*, to have; others by the verb *zijn*, to be.

It is impossible to give general rules, by which one

may distinguish whether a neuter verb takes *hebben* or *zijn*. We will therefore give two lists, which may be consulted, in case of uncertainty.

L I S T

of neuter verbs, whose compound tenses are conjugated by the auxiliary verb *hebben*, to have.

<i>Aarzelen</i> , to hesitate.	<i>Feilen</i> , to fail.
<i>Afrekenen</i> , to account.	<i>Flikkeren</i> , to glitter.
<i>Arbeiden</i> , to work.	<i>Fonkelen</i> , to sparkle.
<i>Beven</i> , to tremble.	<i>Gapen</i> , to gape.
<i>Bijstaan</i> , to assist.	<i>Geeuwen</i> , to yawn.
<i>Blaffen</i> , to bark.	<i>Gelden</i> , to cost.
<i>Bloeyen</i> , to blossom.	<i>Gelijken</i> , to resemble.
<i>Brommen</i> , to buzz.	<i>Gesten</i> , to forment.
<i>Brullen</i> , to roar.	<i>Gevoelen</i> , to feel.
<i>Dobberen</i> , to fluctuate.	<i>Gillen</i> , to shriek.
<i>Dralen</i> , to loiter.	<i>Gisten</i> , to forment.
<i>Draven</i> , to trot.	<i>Glansen</i> , to calender.
<i>Dreunen</i> , to quake, to shake.	<i>Glinsteren</i> , to glitter.
<i>Drentelen</i> , to lounge.	<i>Gloeijen</i> , to glow.
<i>Dribbelen</i> , to loiter, to trifle.	<i>Gonzen</i> , to buzz, to hum.
<i>Droomen</i> , to dream.	<i>Golven</i> , to fluctuate.
<i>Druilen</i> , to slumber.	<i>Grazen</i> , to graze.
<i>Duikelen</i> , to plunge.	<i>Grenzen</i> , to border.
<i>Drinken</i> , to drink.	<i>Grimlagchen</i> , to smile.
<i>Duren</i> , to dure, to last.	<i>Groenen</i> , to grow green.
<i>Durven</i> , to dare.	<i>Grommen</i> , to scold.
<i>Dutten</i> , to nap.	<i>Haarkloven</i> , to cavil.
<i>Dwalen</i> , to err.	<i>Handelen</i> , to treat.
<i>Eindigen</i> , to finish.	<i>Harrewarren</i> , to jangle.
<i>Etteren</i> , to suppurate.	<i>Heerschen</i> , to domineer.
<i>Falen</i> , to fail.	<i>Heeten</i> , to be called.
	<i>Hikken</i> , to have the hiccup.
	<i>Hinken</i> , to halt, to limp.

- Hinneken*, to neigh.
Hijgen, to gasp, to breath.
Hoesten, to cough.
Hommelen, to buzz.
Huichelen, to dissemble.
Huilen, to weep.
Huppelen, to jump.
Jammeren, to lament.
Janken, to yelp, to wrangle.
Jeuken, to itch.
Jlen, to hurry.
Jveren, to endeavour.
Juichen, to shout.
Kabbelen, to [beat like the water.
Kalven, to calf.
Kampen, to combat.
Keffen, to yelp.
Kermen, to lament.
Kibbelen, to cavil.
Kijken, to look.
Kijven, to scold.
Klagen, to complain.
Klappertanden, to chatter with the teeth.
Klinken, to found.
Klouteren, to climb.
Knabbelen, to gnaw.
Knarsen, to gnash.
Kneuzen, to bruize.
Knielen, to kneel.
Knorren, to grumble.
Krijten, to weep.
Kugchen, to cough.
Kuieren, to walk.
Kwaken, to croak.
Kwijnen, to languish.
Lagchen, to laugh.
Laten, to leave.
Lekken, to lick.
Leunen, to lean.
Leven, to live.
Liggen, to lie.
- Loten*, to draw lots.
Luisteren, to listen.
Maauwen, to meaw.
Mogen, to may.
Moeten, to must.
Morren, to murmur.
Muizen, to moule.
Naderen, to approach.
Omdolen, to err.
Omkijken, to look about.
Oorlogen, to make war.
Opletten, to pay attention.
Opzien, to look upward.
Overnachten, to stay over night.
Overwinteren, to winter.
Piepen, to peep.
Pogchen, to boast.
Prijken, to make show.
Rabbelen, to rattle.
Rammelen, to make rattling.
Ravotten, to revel.
Redeneren, to reason.
Rieken, to smell.
Rijden, to ride.
Rillen, to tremble.
Rollen, to roll.
Ruisen, to purl.
Rusten, to rest.
Schaden, to damage.
Schelen, to ail.
Schellen, to ring.
Schermen, to fence.
Schertsen, to jest.
Schijnen, to seem.
Schieten, to shoot.
Schimmelen, to grow mouldy.
Schitteren, to glitter.
Schreeuwen, to cry.
Slapen, to sleep.
Slenteren, to go trailing along.

<i>Slonsen</i> , to flatter.	<i>Veinzen</i> , to feign.
<i>Smeulen</i> , to smooke.	<i>Vechten</i> , to combat.
<i>Smullen</i> , to make good cheer.	<i>Vinken</i> , to catch finches.
<i>Snappen</i> , to prattle.	<i>Vischen</i> , to fish.
<i>Snikken</i> , to sob.	<i>Vliegen</i> , to fly.
<i>Snoeven</i> , to boast.	<i>Vloeijen</i> , to flow.
<i>Snorken</i> , to snore.	<i>Vlugten</i> , to fly.
<i>Spoeden</i> , to speed.	<i>Vonken</i> , to sparkle.
<i>Spotten</i> , to mock.	<i>Vreezen</i> , to fear.
<i>Springen</i> , to leap.	<i>Waken</i> , to watch.
<i>Staan</i> , to stay.	<i>Wachten</i> , to wait.
<i>Stameren</i> , to stammer.	<i>Wanen</i> , to presume.
<i>Stoppen</i> , to stop.	<i>Wedden</i> , to bet.
<i>Steunen</i> , to groan.	<i>Wedijveren</i> , to rival.
<i>Stilzwijgen</i> , to be silent.	<i>Weenen</i> , to weep.
<i>Stoeijen</i> , to dally.	<i>Wegen</i> , to weigh.
<i>Storten</i> , to spill.	<i>Wijfelen</i> , to waver.
<i>Struikelen</i> , to stumble.	<i>Welvaren</i> , to be in good health.
<i>Studeren</i> , to study.	<i>Wemelen</i> , to swarm.
<i>Stuiven</i> , to raise dust.	<i>Willen</i> , to will.
<i>Suffen</i> , to dote.	<i>Woeden</i> , to rage.
<i>Suizen</i> , to buzz.	<i>Wonen</i> , to dwell.
<i>Sukkelen</i> , to loiter.	<i>Worstelen</i> , to wrestle.
<i>Tafelen</i> , to be at table.	<i>Wormen</i> , to trudge.
<i>Talmen</i> , to loiter.	<i>Zegevieren</i> , to triumph.
<i>Tieren</i> , to make noise.	<i>Zingen</i> , to sing.
<i>Tintelen</i> , to tingle.	<i>Zondigen</i> , to sin.
<i>Toeven</i> , to tarry.	<i>Zorgen</i> , to care.
<i>Trachten</i> , to endeavour.	<i>Zuchten</i> , to sigh.
<i>Treden</i> , to tread.	<i>Zweeten</i> , to sweat.
<i>Treffen</i> , to hit.	<i>Zwellen</i> , to swell.
<i>Treuren</i> , to mourn.	<i>Zwenmen</i> , to swim.
<i>Twisten</i> , to quarrel.	<i>Zweren</i> , to swear.
<i>Twijfelen</i> , to doubt.	<i>Zwerven</i> , to wander.
<i>Uiten</i> , to express.	<i>Zwoegen</i> , to toil.
<i>Varen</i> , to navigate.	
<i>Vasten</i> , to fast.	

L I S T

of neuter verbs, whose compound tenses are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *zijn*, to be.

<i>Aanbranden</i> , to burn to.	<i>Krimpen</i> , to shrink.
<i>Aanbreken</i> , to dawn, to approach.	<i>Medegaan</i> , to go with.
<i>Afreizen</i> , to set out.	<i>Meerdereu</i> , to augment.
<i>Afwaaien</i> , to blow down.	<i>Naderen</i> , to approach.
<i>Bedaren</i> , to calm.	<i>Nederdalen</i> , to descend.
<i>Bederven</i> , to spoil.	<i>Nedervallen</i> , to fall down.
<i>Bersten</i> , to burst.	<i>Nederzakken</i> , to sink down.
<i>Beschimmelen</i> , to mould.	<i>Nederzinken</i> , to sink down.
<i>Bestallen</i> , to coagulate.	<i>Omkomen</i> , to perish.
<i>Bevallen</i> , to please.	<i>Ontbranden</i> , to enflame.
<i>Bevriezen</i> , to freeze.	<i>Ontslapen</i> , to die.
<i>Bezinken</i> , to settle.	<i>Ontspringen</i> , to issue, to spring from.
<i>Bezwijken</i> , to faint away.	<i>Ontstaan</i> , to proceed.
<i>Bezwijmen</i> , to swoon away.	<i>Ontvallen</i> , to slip out.
<i>Blijken</i> , to seem.	<i>Ontwaken</i> , to awake.
<i>Blijven</i> , to remain.	<i>Ontzinken</i> , to sink away.
<i>Dalen</i> , to descend.	<i>Opdagen</i> , to appear.
<i>Doorlijten</i> , to wear.	<i>Opengaan</i> , to open.
<i>Gaan</i> , to go.	<i>Opgaan</i> , to rise.
<i>Gelukken</i> , to succeed.	<i>Opgroeijen</i> , to grow up.
<i>Geschieden</i> , to happen.	<i>Opreizen</i> , to rise.
<i>Groeijen</i> , to grow.	<i>Opstaan</i> , to get up.
<i>Ingaan</i> , to enter.	<i>Opstijgen</i> , to mount.
<i>Inkomen</i> , to come in.	<i>Opylieden</i> , to fly up.
<i>Inslapen</i> , to fall a sleep.	<i>Opwaken</i> , to awake.
<i>Inspringen</i> , to jump in.	<i>Opwasfen</i> , to grow up.
<i>Intreden</i> , to enter.	<i>Opzwellen</i> , to swell.
<i>Inzinken</i> , to sink down.	<i>Overblijven</i> , to remain.
<i>Klimmen</i> , to climb.	<i>Ovreeukomen</i> , to agree.
<i>Kleuren</i> , to colour.	<i>Overlijden</i> , to die.
<i>Kneuzen</i> , to bruise.	<i>Overschielen</i> , to rest.
<i>Komen</i> , to come.	<i>Rijten</i> , to tear.

<i>Rijzen</i> , to rise.	<i>Vermageren</i> , to grow lean.
<i>Rimpelen</i> , to wrinkle.	<i>Verongelukken</i> , to perish.
<i>Roesten</i> , to rust.	<i>Verrijzen</i> , to resuscitate.
<i>Rotten</i> , to rot.	<i>Verroesten</i> , to rust.
<i>Schilferen</i> , to scale off.	<i>Verrotten</i> , to rot.
<i>Sluiten</i> , to shut.	<i>Verscalen</i> , to pall.
<i>Slippen</i> , to slip.	<i>Verschimmelen</i> , to mould.
<i>Sluipen</i> , to sneak, to sink.	<i>Versechten</i> , to grow worse.
<i>Sneven</i> , to perish.	<i>Verstimmeren</i> , to grow worse.
<i>Sterven</i> , to die.	
<i>Stollen</i> , to coagulate.	<i>Versmachten</i> , to be choked.
<i>Stranden</i> , to strand.	<i>Verstommen</i> , to strike dumb.
<i>Toeschieten</i> , to leap up.	<i>Vertrekken</i> , to set out.
<i>Toevriezen</i> , to freeze.	<i>Vervallen</i> , to decay.
<i>Trouwen</i> , to marry.	<i>Verwelken</i> , to fade.
<i>Uitglijden</i> , to slip out.	<i>Verwildereren</i> , to grow wild.
<i>Vallen</i> , to fall.	<i>Verzinken</i> , to sink down.
<i>Verarmen</i> , to impoverish.	<i>Voortspruiten</i> , to proceed.
<i>Verbasteren</i> , to degenerate.	<i>Vorderen</i> , to advance.
<i>Verbleeken</i> , to grow pale.	<i>Wassen</i> , to wash, to grow.
<i>Verdolen</i> , to err.	<i>Wegraken</i> , to be lost.
<i>Verdorren</i> , to wither.	<i>Wegslipen</i> , to wear off.
<i>Verdrinken</i> , to be drowned.	<i>Wegvlieden</i> , to fly away.
<i>Verdroogen</i> , to dry up.	<i>Worden</i> , to become.
<i>Verdwijnen</i> , to disappear.	<i>Wortelen</i> , to take root.
<i>Verergeren</i> , to grow worse.	<i>Zinken</i> , to sink.
<i>Verhuizen</i> , to remove.	<i>Zwellen</i> , to swell.

E X E R C I S E,

upon the neuter Verbs.

N^o. 81.

You are afraid my friend, you tremble like an aspen leaf. Why did he smile when he saw us? I don't know. Has he dreamt this night? No, he dreamt

never. Has your sifter languished all that time? She begins to yawn, let her go to bed. Why do you complain? He has treated me very ill. Do these diamonds not sparkle? Not at all. Where does your cousin live? In the Paul's street, over against the advocate. Have your friends succeeded? Is the vessel cast a shore? We have taken a walk together, the day before yesterday, and you have played with my niece. Does my friend rise already? Yes Sir, he has slept enough. Has he rest a little? He says, he is recovered. I am glad of it.

Afraid,
Like an aspen leaf,
To smile,
Saw,
To dream,
To languish,
To yawn,
To complain,
Treated ill,
To live,
To sparkle,
To succeed,
To cast a shore,
To rise,
To rest,
Recovered,

bevreesd.
als een blad.
grimlagchen.
zag
droomen.
kwijnen.
geeuwen, gapen.
klagen.
slecht behandeld, mishandeld.
wonen.
glinsteren.
slagen.
strandten.
opstaan.
rusten.
hersteld.

Of reciprocal Verbs.

Van de wederkeerige Werkwoorden.

We call reciprocal a verb whose subject and object are the same person or thing; so that the subject that acts, acts upon itself, and is at the same time the agent and the object of the action.

It happens frequently that a verb is reciprocal in Dutch, but not in English, as:

Zich schamen, to be ashamed.
Zich erinneren, to remember.

Zich beijveren, to endeavour.
Zich onderstaan, to dare.
Zich beroemen, to boast.
Zich inbeelden, to imagine.
Zich verheugen, to rejoice.
Zich gedragen, to behave.
Zich bemoeijen, to meddle.
Zich bedriegen, to be mistaken.

C O N J U G A T I O N ,

of the reciprocal verb *zich vermaken*, to divert
 one's self.

Onbepaalde wijs.

Infinitive mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd, *zich vermaken*, *zich* Present tense, to divert
 one's self.
Verledene tijd, *zich vermaakt hebbende*, *zich ver-* Perfect tense, to have di-
 verted one's self.

Deelwoorden.

Participles.

Tegenwoordige tijd, *zich vermakende*, *zich* Present tense, diverting
 one's self.
Verleden tijd, *zich vermaakt hebbende*, *zich ver-* Perfect tense, diverted
 one's self.

Aantoonende wijs,

Indicative mood.

Tegenwoordige tijd,

Present tense,

Ik vermaak mij, I divert myself.
Gij vermaakt u, Thou divertst thyself.
Hij vermaakt zich, He diverts himself.
Wij vermaken ons, We divert ourselves.
Gij vermaakt u, You divert yourselves.
Zij vermaken zich, They divert themselves.

Onvolm. verl. tijd.

*Ik vermaakte mij ,
Gij vermaaktet u ,
Hij vermaakte zich ,
Wij vermaakten ons ,
Gij vermaaktet u ,
Zij vermaakten zich ,*

Volmaakt verl. tijd.

*Ik heb mij
Gij hebt u
Hij heeft zich
Wij hebben ons
Gij hebt u
Zij hebben zich* } *vermaakt ,*

Meer dan volmaakt ver-
ledene tijd.

*Ik had mij
Gij hadt u
Hij had zich
Wij hadden ons
Gij hadt u
Zij hadden zich* } *vermaakt ,*

Eerste toekomstende tijd.

*Ik zal mij
Gij zult u
Hij zal zich
Wij zullen ons
Gij zult u
Zij zullen zich* } *vermaken ,*

Tweede toekomstende tijd.

*Ik zal mij
Gij zult u
Hij zal zich* } *vermaakt
hebben ,*

Imperfect tense.

I diverted myself.
Thou divertedst thyself.
He diverted himself.
We diverted ourselves.
You diverted yourselves.
They diverted themselves.

Perfect tense.

I have diverted myself.
Thou hast diverted thyself.
He has diverted himself.
We have diverted ourselves.
You have diverted yourselves.
They have diverted them-
selves.

Pluperfect tense.

I had diverted myself.
Thou hadst diverted thyself.
He had diverted himself.
We had diverted ourselves.
You had diverted yourselves.
They had diverted them-
selves.

First future tense.

I shall divert myself.
Thou wilt divert thyself.
He will divert himself.
We shall divert ourselves.
You will divert yourselves.
They will divert them-
selves.

Second future tense.

I shall have diverted my-
self.
Thou wilt have diverted
thyself.
He will have diverted him-
self.

<i>Wij zullen ons</i>	} <i>vermaakt hebben,</i>	We shall have diverted our-
<i>Gij zult u</i>		selves.
<i>Zij zullen zich</i>		You will have diverted your-
		selves.
		They will have diverted
		themselves.

De voorwaardelijke tijd.

The conditional tense.

<i>Ik zou mij</i>	} <i>vermaken,</i>	I should divert myself.
<i>Gij zoudt u</i>		Thou wouldst divert thyself.
<i>Hij zou zich</i>		He would divert himself.
<i>Wij zouden ons</i>		We should divert ourselves.
<i>Gij zoudt u</i>		You would divert yourselves.
<i>Zij zouden zich</i>		They would divert them-
		selves.

De tweede voorwaarde-
lijke tijd.

*The second conditional
tense.*

<i>Ik zou mij</i>	} <i>vermaakt hebben,</i>	I should have diverted my-
<i>Gij zoudt u</i>		self.
<i>Hij zou zich</i>		Thou wouldst have diverted
<i>Wij zouden ons</i>		thyself.
<i>Gij zoudt u</i>		He would have diverted
<i>Zij zouden zich</i>		himself
	We should have diverted	
	ourselves.	
	You would have diverted	
	yourselfes.	
	They would have diverted	
	themselves.	

De gebiedende wijs.

The imperative mood.

<i>Vermaak u,</i>	Divert thyself.
<i>Laat hem zich vermaken,</i>	Let him divert himself.
<i>Laten wij ons vermaken,</i>	Let us divert ourselves.
<i>Vermaakt u,</i>	Divert yourselves.
<i>Laat hen zich vermaken,</i>	Let them divert themselves.

De aanvoegende wijs.

The subjunctive mood.

De tegenwoordige tijd.

The present tense.

<i>Dat ik mij vermake,</i>	That I divert myself.
<i>Dat gij u vermaket,</i>	That thou divert thyself.

Dat hij zich vermake,
Dat wij ons vermaken,
Dat gij u vermaket,
Dat zij zich vermaken,

That he divert himself.
 That we divert ourselves.
 That you divert yourselves.
 That they divert themselves.

Onvolmaakt verledene
 tijd.

Preter Imperfect tense.

Dat ik mij vermaakte,
Dat gij u vermaaktet,
Dat hij zich vermaakte,
Dat wij ons vermaakten,
Dat gij u vermaaktet,

That I diverted myself.
 That thou diverted thyself;
 That he diverted himself.
 That we diverted ourselves.
 That you diverted yourselves.

Dat zij zich vermaakten,

That they diverted themselves.

Volmaakt verledene tijd.

Perfect tense.

Dat ik mij vermaakt hebbe,
Dat gij u vermaakt hebt,

That I have diverted myself.
 That thou have diverted thyself.

Dat hij zich vermaakt hebbe,

That he have diverted himself.

Dat wij ons vermaakt hebben,

That we have diverted ourselves.

Dat gij vermaakt hebt,

That you have diverted yourselves.

Dat zij zich vermaakt hebben.

That they have diverted themselves.

Meer aan volmaakt verledene tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

Dat ik mij vermaakt hadde,
Dat gij u vermaakt haddet,

That I had diverted myself.
 That thou had diverted thyself

Dat hij zich vermaakt hadde,

That he had diverted himself.

Dat wij ons vermaakt hadden,

That we had diverted ourselves.

Dat gij u vermaakt haddet.

That you had diverted yourselves.

Dat zij zich vermaakt hadden.

That they had diverted themselves.

E X E R C I S E S

upon the reciprocal verbs.

N°. 82.

Do you not remember to have been there with us next year? You dress yourselves, and your cousin applies himself to study. Do you not apply yourself to the dutch language? Do they warm themselves? Did they imagine? Did you apply yourselves enough? Did she submit herself to my judgment? Have I dressed myself? Hast thou not dressed thyself? He has not dressed himself. Have we not ruined ourselves? Have they ruined themselves? Had I exposed myself? Had he not exposed himself? We had not exposed ourselves. You had not warmed yourselves. They had not applied themselves. You will find yourselves obliged to go thither. We shall ruin ourselves in this manner. Your sister should imagine that it was true.

To remember,
To dress one's self,
To apply one's self,
To warm one's self,
To imagine,
To submit one's self,
To ruin one's self,
To expose one's self,
To find one's self obliged,
Thither,
In this manner,
To imagine,

zich erinnern.
zich kleeden.
zich toeleggen.
zich warmen.
zich verbeelden.
zich onderwerpen.
zich ongelukkig maken.
zich blootstellen.
zich verplicht vinden.
derwaarts.
op deze wijze.
zich inbeelden.

N°. 83.

I shall have dressed myself to morrow mornin

Thou shalt have dressed thyself the day after to-morrow. He shall have dressed himself when they arrive. We shall not have dressed ourselves, when his uncle comes. You shall not have hurt yourselves. Shall they have killed themselves? I should flatter myself, if I were in your place. He should kill himself, if he were in that condition. We should promise ourselves good success, if that were true. You should abandon yourselves to licentiousness, and therefore your father desires you to remain here. Had these soldiers wounded themselves? Should they have praised themselves? Does he know himself? If that were true, he would be happier. Have these children behaved well? Yes, I love them very much. I rejoice at it.

When they arrive,	<i>wanneer zij aankomen.</i>
To hurt one's self,	<i>zich bezeeren.</i>
To kill one's self,	<i>zich ombrengen, dooden.</i>
To flatter one's self,	<i>zich vleijen.</i>
If I were in your place,	<i>indien ik in uwe plaats ware,</i>
Condition,	<i>toestand. m.</i>
To promise one's self,	<i>zich beloven.</i>
Success,	<i>uitslag. m.</i>
To abandon one's self,	<i>zich overgeven.</i>
Licentiousness,	<i>losbandigheid. f.</i>
Desires you to remain here,	<i>wil hebben, dat gij hier blijft,</i>
Soldier,	<i>soldaat.</i>
To wound one's self,	<i>zich wonden.</i>
To praise one's self,	<i>zich prijzen.</i>
To behave,	<i>zich gedragen.</i>
Very much,	<i>zeer.</i>
To rejoice,	<i>zich verheugen,</i>

N^o. 84.

Peter has washed himself this morning, but John had combed himself. Why has he not washed himself likewise. I don't know. Where do they find themselves at present? In the garden of Master A. We cannot accustom ourselves to that manner of living, we are intended to retire. We have seen the monastery; the monks exerted themselves in acts of

devotion. The enemies have rendered themselves masters of all the strong places, peace will soon be concluded. They had entangled themselves in that business, which causes us much grief. Do not meddle with it, lest he be angry. Your brother has rendered himself considerable, follow his good example, and perform your duties. Do not avenge yourselves of your enemies, be rather inclined to forgiveness.

To wash one's self,	<i>zich waschen.</i>
To comb one's self,	<i>zich kammen.</i>
Likewise,	<i>ook.</i>
To find one's self,	<i>zich bevinden.</i>
To accustom one's self,	<i>zich gewennen.</i>
Manner of living,	<i>levenswijze. f.</i>
To be intended,	<i>voornemens zijn.</i>
To retire,	<i>heengaan.</i>
Monastery,	<i>klooster. n.</i>
Monk,	<i>monnik. m.</i>
To exert one's self in acts of devotion,	<i>zich in godsdienstige verrigtingen bejiveren.</i>
To render one's self master,	<i>zich meester maken.</i>
Strong,	<i>sterk.</i>
To entangle one's self in a business,	<i>zich in eene zaak mengen.</i>
Grief,	<i>verdriet. n.</i>
To meddle,	<i>zich bemoeijen.</i>
To render one's self considerable,	<i>zich in aanzien brengen.</i>
To follow,	<i>volgen.</i>
To avenge one's self,	<i>zich wreken.</i>
To be inclined to forgiveness,	<i>vergevensgezind zijn.</i>
Rather,	<i>eer; liever.</i>

Of impersonal Verbs.

Van de onpersoonlijke Werkwoorden.

Verbs which relate to no person or thing, and which are only conjugated in the third person singular, are called impersonal verbs. They generally are

preceded by *het*, it. The following verbs are impersonal:

Vriezen, to freeze.
Sneeuwen, to snow.
Regenen, to rain.
Donderen, to thunder.
Weerlichten, to lighten.
Hagelen, to hail.
Dooijen, to thaw.
Dauwen, to dew.
Waaijen, to blow.
Misten, to drizzle.

To which may be added several other verbs, which become impersonal, when employed, in the same manner, as:

Het past, it becomes.
Het schijnt, it seems, etc.

C O N J U G A T I O N

of the impersonal verb *sneeuwen*, to snow.

Onbepaalde wijs, *Infinitive mood.*

Tegenw. tijd, *sneeuwen*, Present tense; to snow.
Verled. tijd, *gesneeuwd hebbende*, Perfect tense, to have snowed.

Deelwoorden. *Participles.*

Tegenw. tijd, *sneeuwende*, Present tense, snowing.
Verled. tijd, *gesneeuwd*, Perfect tense, snowed.

Aantoonende wijs. *Indicative mood.*

Tegenwoordige tijd. *Present tense.*

Het sneeuwt, It snows, Digitized by Google

Onvolm. verl. tijd.	<i>Imperfect tense.</i>
<i>Het sneeuwde,</i>	It snowed.
Volmaakt verledene tijd.	<i>Perfect tense.</i>
<i>Het heeft gesneeuwd,</i>	It has snowed.
Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.	<i>Pluperfect tense.</i>
<i>Het had gesneeuwd,</i>	It had snowed.
Eerste toekomende tijd.	<i>First future tense.</i>
<i>Het zal sneeuwen,</i>	It will snow.
Twede toekomende tijd.	<i>Second future tense.</i>
<i>Het zal gesneeuwd hebben,</i>	It will have snowed.
Eerste voorwaardel. tijd.	<i>Conditional tense.</i>
<i>Het zou sneeuwen,</i>	It would snow.
Twede voorwaard. tijd.	<i>Second conditional tense.</i>
<i>Het zou gesneeuwd hebben,</i>	It would have snowed.
De gebiedende wijs.	<i>The Imperative mood.</i>
<i>Dat het sneeuwe,</i>	Let it snow.
Aanvoegende wijs.	<i>Subjunctive mood.</i>
De tegenwoordige tijd.	<i>Present tense.</i>
<i>Dat het sneeuwe,</i>	That it snow.
Onvolm. verl. tijd.	<i>Imperfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat het sneeuwde,</i>	That it snowed.
Volmaakt verled. tijd.	<i>Perfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat het gesneeuwd hebbe,</i>	That it has snowed.
Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.	<i>Pluperfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat het gesneeuwd hadde,</i>	That it had snowed.

E X E R C I S E

upon the impersonal verb.

N^o. 85.

It rains and thunders, we cannot go out. Does it rain? Yes, as fast as it can pour. Was it raining when you came? Yes, and the roads were very slippery. It snows and freezes. Did it freeze yesterday? It hailed this afternoon, and it will certainly snow to night. Does it blow? No, but it will blow to morrow. Has it not rained this morning? No, it has thundered and lightened. There is such a deal of snow, that there is no going out of the house. I think it will soon thaw, for it is less cold. The thunder roars. I foresaw what would happen, when it rained. I think it will still lighten to day. It would rain, if the wind turned. It is possible.

To go out,	<i>uitgaan.</i>
As fast as it can pour,	<i>dat het giet.</i>
You came,	<i>gij kwaamt.</i>
The road,	<i>de weg. m.</i>
Slippery,	<i>glibberig, glad.</i>
This afternoon,	<i>dezen middag.</i>
Such a deal of,	<i>zoo veel.</i>
That there is no going out,	<i>dat men niet uit kan gaan.</i>
Soon. Less,	<i>weldra. Minder.</i>
To roar,	<i>rommelen.</i>
I foresaw,	<i>ik voorzag.</i>
To happen,	<i>gebeuren.</i>
Still,	<i>nog meer.</i>
Turned,	<i>omkeerde, veranderde.</i>

 Of irregular verbs.
Van de onregelmatige werkwoorden.

These verbs are called irregular because their conjugation deviates from the general rule.

We find this irregularity in the preter imperfect tense, and the participle passive. These tenses are not formed by inflexions, but by changing the vowel. The other tenses of these verbs are regular.

The irregular verbs may be rankend in some classes. Those of the first class have the same vowel in the preter imperfect tense and in the passive participle. The vowel changes in the following manner.

a. The *ij* changes in long *e*, as: *blijven*, to remain; *ik bleef*, I remained; *gebleven*, remained. *Wrijven*, to rub; *ik wreef*, I rubbed; *gewreven*, rubbed. *Strijden*, to combat; *ik streed*, I combatted; *gestreden*, combatted.

b. The long *e*, and the diphthongues *ui* and *ie*, change in *o*, as: *wegen*, to weigh; *ik woog*, I weighed; *gewogen*, weighed. *Schuiven*, to shove, *ik schoof*, I shoved; *geschoven*, shoved. *Gieten*, to pour; *ik goot*, I poured; *gegoten*, poured.

c. The *i* and short *e* change in short *o*, as; *binden*, to bind; *ik bond*, I bound; *gebonden*, bound. *Bersten*, to burst; *ik borst*, I burst; *geborsten*, burst.

The verbs of the second class have only the vowel changed in the preter imperfect tense, and not in the participle passive, as:

a. Long *e* changes in *a*, as: *meten*, to measure; *ik mat*, I measured; *gemeten*, measured. *Eten*, to eat; *ik at*, I ate; *gegeten*, eaten.

b. Long *a*, before the consonants *d*, *p*, *t*, *z*, changes in *ie*, as: *blazen*, to blow; *ik blies*, I blowed; *geblazen*, blown.

c. Long *a*, before the consonants *g*, *r*, *v*, *i*, changes in *ae*, as: *varen*, to navigate; *ik voer*, I navigated; *gevaren*, navigated. *Dragen*, to bear; *ik droeg*, I bore; *gedragen*, born. *Waaijen*, to blow; *het woei*, it blew; *gowaaid*, blown.

d. Short *a* before *l* and *s* changes in *ie*, as: *valen*, to fall; *ik viel*, I fell; *gevallen*, fallen. *Waschen*, to wash; *ik wiesch*, I washed, *gewaschen*, washed.

e. Short *a* before *n* changes in *i* or *o*, as: *vangen*, to catch; *ik vong*, I caught; *gevangen*, caught. *Hangen*, to hang; *ik hing*, I hung; *gehangen*, hung.

f. Short *o*, long sharp *oo* and *oe*, change in *ie*, as: *stooten*, to push; *ik stiet*, I pushed; *gestooten*,

pushed. *Roepen*, to call; *ik riep*, I called; *geroepen*, called.

Irregular verbs of the third class change the vowel in the preter imperfect tense, and in the passive participle, but in a different manner.

a. Long *e* changes in the imperfect tense in *a*, and in the participle in *o*, as: *steken*, to stick; *ik stak*, I stuck; *gestoken*, stuck. *Bevelen*, to command; *ik beval*, I commanded; *bevolen*, commanded.

b. The same *e* changes sometimes in *oe* or *oo*, and in the participle in *o*, as: *scheren*, to shear; *ik schoor*, I shored; *geschoren*, shorn.

c. The *i* changes in the imperfect tense in *a*, and in the participle in *e*, as: *bidden*, to pray; *ik bad*, I prayed; *gebeden*, prayed.

d. Short sharp *e* changes in the imperfect tense in *ie* or *o*, and in the participle alone in *o*, as: *sterven*, to die; *ik stierf* or *storf*, I died; *gestorven*, died.

ALPHABETICAL LIST

OF THE

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE DUTCH LANGUAGE.

Aantijgen, to accuse; pres. tense: *ik tijg aan*, I accuse; imperf. tense: *ik teeg aan*, I accused; *wij tegen aan*, we accused; participle passive: *aangetegen*, accused.

Bakken, to fry; pres. tense: *ik bak*, I fry; imperf. tense: *ik bakte (biek)*, I fried; participle passive: *gebakken*, fried. The imperf. tense *biek* is seldom used.

- Bederven*, to spoil; pres. tense: *ik bederf*, I spoil; *wij bederven*, we spoil; imperf. tense: *ik bedierf*, I spoiled; *wij bedierven*, we spoiled; participle passive: *bedorven*, spoiled.
- Bedriegen*, to deceive; pres. tense: *ik bedrieg*, I deceive; imperf. tense: *ik bedroog*, I deceived; *wij bedrogen*, we deceived; particip. pasf.: *bedrogen*, deceived.
- Bevelen*, to command; pres. tense: *ik beveel*, I command; *wij bevelen*, we command; imperf. tense: *ik beval*, I commanded; *wij bevoelen*, we commanded; particip. pasf.: *bevoelen*, commanded.
- Bezinnen*, to recollect one'sself; pres. tense: *ik bezin mij*, I recollect myself; imperf. tense: *ik bezon mij*, I recollected myself; particip. pasf.: *bezonnen*, recollected.
- Bezwichen*, to faint; pres. tense: *ik bezwijk*, I faint; imperf. tense: *ik bezweek*, *wij bezweken*, I, we fainted; particip. pasf.: *bezweken*, fainted.
- Bidden*, to pray; pres. tense: *ik bid*, I pray; imperf. tense: *ik bad*, *wij baden*, I, we prayed; particip. pasf.: *gebeden*, prayed.
- Bieden*, to offer; pres. tense: *ik bied*, I offer; imperf. tense: *ik bood*, *wij boden*, I, we offered; particip. pasf.: *geboden*, offered.
- Binden*, to bind; pres. tense: *ik bind*, I bind; imperf. tense: *ik bond*, *wij bonden*, I, we bound; particip. pasf.: *gebonden*, bound.
- Bijten*, to bite; pres. tense: *ik bijt*, I bite; imperf. tense: *ik beet*, *wij beten*, I, we bit; particip. pasf.: *gebeten*, bitten.
- Blijken*, to seem; pres. tense: *het blijkt*, it seems; imperf. tense: *het bleek*, it seemed; particip. pasf.: *gebleken*, seemed.
- Blijven*, to remain; pres. tense: *ik blijf*, I remain; *wij blijven*, we remain; imperf. tense: *ik bleef*, *wij bleven*, I, we remained; particip. pasf.: *gebleven*, remained.
- Braden*, to roast; pres. tense: *ik braad*, *wij braden*, I, we roast; imperf. tense: *ik bried* (also *braadde*), I roasted; particip. pasf.: *gebraden*, roasted.

- Breken*, to break; pres. tense: *ik breek, wij breken*, I, we break; imperf. tense: *ik brak, wij braken*, I, we broke; participle passive: *gebroken*, broken.
- Brengen*, to bring; pres. tense: *ik breng*, I bring; imperf. tense: *ik bragt*, I brought; particip. pass.: *gebracht*, brought.
- Buigen*, to bend, pres. tense, *ik buig*, I bend; imperf. tense: *ik boog, wij bogen*, I, we bent; partic. pass.: *gebogen*, bent.
- Denken*, to think; pres. tense: *ik denk*, I think; imperf. tense: *ik dacht*, I thought; particip. pass.: *gedacht*, thought.
- Doen*, to do; pres. tense: *ik doe, wij doen*, I, we do; imperf. tense: *ik deed, wij deden*, I, we did; partic. pass.: *gedaan*, done.
- Dragen*, to bear; pres. tense: *ik draag, wij dragen*, I, we bear; imperf. tense: *ik droeg*, I bore; partic. pass.: *gedragen*, born.
- Dringen*, to press; pres. tense: *ik dring*, I press; imperf. tense: *ik drong*, I pressed; partic. pass.: *gedrongen*, pressed.
- Drinken*, to drink; pres. tense: *ik drink*, I drink; imperf. tense: *ik dronk*, I drank; partic. pass.: *gedronken*, drunk.
- Drijven*, to drive; pres. tense: *ik drijf, wij drijven*, I, we drive; imperf. tense: *ik dreef, wij dreeven*, I, we drove; partic. pass.: *gedreven*, driven.
- Druipen*, to drop; pres. tense: *het druipt*, it drops; imperf. tense: *het droop*, it dropt; *zij dropen*, they dropt; participle pass.; *gedropen*, dropt.
- Duiken*, to dive; pres. tense: *ik duik*, I dive, imperf. tense: *ik dook, wij doken*, I, we dived; partic. pass.: *gedoken*, dived.
- Dwingen*, to force; present tense: *ik dwing*, I force; imperf. tense: *ik dwong*, I forced; particip. pass.: *gedwongen*, forced.
- Eten*, to eat; pres. tense: *ik eet, wij eten*, I, we eat; imperf. tense: *ik at, I ate; hij aat, hij at, wij aten, zij aat, zij aten*; partic. pass.: *gegeten*, eaten.

- Fluïten*, to whistle; pres. tense: *ik fluit*, I whistle, imperf. tense: *ik float*, *wij sloten*, I, we whistled; partic. passive: *gefloten*, whistled.
- Gaan*, to go; pres. tense: *ik ga*, I go; *gij gaat*, *hij gaat*, *wij gaan*, *gij gaat*, *zij gaan*; imperf. tense: *ik ging*, I went; partic. passf.: *gegaan*, gone.
- Gelden*, to value; pres. tense: *het geldt*, it values; imperf. tense: *het gold*, it valued; partic. passf.: *gegolden*, valued.
- Gelijken*, to resemble; pres. tense: *ik gelijk*, I resemble; imperf. tense: *ik geleck*, *wij geleken*, I, we resembled; particip. passf.: *geleken*, resembled.
- Genezen*, to cure; pres. tense: *ik genees*, *wij genezen*, I, we cure; imperf. tense: *ik genas*, I cured; *gij genaast*, *hi genas*, *wij genazen*; *zij genazen*; particip. passf.: *genezen*, cured.
- Genieten*, to enjoy; pres. tense: *ik geniet*, I enjoy; imperf. tense: *ik genoot*, *wij genoten*, I, we enjoyed; particip. passf.: *genoten*, enjoyed.
- Geven*, to give; pres. tense: *ik geef*, *wij geven*, I, we give; imperf. tense: *ik gaf*, *wij gaven*, I, we gave, particip. passf.: *gegeven*, given.
- Gieten*, to pour; pres. tense: *ik giet*, I pour; imperf. tense: *ik goot*, *wij goten*, I, we poured; particip. passf.: *gegoten*, poured.
- Glijden*, to slide; pres. tense: *ik glijd*, I slide; imperf. tense: *ik glee*, *wij gleden*, I, we slid; partic. passf.: *gegleden*, slid.
- Graven*, to dig; pres. tense: *ik graaf*, *wij graven*, I, we dig; imperf. tense: *ik groef*, *wij groeven*, I, we dug; particip. passf.: *gegraven*, dug.
- Grijnen*, to weep; pres. tense: *ik grijn*, I weep; imperf. tense: *ik green*, *wi grenen*, I, we wept; partic. passf.: *gegrenen*, wept.
- Grijpen*, to seize; pres. tense: *ik griip*, I seize; imperf. tense: *ik greep*, *wij grepen*, I, we seized; partic. passf.: *gegrepen*, seized.

- Hangen*, to hang; imperf. tense: *ik hang*, I hang; imperf. tense: *ik hong*, I hung; participle passive: *gehangen*, hung.
- Heffen*, to lift; pres. tense: *ik hef*, I lift; imperf. tense: *ik hief*, I lifted; *wij hieven*, we lifted; particip. pass.: *geheven*, lifted.
- Helpen*, to help; pres. tense: *ik help*, I help; imperf. tense: *ik hielp*, I helped; particip. pass.: *geholpen*, helped.
- Hijgen*, to pant; pres. tense: *ik hijg*, I pant; imperf. tense: *ik heeg*, *wij hegen*, I, we panted; particip. pass.: *gehegen*, panted.
- Hijſchen*, to hoist up; pres. tense: *ik hijſch*, I hoist up; imperf. tense: *ik heeſch*, *wij heſchen*, I, we hoist up; particip. pass.: *geheſchen*, hoisted up.
- Houden*, to keep; pres. tense: *ik houd*, I keep; imperf. tense: *ik hield*, I kept; particip. pass.: *gehouden*, kept.
- Houwen*, to hew; pres. tense: *ik houw*, I hew; imperf. tense: *ik hieurw*, I hewed, particip. pass.: *gehouden*, hewn.
- Jagen*, to hunt; pres. tense: *ik jaag*, *wij jagen*, I, we hunt; imperf. tense: *ik joeg* (also *jaagde*), I hunted; particip. pass.: *gejaagd*, hunted.
- Kiezen*, to choose; pres. tense: *ik kies*, *wij kiezen*, I, we choose; imperf. tense: *ik koos*, *wij kozen*, I, we choosed; particip. pass.: *gekozen*, chosen.
- Kijken*, to look; pres. tense: *ik kijk*, I look; imperf. tense: *ik keek*, *wij keken*, I, we looked; particip. pass.: *gekeken*, looked.
- Kijven*, to chide; pres. tense: *ik kijf*, *wij kijven*, I, we chide; imperf. tense: *ik keef*, *wij keven*, I, we chid; particip. pass.: *gekeven*, chidden.
- Klinken*, to sound; pres. tense: *ik klink*, I sound; imperf. tense: *ik klonk*, I sounded; particip. pass.: *geklonken*, sounded.
- Kluiyen*, to gnaw; pres. tense: *ik kluiſ*, *wij kluiyen*, I, we gnaw; imperf. tense: *ik kloof*, *wij kloven*, I, we gnawed; particip. pass.: *gekloven*, gnawed.

- Knijpen*, to pinch; pres. tense: *ik knijp*, I pinch; imperf. tense: *ik kneep*, *wij knepen*, I, we pinched; partic. passive: *geknepen*, pinched.
- Komen*, to come; pres. tense: *ik kom*, *wij komen*, I, we come; imperf. tense: *ik kwam*, *wij kwamen*, I, we came; particip. pass.: *gekomen*, come.
- Koopen*, to buy; pres. tense: *ik koop*, I buy; imperf. tense: *ik kocht*, I bought; partic. pass.: *gekocht*, bought.
- Krijgen*, to get; pres. tense: *ik krijg*, I get; imperf. tense: *ik kreeg*, *wij kregen*, I, we got; particip. pass.: *gekregen*, got.
- Kriiten*, to weep; pres. tense: *ik krijt*, I weep; imperf. tense: *ik kreet*, *wij kreten*, I, we wept; particip. pass.: *gekreten*, wept.
- Kruijen*, to carry upon a wheelbarrow; pres. tense: *ik krui*, I carry; imperf. tense: *ik kraai*, *wij kraoijen*, I, we carried; partic. pass.: *gekrooijen*, carried.
- Kruipen*, to creep; pres. tense: *ik kruip*, I creep; imperf. tense: *ik kroop*, *wij krapen*, I, we crept; particip. pass.: *gekropen*, crept.
- Kunnen*, to can; pres. tense: *ik kan*, I can, *gij kunt*, *hij kan*, *wij kunnen*, *gij kunt*, *zij kunnen*; imperf. tense: *ik kon*, I could, particip. pass.: *gekonnen*, could.
- Kwijten*, to acquit one'sself; pres. tense: *ik kwijt mij*, I acquit myself; imperf. tense: *ik kweet mij*, I acquitted myself; *wij kweten ons*, we acquitted ourselves; particip. pass.: *gekweeten*, acquitted.
- Laden*, to charge; present tense: *ik laad*, *wij laden*, I, we charge; imperf. tense: *ik loed* (beter *laadde*), I charged; particip. pass.: *geladen*, charged.
- Lagchen*, to laugh; pres. tense: *ik lach*, *wij lagchen*, I, we laugh; imperf. tense: *ik lachte*, laughed; particip. pass.: *gelagchen*, laughed.
- Laten*, to let; pres. tense: *ik laat*, *wij laten*, I, we let; imperf. tense: *ik liet*, I let; particip. pass.: *gelaten*, let.

- Leggen*, to put; pres. tense: *ik leg, wij leggen*, I, we put; imperf. tense: *ik leide*, I put; participle passive: *gelegd*, put.
- Lezen*, to read; pres. tense: *ik lees, wij lezen*, I, we read; imperf. tense: *ik las*, I read; *gij laast, hij las, wij lazten, gij laast, zij lazten*; particip. pass.: *gelezen*, read.
- Liegen*, to lie, pres. tense: *ik lieg*, I lie; imperf. tense: *ik loog, wij logen*, I, we lied; particip. pass.: *gelogen*, lied.
- Liggen*, to lie; pres. tense: *ik lig*, I lie; imperf. tense: *ik lag, wij lagen*, I, we lay; partic. pass.: *gelegen*, lain.
- Lijden*, to suffer; pres. tense: *ik lijd*, I suffer; imperf. tense: *ik leed, wij leden*, I, we suffered; particip. pass.: *geleden*, suffered.
- Lijken*, to resemble, pres. tense: *ik lijk*, I resemble; imperf. tense: *ik leek, wij leken*, I, we resembled; particip. pass.: *geleken*, resembled.
- Loopen*, to run; pres. tense: *ik loop, wij loopen*, I, we run; imperf. tense: *ik liep*, I ran; particip. pass.: *gelopen*, run.
- Luiken*, to close; pres. tense: *ik luik*, I close; imperf. tense: *ik look, wij loken*, I, we closed; particip. pass.: *geloken*, closed.
- Metten*, to measure; pres. tense: *ik meet, wij metten*, I, we measure; imperf. tense: *ik mat, wij maten*, I, we measured; particip. pass.: *gemeten*, measured.
- Mijden*, to avoid; pres. tense: *ik mijd*, I avoid; imperfect tense: *ik meed, wij meden*, I, we avoided; partic. pass.: *gemedten*, avoided. — It is used regularly also.
- Moeten*, to must; pres. tense: *ik moet*, I must; imperf. tense: *ik moest*, I should; particip. pass.: *gemoeten*, must.
- Nemen*, to take; pres. tense: *ik neem, wij nemen*, I, we take; imperfect tense, *ik nam, wij namen*, I, we took; particip. pass.: *genomen*, taken.
- Nijgen*, to make a curtsey; pres. tense: *ik nijg*, I make a curtsey; imperf. tense: *ik neeg, wij*

- negen*, I, we made a curtsy; participle passive: *genegen*, made a curtsy.
- Nijpen*, to pinch; pres. tense: *ik nijp*, I pinch; imperf. tense: *ik neep*, *wij nepen*, I, we pinched; partic. pass.: *genepen*, pinched.
- Pijpen*, to pipe; pres. tense: *ik pi.p*, I pipe; imperf. tense: *ik peep*, *wij pepen*, I, we piped; partic. pass.: *gepepen*, piped.
- Plegen*, to use; pres. tense: *ik pleeg*, *wij plegen*, I, we use; imperf. tense: *ik plagt*, *wij plagten*, I, we used; no partic. passive: It is regular when it signifies *to commit*.
- Pluizen*, to drain; pres. tense: *ik pluis*, *wij pluizen*, I, we drain; imperf. tense: *ik ploos*, *wij plozen*, I, we drained; partic. pass.: *geplozen*, drained.
- Prijzen*, to commend; pres. tense: *ik prijs*, *wij prijzen*, I, we commend; imperf. tense: *ik praes*, *wij prezen*, I, we commended; participle pass.: *geprezen*, commended.
- Raden*, to advise; pres. tense: *ik raad*, *wij raden*, I, we advise; imperf. tense: *ik ried*, I advised; partic. pass.: *geraden*, advised.
- Rieken*, to smell; pres. tense: *het riekt*, it smells; imperf. tense: *het rook*, it smelled; partic. pass.: *geroken*, smelled.
- Rijden*, to ride; pres. tense: *ik riid*, I ride; imperf. tense: *ik reed*, *wij reden*, I, we rode; partic. pass.: *gereden*, rode.
- Riigen*, to lace; pres. tense: *ik riig*, I lace; imperf. tense: *ik reeg*, *wij regen*, I, we laced; partic. pass.: *geregen*, laced.
- Rijten*, to slit; pres. tense: *ik rijt*, I slit; imperf. tense: *ik reet*, *wij reten*, I, we slit; participle pass.: *gereten*, slit.
- Rijven*, to grate; pres. tense: *ik riif*, *wij rijven*, I, we grate; imperf. tense: *ik reef*, *wij reyen*, I, we grated; partic. pass.: *gereyen*, grated.
- Rijzen*, to mount; pres. tense: *ik rijs*, *wij rijzen*, I, we mount; imperf. tense: *ik rees*, *wij rezen*, I, we mounted; partic. pass.: *gerezen*, mounted.

- Roepen*, to call; pres. tense: *ik roep*, I call; imperf. tense: *ik riep*; I called; partic. past.: *geroepen*, called.
- Ruiken*, to smell; pres. tense: *ik ruik*, I smell; imperf. tense: *ik rook*, *wij roken*, I, we smelled; partic. past.: *geroken*, smelled.
- Schenden*, to violate; pres. tense: *ik schend*, I violate; imperf. tense: *ik schond*, I violated; partic. past.: *geschonden*, violated.
- Schenken*, to fill; pres. tense: *ik schenk*, I fill; imperf. tense: *ik schonk*, I filled; participle past.: *geschonken*, filled.
- Scheppen*, to create; pres. tense: *hij schept*, he creates; imperf. tense: *hij schiep*, he created; partic. past.: *geschapen*, created.
- Scheren*, to shave; pres. tense: *ik scheer*, *wij scheren*, I, we shave; imperf. tense: *ik schoor*, *wij schoren*, I, we shaved; partic. past.: *geschoren*, shaved.
- Schieten*, to shoot; pres. tense: *ik schiet*, I shoot; imperf. tense: *ik schoot*, *wij schoten*, I, we shot; partic. past.: *geschoten*, shot.
- Schijnen*, to appear; pres. tense: *ik schijn*, I appear; imperf. tense: *ik scheen*, *wij schenen*, I, we appeared; partic. past.: *geschenen*, appeared.
- Schijten*, to fart; pres. tense: *ik schijt*, I fart; imperf. tense: *ik scheet*, *wij scheten*, I, we farted; partic. past.: *gescheten*, farted.
- Schrijden*, to straddle; pres. tense: *ik schrijd*, I straddle; imperf. tense: *ik schreed*, *wij schreden*, I, we straddled; partic. past.: *geschreden*, straddled.
- Schrijven*, to write; pres. tense: *ik schrijf*, *wij schrijven*, I, we write; imperf. tense: *ik schreef*, *wij schreven*, I, we wrote; partic. past.: *geschreven*, written.
- Schuiln*, to shelter; pres. tense: *ik schuil*, I shelter; imperf. tense: *ik school*, *wi scholen*. I, we sheltered; partic. past.: *gescholen*, sheltered.
- Schuiven*, to push; pres. tense: *ik schuif*, *wij schuiven*, I, we push; imperf. tense: *ik schoof*, *wij schoven*, I, we pushed; partic. past.: *geschoven*, pushed.

- Slaan*, to beat; pres. tense: *ik sla*, I beat; *gij slaat*, *hij slaat*, *wij slaan*, *gij slaat*, *zij slaan*; imperf. tense: *ik sloeg*, I beat; partic. past.: *geslagen*, beaten.
- Slapen*, to sleep; pres. tense: *ik slaap*, *wij slapen*, I, we sleep; imperf. tense: *ik sliep*, I slept; partic. past.: *geslapen*, slept.
- Slijpen*, to grind; pres. tense: *ik slijp*, I grind; imperf. tense: *ik sloop*, *wij slijpen*, I, we ground; partic. past.: *geslepen*, ground.
- Slijten*, to wear; pres. tense: *ik slijt*, I wear out; imperf. tense: *ik sleet*, *wij sleten*, I, we wore; partic. past.: *gesleten*, worn out.
- Sluiken*, to smuggle; pres. tense: *ik sluik*, I smuggle; imperf. tense: *ik slook*, *wi sloken*, I, we smuggled; partic. past.: *gesloken*, smuggled.
- Sluipen*, to sneak; pres. tense: *ik sluip*, I sneak; imperf. tense: *ik sloop*, *wij slopen*, I, we sneaked; partic. past.: *geslopen*, sneaked.
- Sluiten*, to shut; pres. tense: *ik sluit*, I shut; imperf. tense: *ik sloot*, *wij sloten*, I, we shut; partic. past.: *gesloten*, shut.
- Smelten*, to melt; pres. tense: *ik smelt*, I melt; imperf. tense: *ik smolt*, I melted; participle past. *gesmolten*, melted.
- Smijten*, to throw; pres. tense: *ik smijt*, I throw; imperf. tense: *ik smect*, *wij smeten*, I, we threw; partic. past.: *gesmeten*, thrown.
- Snijden*, to cut; pres. tense: *ik snijd*, I cut; imperf. tense: *ik sneed*, *wij sneden*, I, we cut; partic. past.: *gesneden*, cut.
- Snuiten*, to snuff; pres. tense: *ik snuit*, I snuff; imperf. tense: *ik snoot*, *wij snoten*, I, we snuffed; partic. past.: *gesnoten*, snuffed.
- Snuiven*, to take snuff; pres. tense: *ik snuif*, *wij snuiven*, I, we take snuff; imperf. tense: *ik snoof*, *wij snoven*, I, we took snuff; partic. past.: *gesnoven*, taken snuff.
- Spijten*, to be sorry; pres. tense: *het spijt (mij)*, I am sorry for it; imperf. tense: *het speet (mij)*, I was sorry for it; partic. past.: *gespeten*, been sorry. This verb is only conjugated in the 3^d person.

- Splijten*, to split; pres. tense: *ik splijt*, I split; imperf. tense: *ik spleet*, *wij spleten*, I, we split; partic. pass.: *gespleten*, split.
- Spreken*, to speak; pres. tense: *ik spreek*, *wij spreken*, I, we speak; imperf. tense: *ik sprak*, *wij spraken*, I, we spoke; partic. pass.: *gesproken*, spoken.
- Springen*, to leap; pres. tense: *ik spring*, I leap; imperf. tense: *ik sprong*, I leaped; partic. pass.: *gesprongen*, leaped.
- Spruiten*, to descend; pres. tense: *ik spruit*, I descend; imperf. tense: *ik sproot*, *wij sproten*, I, we descended; partic. pass.: *gesproten*, descended.
- Spugen*, to spit; pres. tense: *ik spuug*, *wij spugen*, I, we spit; imperf. tense: *ik spooog*, *wij spogen*, I, we spit; partic. pass.: *gespogen*, spitten.
- Spuiten*, to spout; pres. tense: *ik spuit*, I spout; imperf. tense: *ik spoot*, *wij spöten*, I, we spouted; partic. pass.: *gespoten*, spouted.
- Staan*, to stand; pres. tense: *ik sta*, I stand; *gij staat*, *hij staat*, *wij staan*, *gij staat*, *zij staan*; imperf. tense: *ik stond*, I stood; partic. pass.: *gestaan*, stood.
- Steken*, to sting; pres. tense: *ik steek*, *wij steken*, I, we sting; imperf. tense: *ik stak*, *wij staken*, I, we stung; partic. pass.: *gestoken*, stung.
- Stelen*, to steal; pres. tense: *ik steel*, *wij stelen*, I, we steal; imperf. tense: *ik stool*, *wij stolen*, I, we stole; partic. pass.: *gestolen*, stolen.
- Sterven*, to die; pres. tense: *ik sterf*, *wij sterven*, I, we die; imperf. tense: *ik stierf*, *wij stierven*, I, we died; partic. pass.: *gestorven*, died.
- Stijgen*, to mount; pres. tense: *ik stijg*, I mount; imperf. tense: *ik steeg*, *wij stegen*, I, we mounted; partic. pass.: *gestegen*, mounted.
- Stijven*, to starch; pres. tense: *ik stijf*, *wij stijven*, I, we starch; imperf. tense: *ik steef*, *wij steven*, I, we starched; partic. pass.: *gesteven*, starched.

- Stooten*, to push; pres. tense: *ik stoot*, *wij stooten*, I, we push; imperf. tense: *ik stiet*, I pushed; partic. pass.: *gestooten*, pushed.
- Strijden*, to fight; pres. tense: *ik striid*, I fight; imperf. tense: *ik streed*, *wij streden*, I, we fought; partic. pass.: *gestreden*, fought.
- Strijken*, to strike; pres. tense: *ik strijk*, I strike; imperf. tense: *ik streek*, *wij streken*, I, we struck; partic. pass.: *gestreken*, struck.
- Stuiven*, to raise dust; pres. tense: *ik stuiſ*, *wij stuiſſen*, I, we raise dust; imperf. tense: *ik ſtoof*, *wij ſtoven*, I, we raised dust; partic. pass.: *geſtoven*, raised dust.
- Treden*, to tread; pres. tense: *ik tred*, *wij treden*, I, we tread; imperf. tense: *ik trad*, *wij traden*, I, we trod; partic. pass.: *getreden*, trodden.
- Treffen*, to hit; pres. tense: *ik tref*, *wij treffen*, I, we hit; imperf. tense: *ik trof*, *wij troffen*, I, we hit; partic. pass.: *getroffen*, hit.
- Trekken*, to draw; pres. tense: *ik trek*, *wij trekken*, I, we draw; imperf. tense: *ik trok*, *wij trokken*, I, we drew; partic. pass.: *getrokken*, drawn.
- Uitdijgen*, to swell; pres. tense: *ik dijk uit*, I swell; imperf. tense: *ik deeg uit*, *wij degen uit*, I, we swelled; partic. pass.: *uitgedegen*, swollen.
- Vallen*, to fall; pres. tense: *ik val*, I fall; imperf. tense: *ik viel*, I fell; partic. pass.: *gevalen*, fallen.
- Vangen*, to catch; pres. tense: *ik vang*, I catch; imperf. tense: *ik vong*, I caught; partic. pass.: *gevangen*, caught.
- Varen*, to navigate; pres. tense: *ik vaar*, *wij varen*, I, we navigate; imperf. tense: *ik voer*, I navigated; partic. pass.: *gevaren*, navigated.
- Vechten*, to fight; pres. tense: *ik vecht*, I fight; imperf. tense: *ik vocht*, I fought; partic. pass.: *gevochten*, fought.
- Verdrieten*, to sadden; pres. tense: *ik verdriet*, I sadden; imperf. tense: *ik verdroot*, *wij verdrotten*, I, we saddened; partic. pass.: *verdrotten*, saddened.

- Verdwijnen*, to disappear; pres. tense: *ik verdwijn*, I disappear; imperf. tense: *ik verdween*, *wij verdwenen*, I, we disappeared; partic. pasf.: *verdwenen*, disappeared.
- Vergeeten*, to forget; pres. tense: *ik vergeet*, *wij vergeten*, I, we forget; imperf. tense: *ik vergat*, *wij vergaten*, I, we forget; partic. pasf.: *vergeten*, forgotten.
- Verliezen*, to lose; pres. tense: *ik verlies*, *wij verliezen*, I, we lose; imperf. tense: *ik verloor*, *wij verloren*, I, we lost; partic. pasf.: *verloren*, lost.
- Verwerven*, to obtain; pres. tense: *ik verwerf*, *wij verwerven*, I, we obtain; imperf. tense: *ik verwierf*, *wij verwierven*, I, we obtained; partic. pasf.: *verworven*, obtained.
- Verzinnen*, to invent; pres. tense: *ik verzin*, I invent; imperf. tense: *ik verzon*, I invented; partic. pasf.: *verzonnen*, invented.
- Verzwellgen*, to swallow; pres. tense: *ik verzwelg*; swallow, imperfect tense: *ik verzwoug*, swallowed; partic. pasf.: *verzwolgen*, swallowed.
- Verzwinden*, to disappear; pres. tense: *ik verzwind*, I disappear; imperf. tense: *ik verzwond*, I disappeared; partic. pasf. *verzwonden*, disappeared.
- Vlechten*, to twist; pres. tense: *ik vlecht*, I twist; imperf. tense: *ik vlocht*, I twisted; partic. pasf.: *gevlochten*, twisted.
- Vlieden*, to fly; pres. tense: *ik vlied*, I fly; imperf. tense: *ik vlood*, *wij vloden*, I, we fled; partic. pasf.: *gevloeden*, fled.
- Vliegen*, to fly; pres. tense: *ik vlieg*, I fly; imperf. tense: *ik vloog*; *wij vloegen*, I, we flew; partic. pasf. *gevlogen*, flew.
- Vlieten*, to flow; pres. tense: *ik vliet*, I flow; imperf. tense: *ik vloot*, *wij vloten*, I, we flowed; partic. pasf. *gevloten*, flowed.
- Vragen*, to ask; pres. tense: *ik vraag*, *wij vragen*, I, we ask; imperf. tense: *ik vroeg*, I asked; partic. pasf.: *gevraagd*, asked. This verb is also regular, one says: *ik vraagde*, I asked.

- Vreten*, to eat gluttonously; pres. tense: *ik vreet*, *wij vreten*, I, we eat gluttonously; imperf. tense: *ik vrat*, *wij vraten*, I, we ate gluttonously; partic. pasf. *gevreten*, eaten gluttonously.
- Vriezen*, to freeze; pres. tense: *het vriest*, it freezes, imperf. tense: *het vroom*, it froze; partic. pasf.: *gevroren*, frozen.
- Waaijen*, to blow; pres. tense: *het waait*, it blows, imperf. tense: *het woei*, it blew; partic. pasf.: *gewaaid*, blown. The imperf. tense is also regular, *het waaide*, in stead of, *het woef*, it blew.
- Waschen*, to wash; pres. tense: *ik wasch*, I wash; imperf. tense: *ik wiesch*, I washed; partic. pasf.: *gewaschen*, washed.
- Wasfen*, to grow; pres. tense: *ik was*, I grow; imperf. tense: *ik wies*, I grew; partic. pasf.: *gewasfen*, grown.
- Wegen*, to weigh; pres. tense: *ik weeg*, *wij wegen*, I, we weigh; imperf. tense: *ik woog*, *wij wogen*, I, we weighed; partic. pasf.: *gewogen*, weighed.
- Werpen*, to throw; pres. tense: *ik werp*, I throw; imperf. tense: *ik wierp*, I threw; partic. pasf.: *geworpen*, thrown.
- Weten*, to know; pres. tense: *ik weet*, *wij weten*, I, we know; imperf. tense: *ik wist*, I knew; partic. pasf.: *geweten*, known.
- Wezen*, to be. See the conjugation of the auxiliary verb *to be*.
- Wijken*, to give way; pres. tense: *ik wijk*, I give way; imperf. tense: *ik week*, *wij weken*, I, we gave way; partic. pasf.: *geweken*, given way.
- Winnen*, to gain; pres. tense: *ik win*, I gain; imperf. tense: *ik won*, I gained; partic. pasf.: *gewonnen*, gained.
- Wijten*, to impute; present tense: *ik wijt*, I impute; imperf. tense: *ik weet*, *wij weten*, I, we imputed; partic. pasf.: *geweten*, imputed.
- Wijzen*, to show; pres. tense: *ik wijs*, *wij wijzen*, I, we show; imperf. tense: *ik wees*, *wij*

- wezen*, I, we shewed; partic. pasf.: *gewezen*, shewn.
- Worden*, to be. See the conjugation of this verb.
- Wreken*, to avenge; pres. tense: *ik wreek*, *wij wreken*, I, we avenge; imperf. tense: *ik wreekte*, I avenged; partic. pasf.: *gewroken*, avenged.
- Wrijven*, to rub; pres. tense: *ik wrijf*, *wij wrijven*, I, we rub; imperf. tense: *ik wreef*, *wij wreven*, I, we rubbed; partic. pasf.: *gewreven*, rubbed.
- Zenden*, to fend; pres. tense: *ik zend*, I fend; imperf. tense: *ik zond*, I sent; partic. pasf.: *gezonden*, sent.
- Zieden*, to boil; pres. tense: *ik zied*, I boil; imperf. tense: *ik zood*, *wij zoden*, I, we boiled; partic. pasf.: *gezoden*, boiled.
- Zien*, to see; pres. tense: *ik zie*, *wij zien*, I, we see; imperf. tense: *ik zag*, *gij zaagt*, *hij zag*, *wij zagen*, I, we saw; partic. pasf. *gezien*, se n.
- Zijgen*, to filtrate; pres. tense: *ik zijg*, I filtrate; imperf. tense: *ik zeeg*, *wij zegen*, I, we filtrated; partic. pasf.: *gezegen*, filtrated.
- Zijn*, to be. See the conjugation of it.
- Zingen*, to sing; pres. tense: *ik zing*, I sing; imperf. tense: *ik zong*, I sung; partic. pasf.: *gezongen*, sung.
- Zinken*, to sink; pres. tense: *ik zink*, I sink; imperf. tense: *ik zonk*, I sunk; partic. pasf.: *gezonken*, sunk.
- Zitten*, to sit; pres. tense: *ik zit*, I sit; imperf. tense: *ik zat*, *wij zaten*, I, we sat; partic. pasf.: *gezeten*, sat.
- Zocken*, to seek; pres. tense: *ik zoek*, I seek; imperf. tense: *ik zocht*, I sought; partic. pasf.: *gezocht*, sought.
- Zuigen*, to suck; pres. tense: *ik zuig*, I suck; imperf. tense: *ik zoog*, *wij zogen*, I, we suck; part. pasf.: *gezogen*, sucked.
- Zuipen*, to drink immoderately; pres. tense: *ik zuip*, I drink immoderately; imperf. tense: *ik zoop*, *wij zopen*, I, we drank immodera-

	tely; partic. pasf.: <i>gezopen</i> , drunk immoderately.
<i>Zullen</i> ,	to fhall. See the conjugation of this verb.
<i>Zwellen</i> ,	to fwell; pref. tenfe: <i>ik zwel</i> , I fwell; imperf. tenfe: <i>ik zwol</i> , I fwelled; partic. pasf <i>gezwollen</i> , fwollen.
<i>Zweren</i> ,	to fwear; pref. tenfe: <i>ik zweer</i> , <i>wij zweeren</i> , I, we fwear; imperf. tenfe: <i>ik zwoer</i> , <i>wij zwoeren</i> , I, we fwore, partic. pasf.: <i>gezwoeren</i> , fworn.
<i>Zwijgen</i> ,	to be filent; pref. tenfe: <i>ik zwijg</i> , I am filent; imperf. tenfe: <i>ik zweeg</i> , <i>wij zwegen</i> , I was, we were filent; partic. pasf.: <i>gezwegen</i> , been filent.

Of compound verbs.

Van de zamengeftelde Werkwoorden.

Some verbs are compounded of a verb and a fubftantive, as: *handhaven*, to maintain; *raadplegen*, to confult.

Some are compounded of an adverb and a verb, as: *liefkozen*, to cajole.

Others are compounded of a preposition and a verb, as: *overwegen*, to confider; *ontsnappen*, to efcape.

The prepositions of this compofition are divided into two forts, as: *fcheidbare*, feparable, and *onfcheidbare*, infeparable.

The infeparable prepositions are never feperated from the verbs, but remain always before them. They are: *be*, *ge*, *her*, *ont*, *ver*, and *wan*. The following verbs are compounded with them: *beginnen*, to begin; *ge-loooven*, to believe; *herinneren*, to remember; *ontsnappen*, to efcape; *veranderen*, to change; *wantrouwen*, to miftruf. Thefe verbs have never the preposition *ge* in the participle paffive, f. i. *veranderd*, changed,

and not *geveranderd*; *herinnerd*, remembered; *ontsnapt*, escaped.

The separable prepositions are in great number, as: *af*, *aan*, *door*, *bij*, *in*, *heen*, *los*, *om*, *mede*, *na*, *toe*, *weg*, *uit*, etc. The following verbs are compounded with these prepositions: *aanbidden*, to adore; *afnemen*, to take off; *aannemen*, to accept; *doorboren*, to pierce; *bijstaan*, to assist; *inkomen*, to enter; *ombrengen*, to kill; *medewerken*, to coöperate; *toedoen*, to shut; *uitgaan*, to go out. The preposition *ge*, in the participle passive, is put between the separable preposition and the verb, as: *medegewerkt*, coöperated; *uitgegaan*, gone out; *bijgestaan*, assisted.

It is the same with the preposition *te*, in the infinitive mood: *uit te gaan*, to go out; *bij te staan*, to assist.

In the conjugation the separable preposition is often placed after the verb, as: *ik ga uit*, I go out; *hij brengt om*, he kills; *zij werkt mede*, she coöperates.

The prepositions *mis*, *onder*, *over*, *achter* and *weder* are sometimes separable, and sometimes inseparable. They are separable when the stress is upon them, and inseparable when the stress is upon the verbs, as:

Separable.

Inseparable.

<i>De zon zal ondergaan</i> , the sun will set.	<i>Ik onderga veel</i> , I suffer much.
<i>Iemand onderhouden</i> , to suppress one.	<i>Iemand onderhouden</i> , to entertain one.
<i>Overwegen</i> , to weigh twice.	<i>Overwegen</i> , to consider.
<i>Voorzeggen</i> , to dictate.	<i>Voorzeggen</i> , to foretell.
<i>Misdoen</i> , to do wrong.	<i>Misdoen</i> , to do evil.
<i>Wederkomen</i> , to return.	<i>Wederleggen</i> , to refute.
<i>Achterkomen</i> , to discover.	<i>Achternvolgen</i> , to pursue.
<i>Doorbrenge</i> n, to spend.	<i>Doorboren</i> , to pierce.

CONJUGATION

of the compound verb *uitgaan*, to go out.

Tegenwoordige tijd.

Present tense.

Ik ga uit,
Gij gaat uit,
Hij gaat uit,
Wij gaan uit,
Gij gaat uit,
Zij gaan uit,

I go out.
Thou goest out.
He goes out.
We go out.
You go out.
They go out.

Onvolm. verledene tijd.

Imperfect tense.

Ik ging uit,
Gij gingt uit,
Hij ging uit,
Wij gingen uit,
Gij gingt uit,
Zij gingen uit,

I went out.
Thou wentst out.
He went out.
We went out.
You went out.
They went out.

Volm. verledene tijd.

Perfect tense.

Ik ben uitgegaan,
Gij zijt uitgegaan,
Hij is uitgegaan,
Wij zijn uitgegaan,
Gij zijt uitgegaan,
Zij zijn uitgegaan,

I am gone out.
Thou art gone out.
He is gone out.
We are gone out.
You are gone out.
They are gone out.

Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.

Pluperfect tense.

Ik was uitgegaan, enz.

I was gone out, etc.

Eerste toekomstige tijd.

First future tense.

Ik zal uitgaan,

I shall go out.

Tweede toekom. tijd.	<i>Second future tense.</i>
<i>Ik zal uitgegaan zijn,</i>	I shall be gone out.
Gebiedende wijs.	<i>Imperative mood.</i>
<i>Ga uit,</i>	Go out.
Aanvoegende wijs.	<i>Subjunctive mood.</i>
Tegenwoordige tijd.	<i>Present tense.</i>
<i>Dat ik uitga,</i>	That I go out.
Onvolm. verledene tijd.	<i>Imperfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat ik uitginge,</i>	That I went out.
Volm. verledene tijd.	<i>Perfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat ik uitgegaan zij,</i>	That I be gone out.
Meer dan volmaakt verledene tijd.	<i>Pluperfect tense.</i>
<i>Dat ik uitgegaan ware,</i>	That I were gone out.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the irregular verbs.

N°. 86.

I come, but he comes not. We come, but they will not come. We came, but they came not. I go out. Do you go out to day? No Sir, I will go to morrow. I went out with my friend, but your cousin stayed at home. Have you slept all night? No, I did not get a wink of sleep, I was indisposed. I

write a letter to my friend, and he wrote yesterday to his parents. When has she written the letter to your mother? In the beginning of this month. Did your uncle keep his promises? Did he not become a learned man by dint of studying? He kept his word, why did you not believe me? He received money, and your sister wrote a letter. They have been rewarded for that brilliant action.

To go out,	<i>uitgaan.</i>
I go out,	<i>ik ga uit.</i>
All night,	<i>den ganschen nacht.</i>
I did not get a wink of sleep,	<i>ik heb geen oog toegedaan.</i>
Indisposed,	<i>ongesteld.</i>
To keep one's promise,	<i>zijne belofte houden.</i>
To become learned,	<i>geleerd worden.</i>
By dint of studying,	<i>door veel studeren.</i>
To reward,	<i>beloonen.</i>
Brilliant,	<i>schitterend.</i>

N^o. 87:

That soldier suffered with much courage. I received his thanks for all my kindness. I speak of Shakespear's works, but they spoke of Milton's poem. What has your teacher spoken of? Of Hume's history of England. Have you read Newton's works? Yes, my friend, several times. What was your brother reading? Wagenaar's history of the Netherlands. Your aunt appeared very dull, has some misfortune befallen her? They forgot their friends, and therefore I was very angry. He concealed the true motives of his conduct, as you have heard. Have you known my grandfather? No Sir, he was deceased before I came here. Did the criminals appear before the judges? Did they send you the money of the notary?

To suffer,	<i>lijden.</i>
To receive,	<i>ontvangen.</i>
Thanks,	<i>dankbetuiging.</i>

Kindness,	<i>vriendelijkheid.</i>
Teacher,	<i>onderwijzer.</i>
Several times,	<i>verscheidene malen.</i>
To appear,	<i>schijnen.</i>
Dull,	<i>bedroefd.</i>
Has some misfortune befallen her?	<i>is haar eenig ongeluk overkomen?</i>
To forget,	<i>vergeten.</i>
To conceal,	<i>verbergen.</i>
True motives,	<i>ware beweegredenen.</i>
Conduct,	<i>gedrag. n.</i>
To hear,	<i>hooren.</i>
Deceased,	<i>overleden.</i>
To appear,	<i>verschijnen.</i>
Criminal,	<i>misdadiger.</i>

N^o. 88.

They have wasted their time about trifles. He has defended his country many years. I had suspended my judgment more than once. That dog did bite every body. Have they not spread terror every where? Did he not aim in vain at that place? We have defended those persons at the hazard of our own life. He instructed youth in true religion. She deducted at least half of the sum. Had the pupils transcribed their dutch exercises? Do you consent to every thing he says? He will write all the irregular verbs of his grammar. That author has described clearly the circumstances of that event. The king has abolished that law.

To wast,	<i>doorbrengen.</i>
About trifles,	<i>met kleinigheden.</i>
To defend,	<i>verdedigen.</i>
To suspend,	<i>opschorten.</i>
Judgment,	<i>oordeel. n.</i>
To bite,	<i>bijten.</i>
To spread,	<i>verspreiden.</i>
To aim at,	<i>staan naar.</i>
In vain,	<i>te vergeefs.</i>
At the hazard,	<i>met gevaar.</i>
To instruct,	<i>onderwijzen.</i>

True religion,
To deduct,
At least,
To transcribe,
To consent to,
To describe,
Author,
Clearly,
Circumstance.
Event,
To abolish,

ware godsdienst. m.
afrekken.
ten minste.
overschrijven.
toestemmen in.
beschrijven.
schrijver.
duidelijk.
omstandigheid.
gebeurtenis.
affchaffen.

N^o. 89.

This custom was introduced under the reign of George the first, king of Great Britain. The witnesses have been corrupted, and the judges will be deceived. Have you answered the letters you received yesterday? Not yet. Had he obtained already your favour? Would they have concealed that affair? He is to go and breakfast at my uncle's next Monday. We sometimes entertain a hatred for persons who deserve our friendship. We received his tiresome visits, because we were obliged to it. I entertain a bad opinion of him, because he has not avoided Master N's company. We have obliged them to pay half the expences. We do not mean to wrong you. Have you never wronged any body?

To introduce a custom,
Reign,
Witness,
To corrupt,
To deceive,
To answer,
To obtain,
To conceal,
He is to go and breakfast.
To entertain,
Tiresome,
To entertain a bad opinion,
To avoid,

eene gewoonte invoeren.
regering. f.
getuige. m. & f.
omkoopen.
bedriegen.
beantwoorden.
verkrijgen.
verbergen.
hij zal gaan ontbijten.
voeden.
vervelend.
slechte gedachten voeden
vermijden.

Expence,
To wrong,
We do not mean,

vertering.
verongelijken.
wij zijn niet voornemens.

N°. 90.

As soon as he had received that money, he returned them what they had lent him. Why did you interrupt him? Have they lost much, when they played? They perceived the danger, and endeavoured to shun it. She burst into tears, after your cousin was gone. We seized the first opportunity to express our gratitude towards him. Have the English not imitated the great actions of their ancestors? Have they not rendered great services to their ungrateful contry? Have you reflected on your conduct? Will you engage him to do it? You had sold him these commodities at an exorbitant price. We thought you would have brought your brother with you. Have they not lost all their wealth?

As soon as,
To return,
To interrupt,
To loose,
To perceive,
To endeavour,
To shun,
After your cousin was gone,
To burst,
To seize,
Opportunity,
To express,
Gratitude towards,
To imitate,
Ancestors,
To render service,
Ungrateful,
To reflect on,
To engage,
Commodities,
Exorbitant,

zoodra als.
wedergeven.
in de reden vallen.
verliezen.
bemerken.
trachten.
vermijden.
toen uw neef heengegaan was.
uitbersten.
gebruik maken van.
gelegenheid. f.
uitdrukken.
dankbaarheid aan.
navolgen.
voorvaderen. m.
diens bewijzen.
ondankbaar.
nadenken over.
overhalen.
koopwaren. f.
buitengemeen hoog.
bezittingen.

N^o. 91.

He acquired every day new knowledge, and studied without interruption. We had recourse to his generosity. Alexander conquered a great part of Asia and Africa, and died in his thirty second year. They ran away at the first appearance of danger, they are cowards. Master S. has gained his cause, but he has lost a great deal of his possessions. He would have paid you, if he had sold his goods. I rose early in the morning, to continue my voyage, and arrived at eleven o'clock at Norwich. We have acquired after you next week, and they have told us what happened you on that occasion. Did my son not behave well in the last war? Did your children apply themselves to the dutch language?

To acquire,
Knowledge,
Interruption,
To have recourse to,
To conquer,
To run away,
Appearance,
Coward,
To gain a cause,
Deal,
Possession,
Goods,
To rise,
To arrive,
To acquire after,
To happen,
To behave well,
To apply one's self,

verkrijgen.
kennis. f.
ophouden.
toevlugt nemen tot.
overwinnen.
wegloopen.
schijn.
bloodaard. m.
een proces winnen.
gedeelte.
bezitting.
goederen.
opstaan.
aankomen.
vernemen naar.
overkomen.
zich wel gedragen.
zich toeleggen.

N^o. 92.

I was going to the play when I saw your brother and your cousin. My father was very angry, when

I went out without you. We went to pay him a visit last week, but he was not at home. I left the letter in my chamber, but I did not find it when I came back. As soon as they saw us coming, they ran away, and did not appear any more. I could not believe him, for he contradicted himself at every instant. Tell me what he has done to them, but above all do not lie. She died with grief, because her son did not behave well. Your father was no sooner arrived in Holland, than I offered him my services. He started with joy, when he heard that news. They acquired a general esteem by their modesty.

To go to pay a visit,

To leave,

To come back,

As soon as,

To run away,

To appear,

To contradict one's self,

Above all,

To lie,

To die with grief,

No sooner,

To offer,

To start with,

To acquire,

Esteem,

Modesty,

eén bezoek gaan geven.

laten.

weerkomen.

zoo dra als.

wegloopen.

te voorschijn komen.

zich tegenspreken.

vooral.

liegen.

sterven van verdriet.

naauwelijks.

aanbieden.

opspringen van.]

verkrijgen.

achting. f.

zedigheid. f.

N^o. 93.

We did foresee that you should not succeed, and therefore we gave you that advice. I saw the consequences of your folly, and resolved to speak no more of it. We did satisfy you as much as we could, and nevertheless you were displeas'd. He got rid of his prejudices, and followed her advice. Let us die for our country, and our death will be glorious. I should die satisfied, if I knew you were happy. She has never discovered my secrets, I rely upon her. Nobody knows what we have suffered in our last

voyage. What would become of you, if we did forsake you? He kept his word, and came soon in the morning. We have read an interesting book of Franklin. He excluded his son from his succession.

To foresee,	<i>voorzien.</i>
Consequence,	<i>gevolg. n.</i>
Folly,	<i>dwaasheid. f.</i>
To resolve,	<i>besluiten.</i>
To satisfy,	<i>voldoen.</i>
Nevertheless,	<i>echter.</i>
To get rid,	<i>zich ontdoen.</i>
Prejudices,	<i>vooordeel. n.</i>
Country,	<i>vaderland. n.</i>
Glorious,	<i>roemrijk.</i>
Satisfied,	<i>weltevreden.</i>
To discover,	<i>aan den dag brengen.</i>
To rely upon,	<i>staat maken op.</i>
To suffer,	<i>lijden.</i>
To become,	<i>worden.</i>
To forsake,	<i>verlaten.</i>
Interesting,	<i>belangrijk.</i>
To exclude,	<i>uitsluiten.</i>
Succession,	<i>nalatenfchap.</i>

N^o. 94.

The physician told us that her illness proceeds from imprudence. Your grandmother wrote she would come next saturday, if the weather were fine. Your cousin set out in the morning, and came back at night. As soon as we saw that we could not speak to the king, we went away. Your brother gave me his confidence, I know what I owe him. I did not tell her what I thought about it, for fear of giving her any subject of complaint. He told a falsehood, and for this reason I hate him. I did laugh heartily, when I was in that company, but your niece was melancholic. Your friend took too much trouble, when we came to visit him. We did fight for our country and feared no dangers; we have been rewarded splendidly.

Physician,

dokter. m. Google

Illness,	<i>ziekte. f.</i>
To proceed from,	<i>voortkomen uit.</i>
Imprudence,	<i>onvoorzigtigheid.</i>
To come back,	<i>terugkomen.</i>
To go away,	<i>heengaan.</i>
Confidence,	<i>vertrouwen.</i>
To owe,	<i>schuldig zijn.</i>
To think about,	<i>denken van.</i>
Subject of complaint,	<i>reden van klagen.</i>
Falsehood,	<i>leugen.</i>
Heartily,	<i>hartelijk.</i>
Melancholic,	<i>droefgeestig.</i>
Trouble,	<i>moeite. f.</i>
To fight,	<i>vechten.</i>
To fear,	<i>vreezen.</i>
Splendidly,	<i>luisterrijk.</i>

N^o. 95.

Did he come back as soon as he could? Has your friend written his letters in due time? Will her sister persuade her? Had the judge absolved him already? Have you ground the razors? Have they pulled down the castles? Had he cheated you? Did he undertake that journey alone? Had they corrupted the morals of that youth? Have they not spoken too freely in that company? Should they have suffered patiently? Have you eaten sufficiently? Did he answer affirmatively? Did he come regularly twice a week? Has he done it secretly? They died miserably, as your friend has told us. Did they inquire minutely about that affair?

In due time,	<i>ter behoorlijker tijd.</i>
To persuade,	<i>overhalen.</i>
To absolve,	<i>vrijspreken.</i>
Judge,	<i>regter. m.</i>
To grind,	<i>slijpen.</i>
Razor,	<i>scheermes. n.</i>
To pull down,	<i>afbreken,</i>
Castle,	<i>kasteel. n.</i>
To cheat,	<i>bedriegen.</i>
To undertake a journey,	<i>eene reis ondernemen.</i>

To corrupt the morals,
 Freely,
 To suffer,
 Regularly,
 Secretly,
 Miserably,
 To inquire about,
 Minutely,

de zeden bederven.
vrijelijk.
lijden.
geregeld.
in het geheim.
ellendiglijk.
vragen naar.
naauwkeuriglijk.

N^o. 96.

I knew several persons who spoke as good french, as if they had been brought up in France. He ran for above two hours, but at last your brother overtook him, and brought him back. Let us fill our glasses and drink our friend's health. We beat the enemy, because our troops were better disciplined than his. If you knew her, I am certain she would please you. He explained us all that had passed, and we acknowledged we were in the wrong. The last time we went thither, we drank five bottles of wine. He contradicted me when I spoke, and therefore I went away. He spoke ill of his benefactors, was that not a meanness? He sent us the invoice of the goods, which he had omitted in his former letter.

As good as,
 To bring up,
 To run,
 For above two hours,
 To overtake,
 To bring back,
 To fill,
 To beat,
 Disciplined,
 To explain,
 To pass,
 To acknowledge,
 To speak ill,
 Benefactor,
 Meanness,
 Invoice,
 To omit,
 Former,

zoo goed als,
opvoeden.
loopen.
meer dan twee uren.
achterhalen.
terugbrengen.
vullen.
verstaan.
geoeffend.
uitleggen.
voorvallen.
bekennen.
kwaad spreken.
weldoener.
laagheid. f.
factuur. f.
vergeten.
voorgaande.

N°. 97c

We have read several times the history of England, and that of Russia. We shall read Marmontel's moral tales, as soon as we are ready. Why did they not abstain from wine, since it hurt them? He submitted to that punishment with the greatest patience and resignation. They admitted your friend in that society, because he is learned. The swallows disappeared towards the end of the autumn. The enemies have taken the town by storm, and have pillaged three days. These brave men have long enjoyed the glory they had acquired. Did he not appear much concerned at his son's death? I took your cousin for a foreigner the first time I saw him. Did vice not produce hatred and quarrels?

Several times,
Moral tales,
To abstain,
To hurt,
To submit,
Punishment,
Resignation,
To admit,
Society,
To disappear,
Towards,
By storm,
Brave,
To enjoy,
Concerned,
To take for a foreigner,
To produce,
Hatred,
Quarrel,

verscheidene malen.
zedelijke verhalen.
zich onthouden.
nadeel doen.
zich onderwerpen.
straf. f.
gelatenheid. f.
toelaten.
genootschap. n.
verdwijnen.
tegen.
stormenderhand.
dapper.
genieten.
bedroefd.
voor eenen vreemdeling houden.
voortbrengen.
haat. m.
twist. m.

N°. 98.

These children have not studied at all, they have

lost their time. They have undertaken to deceive him, but he perceived it. He was not pleased with his situation, he saw all the dangers of it. He seemed the most zealous, but he was not the most constant. They would have conquered the enemies, if they had fought better. We prevented that quarrel by our prudence and precaution. He revenged himself afterwards, and that grieved us very much. Socrates drank the himlock, without showing the least emotion. Jesus Christ came into the world to redeem sinners. That criminal has been condemned, without being heard. You have contributed much to our advantage; we are very much obliged to you.

Not at all,
To undertake,
To deceive,
To perceive,
Pleased,
To seem zealous,
Constant,
To conquer,
To fight,
To prevent,
Precaution,
To grieve,
Himlock,
Emotion,
To redeem,
To condemn,
To hear,
To contribute,

in het geheel niet.
ondernemen.
bedriegen.
bemerken.
tevreden.
ijverig schijnen.
standvastig.
overwinnen.
vechten.
voorkomen.
omzigtigheid.
bedroeven.
gifbeker, m.
ontroering.
verlossen.
veroordeelen.
verhooren.
toebrengen.

N^o. 99.

Alcibiades spent his youth in effeminacy and pleasures. Cadmus taught the Greeks the use of letters. The Romans always kept the sacred fire in the temple of Vesta, and when it was extinguished the chief priest kindled it again at the sun-beams. I have taken revenge of the harm they have done to me. Scipio Africanus used to say, that he would rather save the

life of one citizen, than defeat one hundred enemies. Marius was ill used by fortune; however he did not lose his courage. We have commended these pupils, because they have well studied the Roman history. I called your sister, but she did not hear me. At all times the number of the wicked has exceeded that of the good. He reproached the services he had rendered to them. Thevenot brought the coffee first to France in 1656.

To spend,
 Effeminacy,
 To teach,
 To keep,
 To extinguish,
 To kindle again.
 Sun-beams,
 To take revenge of,
 Harm,
 Used. To save,
 To defeat,
 Ill used,
 However,
 To commend,
 Roman,
 At all times,
 Wicked.
 To exceed,
 To reproach,

doorbrengen.
verwijfdheid. f.
onderwijzen.
onderhouden.
uitdooven.
weer aansteken.
zonnestralen.
wraak nemen over.
ongelijk. n.
plagt. Redden.
verstaan.
mishandeld.
echter; desniettemin.
prijzen.
romeinsch.
ten allen tijde.
goddelooze.
overtreffen.
verwijsten.

N°. 100.

The emperor Julian drove back the Barbarians from the frontiers of his empire. We removed the cause, and the effect ceased. We bore that injury, and felt how hard it is. I ordered the domesticks to cease their work, and to go to bed. If we knew all that is thought of us, we would be very sorry. Homer invented the fables of the Gods and demi-Gods. They looked upon their emperor as the greatest prince that ever reigned. If you had known in your youth the value of time, you would have employed it better. He gave himself up to the world, before he knew

it. He became never learned, because he did not study methodically. They helped their neighbours, and they did not insult them in their misfortune.

Julian,	<i>Julianus.</i>
To drive back,	<i>terugdrijven.</i>
Barbarians,	<i>barbaren.</i>
Frontiers,	<i>grenzen.</i>
To remove,	<i>wegnemen.</i>
To cease,	<i>ophouden.</i>
To bear an injury,	<i>eene belediging verdragen.</i>
To invent,	<i>uitvinden.</i>
Demi-Gods,	<i>halve-goden.</i>
To look upon one as,	<i>iemand aanzien als.</i>
To reign,	<i>regeren.</i>
Value,	<i>waarde.</i>
To employ,	<i>besteden.</i>
To give one's self up,	<i>zich overgeven aan.</i>
To become,	<i>worden.</i>
Methodically,	<i>geregeld.</i>
To insult,	<i>beledigen.</i>

N^o. 101.

Polybius compared peace to health, and war to a dangerous illness. Diana had her temple at Ephesus; Erostratus set it on fire, to make his name immortal; but the Ephesians defended, on pain of death, the very mention of his name. Palamedes invented the game of chess in the siege of Troy. We have scarcely begun to live, when we must think of dying. They were unfortunate, and did not fail to complain. You ought to strive to increase in wisdom. The emperor Peter the great took upon him to reform the nation. I disappeared as soon as he began to speak of his wealth and possessions. They spent the greater part of their life in doing nothing. You could not please him, because you did not endeavour to repress your passions.

To compare,	<i>vergelijken.</i>
Dangerous illness,	<i>gevaarlijke ziekte.</i>
To set on fire,	<i>in den brand steken.</i>
On pain of death,	<i>op doods straffe.</i>
The very mention,	<i>het noemen zelfs.</i>

Game of chess,	<i>schaakspel. n.</i>
Siege,	<i>beleg. n.</i>
Scarcely,	<i>naauwelijks.</i>
To think of,	<i>denken aan</i>
Unfortunate,	<i>ongelukkig.</i>
To fail,	<i>nalaten.</i>
To complain,	<i>klagen.</i>
You ought to strive,	<i>gij moest trachten.</i>
To encrease,	<i>vermeerderen.</i>
Took upon him.	<i>ondernam.</i>
To reform,	<i>hervormen,</i>
To disappear,	<i>verdwijnen.</i>
Wealth and possessions,	<i>rijkdom en bezittingen.</i>
In doing nothing,	<i>in ledigheid.</i>
To repress,	<i>overwinnen.</i>

 N°. 102.

We went home, because there remained nothing more to do. They gave themselves entirely up to their passions, and neglected their affairs. It depended on him to be happy, but he would not follow good advice. He maintained that we were all in the wrong, and therefore we were angry. Constantinopel was taken by the Turks in the fifteenth century. They submitted without reluctance to the law, and led a happy life. He received with equal moderation the praises and the criticism. She thought with exactedness, and expressed herself clearly. The passions should be subject to reason. Epaminondas, prince of Thebes, compared idle men to dead men. Your mother took good care of her family, and was respected by all those who knew her.

To remain,	<i>overblijven.</i>
To depend on,	<i>afhangen van.</i>
To maintain,	<i>beweren.</i>
To be in the wrong,	<i>ongelijk hebben.</i>
Angry,	<i>boos.</i>
To take,	<i>innemen.</i>
To submit,	<i>zich onderwerpen.</i>
Reluctance,	<i>tegenzin. n.</i>
To lead,	<i>lijden.</i>
Equal moderation,	<i>gelijke gematigdheid.</i>

Criticism,
Exactedness,
Clearly,
Subject,
Idle men,
To respect,

berisping. f.
naauwkeurigheid. f.
duidelijk.
onderworpen.
luijaards.
eerbiedigen.

N^o. 103.

Your brother was despised by him, and began to think of taking revenge. He compared hope to those fine trees, that bore no fruits. but gratified us with their shade. The Gods having sworn by the waters of the Styx, were obliged to keep their oath. The sea of Greenland is frozen during nine months. He was thought timorous, because he avoided danger. We explained to him every difficulty, but he was not satisfied. He forsook the bad company he kept, and applied himself to his studies. She did not cease to opportune me, till I had forgiven her. He appeared a zealous friend, but he deceived us. We went to the play with her and your sister, and came back at midnight. Your brother thought he was better informed, and had more experience than he.

Despised by,
To take revenge,
To compare,
To bear fruits,
To gratify,
Shade,
To swear,
To freeze,
Timorous,
To avoid,
To explain,
Difficulty,
To forsake,
To cease,
To opportune,
Zealous,
Informed,

veracht door.
wraak nemen.
vergelijken.
vruchten dragen.
begunstigen.
schaduw. f.
zweren.
vriezen.
vreesachtig.
vermijden.
uitleggen.
zwarigheid. f.
verlaten.
ophouden.
lastig vallen.
ijverig.
onderrigt.

Of Nouns of Number.

The nouns of number express the quantity of persons and things. They are divided in definite (*bepaalde*) and indefinite (*onbepaalde*) numbers.

The definite numbers are subdivided in:

1. *Grondgetallen*, cardinal numbers.
2. *Rangschikkende getallen*, ordinal numbers.
3. *Verzamelande getallen*, collective numbers.
4. *Herhalende getallen*, numbers of repetition.
5. *Verdelende getallen*, distributive numbers.
6. *Vermensgyuldigende getallen*, numbers of multiplication.

The cardinal numbers, from which all the other numbers derive, are:

<i>Een</i> , one.	<i>Negentien</i> , nineteen.
<i>Twee</i> , two.	<i>Twintig</i> , twenty.
<i>Drie</i> , three.	<i>En en twintig</i> , twenty one.
<i>Vier</i> , four.	<i>Twee en twintig</i> , twenty two.
<i>Vijf</i> , five.	<i>Negen en twintig</i> , twenty nine.
<i>Zes</i> , six.	<i>Dertig</i> , thirty.
<i>Zeven</i> , seven.	<i>Veertig</i> , forty.
<i>Acht</i> , eight.	<i>Vijftig</i> , fifty.
<i>Negen</i> , nine.	<i>Zestig</i> , sixty.
<i>Tien</i> , ten.	<i>Zeventig</i> , seventy.
<i>Elf</i> , eleven.	<i>Tachtig</i> , eighty.
<i>Twalf</i> , twelve.	<i>Negentig</i> , ninety.
<i>Dertien</i> , thirteen.	<i>Honderd</i> , hundred.
<i>Veertien</i> , fourteen.	<i>Honderd en een</i> , hundred one.
<i>Vijftien</i> , fifteen.	<i>Twee honderd</i> , two hundred.
<i>Zesien</i> , sixteen.	<i>Duizend</i> , thousand.
<i>Zeventien</i> , seventeen.	
<i>Achtien</i> , eighteen.	

The number *een*, one, is declined like the indefinite article *een*.

Masculine.

Singular.

1. *de eene*, the one.
2. *van den eenen*, of, *des eenen*, of the one.
3. *den eenen*, of, *aan den eenen*, to the one.
4. *den eenen*, the one.

Feminine.

Singular.

1. *de eene*, the one.
2. *der eene*, *van de eene*, of the one.
3. *der eene*, *aan de eene*, to the one.
4. *de eene*, the one.

Neuter.

Singular.

1. *het eene*, the one.
2. *des eenen*, *van het eene*, of the one.
3. *den eenen*, *aan het eene*, to the one.
4. *het eene*, the one.

Preceded by a pronoun it is declined thus:

1. *deze eene held*, this single hero.
2. *van dezen eenen held*, of *dezes eenen holds*, of this single hero.
3. *aan dezen*, of, *dezen eenen held*, to this single hero.
4. *dezen eenen held*, this single hero.

It is the same with the possessive pronoun, as: *mijn eene kind*; but it is better to say: *een mijner kinderen*, one of my children. *Haar eene paard*, better, *een harer paarden*, one of her horses.

The other numbers are susceptible of a single inflexion: when the are preceded by a preposition, the syllable *en* is added to them, f. i.

Wij zijn met ons vieren, we are four.
Zij waren met hun achten, they were eight.
In twaalfen deelen, to divide into twelve parts.
Zij komen met duizenden they come by thousands.
toeloopen.

<i>Kwartier over zesfen,</i>	a quarter past six.
<i>Twaalf minuten voor vijven,</i>	twelve minutes before five.
<i>Bij tienfen,</i>	about ten o'clock.
<i>Na drieën,</i>	after three o'clock.

The cardinal numbers are sometimes used like substantives, as: *eene zeven*, a seven; *twee tweeën*, duce; *eene vijf*, a five.

Ordinal numbers.

Rangschikkende getallen.

<i>De eerste,</i>	the first.
<i>De tweede,</i>	the second.
<i>De derde,</i>	the third.
<i>De vierde,</i>	the fourth.
<i>De vijfde,</i>	the fifth.
<i>De zesde,</i>	the sixth.
<i>De zevende,</i>	the seventh.
<i>De achste,</i>	the eight.
<i>De negende,</i>	the ninth.
<i>De tiende,</i>	the tenth.
<i>De zestiende,</i>	the sixteenth.
<i>De twintigste,</i>	the twintieth.
<i>De dertigste,</i>	the thirtieth.
<i>De honderdste,</i>	the hundredth.
<i>De duizendste,</i>	the thousandth.
<i>De honderd achttiende,</i>	the hundred and eighteenth.

These numbers are declined like the adnouns, as:

Masculine.

Mannelijk.

1. *de vierde leerling*, the fourth pupil.
2. *van den vierden, of, des vierden leerlings*, of the fourth pupil.
3. *aan den, of, den vierden leerling*, to the fourth pupil.
4. *den vierden leerling*, the fourth pupil.

Feminine.

Vrouwelijk.

1. *de zesde tafel*, the sixth table.

2. *van de, of, der zesde tafel*, of the sixth table.
3. *aan de, of, der zesde tafel*, to the sixth table.
4. *de zesde tafel*, the sixth table.

The word *half, halve*, half, joined to a cardinal number, has the following significations:

- Anderhalf*, one and a half.
Derdhalf, two and a half.
Vierdhalf, three and a half.
Vijfthalf, four and a half.
Zesthalf, five and a half.
Zevendhalf, six and a half.
Achthalf, seven and a half.
Negendhalf, eight and a half.
Twaalfthalf, eleven and a half.
Twintigthalf, nineteen and a half.

Half, half, is also declined, as appears from the following phrases:

- Ik betaal zevendhalven stuiver,* I pay six pence and a half.
Hij ontvangt twaalfthalven gulden. He receives eleven guilders and a half.

When we speak of the time of the day, the word *half* is put before the number.

- Het is half drie,* it is half an hour past two o'clock.
Het was half vier, it was half an hour past three o'clock.
Het staat half twaalf, it strikes half an hour past eleven.

Collective Numbers. *Verzamelende Getallen.*

The collective numbers express a certain collection of persons or things, as:

- Een paar*, a couple, two, a pair.
Een dozijn, a dozen.
Het honderd, a hundred.

- Het duizend*, a thousand.
Een twintigtal, a score, or twenty.
Een dertigtal, thirty.
Een zestigtal, sixty.
Een honderdtal, hundred.

To these belong also the numbers in the decimal progression, as :

- De eenheid*, the unity.
De tienheden, tens.
Honderdheden, hundreds.
Duizendheden, thousands.
De millioenen, millions.

Distributive Numbers.

Verdeelende Getallen.

The distributive numbers express the different parties of the whole, as :

- De helft*, the half.
Een derde, een derde deel, a third part.
Een vierde, een vierde deel, a fourth part.
Een vijfde, een vijfde deel, a fifth part.
Een zesde, een zesde gedeelte, a sixth part.
Een tiende, een tiende gedeelte, a tenth part.
Een zestiende, een zestiende gedeelte, a sixteenth part.
Een honderdste, a hundredth part.

We may add those, which express the different classes of things, as :

- Eenerlei*, of the same sort.
Tweederlei, of two sorts.
Drieërlei, of three sorts.
Vierderlei, of four sorts.
Vijfderlei, of five sorts.
Zesderlei, of six sorts.
Zevenderlei, of seven sorts.
Achtderlei, of eight sorts.
Negenderlei, of nine sorts.
Tienderlei, of ten sorts.

Mark these phrases:

- In tweeën deelen*, to divide into two parts.
In vieren deelen, to divide into four parts.
In zesfen deel n, to divide into six parts.
In twintigen deelen, to divide into twenty parts.

Numbers of repetition.

Herhalende getallen.

The numbers of repetition are divided in two sorts. Those of the first sort are compounded of the cardinal numbers, and the word *maal*, as:

- Eenmaal*, *Eens*, once.
Tweemaal, twice, two times.
Driemaal, thrice, three times.
Viermaal, four times.
Vijfmaal, five times.
Zesmaal, six times.
Zevenmaal, seven times.
Achtmaal, eight times.
Negenmaal, nine times.
Tienmaal, ten times.

Those of the second sort are compounded of the ordinal numbers and the word *maal*, as:

- De eerste maal*, the first time.
De tweede maal, the second time.
De derde maal, the third time.
De vierde maal, the fourth time.
De vijfde maal, the fifth time. etc.

Sometimes an adnoun is formed of these numbers, f. i. *mijn driemaalig bezoek*, my visit repeated three times.

Numbers of multiplication.

Vermenigvuldigende Getallen.

These numbers express the progressive augmentation of the number of things, as:

- Dubbeld*, double.
Drievoudig, threefold.

Viervoudig, fourfold.
Viervoudig, fivefold.
Zesvoudig, sixfold.
Zevenvoudig, sevenfold.
Achttvoudig, eightfold.
Tienvoudig, tenfold.
Honderdvoudig, hundredfold.

Indefinite Numbers.

Onbepaalde Getallen.

The indefinite numbers are: *al*, *alle*, all; *veel*, *vele*, many, much; *weinig*, little, few; *eenige*, some; *sommige*, some; *ieder*, every one; *elk*, every body.

Al, followed by a definite article or a possessive pronoun, is indeclinable, as:

<i>Al de scholen,</i>	all the schools.
<i>Al het volk,</i>	all the people.
<i>Al mijne vrienden,</i>	all my friends.
<i>Al zijne boeken,</i>	all his books.
<i>Al uwe bezittingen,</i>	all your possessions.

Alle is also joined to the cardinal numbers.

<i>Ik ken hen alle vier,</i>	I know them all four.
<i>Zij komen alle zes,</i>	they come all six.

It is also used for *every one*, *all men*.

Alle hebben het gedaan, they have done it all.

In this sense it is sometimes placed in the genitive case, as:

<i>Aller oogen zijn op hem ge- vestigd.</i>	they eyes of every one are fixed on him.
---	---

Sometimes it is neuter, and signifies *every thing*.

<i>Wij hooren alles,</i>	we hear every thing.
<i>Alles wat gij zegt,</i>	all you say.

It is used in stead of *elk*, each, every.

Alle uur, every hour.

Alle dag, every day.
Alle oogenblik, at every moment.

Elk, menig, ieder, eenig, joined to substantives, are declined as adnouns, f. i. *elk man*, every man, *elken mans*, of every man; *elken man, aan elken man*, to every man; *elken man*, every man.

Veel en weinig are often followed by the substantive in the genitive case, as:

Zij had niet veel tijds, She had not much time.
Geef mij een weinig waters, give me a little water.

But when the substantive is of the feminine gender, the genitive is not expressed, as:

Hij brengt haar een weinig koffij, He brings her a little coffee.
Zij vraagt veel thee, She asks much téa.

Veel and *weinig*, have degrees of comparison, as: positive: *veel, weinig*; comparative: *meer, minder*; superlative: *meest, most; minst, least*.

The comparatives *meer* and *minder*, without article and pronoun, are also followed by the genitive, as:

Hij had meer wijns, He had more wine.
Zij heeft minder gelds, She has less money.

Vele is also sometimes placed in the genitive.

Veler goederen, The goods of many persons.

Velen en weinigen are used like substantives, as:

Velen gelooven het niet, Many persons do not believe it.
Weinigen zullen daar komen. Few people will come there.

The comparatives *meer en minder* are also used like substantives:

Hij gehoorzaamt zijnen meerderen. He obeys his superiors.
Hij beklagt zich over zijne minderen. He complains of his inferiors.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the nouns of numbers.

N^o. 104.

Four times four is sixteen. Four times five is twenty. Six times six is thirty six. Six times seven is forty two. Seven times eight is fifty six. Seven times nine is sixty three. Eight times eight is sixty four. Nine times nine is eighty one. Ten times ten is hundred. Ten times hundred is thousand. He brings us twenty five books, twelve charts, and thirty new made pens. He owes me hundred and ten pounds. You have paid him three hundred and seventeen pounds. Bring us seven bottles of wine, bread and butter.

Times,
Chart,
New made,
To owe,

maal. n.
kaart. f.
nieuw vermaakt.
schuldig zijn.

N^o. 105.

He was in the company of twelve gentlemen, and ten ladies. He had a hundred guineas, and lent him eighty seven. The army of the Russians was composed of two hundred thousand men of foot, and seventy thousand of horse. Our allies have taken thirty three thousand men prisoners, have killed seven thousand six hundred, and wounded twelve thousand men. The battle of Waterloo was fought in one thousand eight hundred and fifteen. The first of November is all-faints-day. Your father will come on the twenty-seventh of February, and set out again the thirteenth of April.

Company,

gezelschap. n.

Lady,	<i>dame.</i>
Guins,	<i>gienjes.</i>
The Russians,	<i>de Rusfen.</i>
Was composed,	<i>bestond uit.</i>
Foot,	<i>voetvolk. n.</i>
Horse,	<i>paardenvolk. n.</i>
The allies,	<i>de bondgenooten.</i>
To take prisoner,	<i>gevangen nemen.</i>
To kill, to wound,	<i>dooden, wonden.</i>
Was fought,	<i>viel voor.</i>
All-saints-day,	<i>allerheiligen.</i>
To set out again,	<i>weer afreizen.</i>

N^o. 106.

When your grandfather died he was at least eighty years old. I received the day before yesterday, by the last mail, six letters well sealed, and very interesting. Our friend will come and see us on the ninth of next month. He has found a purse in which there were three hundred guilders. The spring begins on the twenty first or twenty second of April. He cannot spend the third part of his fortune, he is very rich. America was discovered in one thousand four hundred ninety two, by Colomb. The Ladrones, or isles of Robbers, were discovered by Magellaan, in one thousand five hundred twenty one.

To die,	<i>sterven.</i>
At least,	<i>ten minste.</i>
By the last mail,	<i>met de laatste post.</i>
To seal,	<i>verzegelen.</i>
Interesting,	<i>belangrijk.</i>
Will come and see us,	<i>zal ons komen bezoeken.</i>
Purse,	<i>beurs. f.</i>
In which there were,	<i>waarin waren.</i>
To spend,	<i>verteren.</i>
Fortune,	<i>vermogen.</i>
To discover,	<i>ontdekken.</i>
The Ladrones,	<i>de Ladronen.</i>
Isles of robbers,	<i>dieven eilanden.</i>

N^o. 107.

Edward the sixth, the son of Henry the eighth, and the grandson of Henry the seventh, was but nine years old when he began to reign. Charles the fifth king of Spain, and Sixtus the fifth, pope of Rome, were two great men. We read in Telemachus, book the seventh, page the hundred and thirtieth. We found it in the second book, chapter the third, vers the fourth, and line the thirteenth. Our master forgave us the first time, threatened us the second, but punished us the third. Henry the fifth, married Catharine, the daughter of Charles the sixth, king of France.

Edward,
Nine years old,
To reign,
Pope of Rome,
Chapter the third,
To forgive,
To threaten,
Catharine,

Eduard.
negen jaar oud.
regeren.
paus van Rome.
het derde hoofddeel.
vergeven.
bedreigen.
Catharina.

N^o. 108.

Our earth moves itself round the sun in three hundred sixty five days, five hours, forty eight minutes, and forty five seconds. The earth has also a diurnal movement, in twenty four hours round its own axis. The sun is about 1,400,000 times greater than the earth, and five hundred times greater than all the planets taken together. Our earth, which seems so vast in our eyes, and whose diameter is about 1720 miles, is yet nearly a thousand times smaller than Jupiter. The distance of our earth from the sun is 20,000,000 of miles. The moon is fifty times smaller than the earth.

Moves itself,

beweegt zich. Google

Second,	<i>seconde. f.</i>
Round,	<i>rondom.</i>
Diurnal movement,	<i>dagelijksche beweging. f.</i>
Its own axis,	<i>hare eigene as.</i>
Taken together,	<i>zamengenomen.</i>
To seem vast,	<i>groot schijnen.</i>
Diameter,	<i>middellijn. f.</i>
Is yet,	<i>is echter.</i>
Nearly,	<i>omtrent.</i>
Distance,	<i>afstand. m.</i>
Smaller.	<i>kleiner.</i>

N°. 109.

The earth has one satellite; Jupiter four, Saturn seven and Uranus six. The circumference of the earth is three hundred sixty degrees, each degree containing fifteen geographical miles. Europe is the most distinguished quarter of the globe, though it be certainly the smallest, having 160,000 square leagues in surface. The number of its inhabitants amounts to 180,000,000. Asia is seven thousand five hundred english miles long, and five thousand two hundred miles broad, and has almost five hundred millions of inhabitants. Marco Polo, the Venetian, travelled in Asia, in the end of thirteenth century. Java is an extensive island, about 650 British miles in length, by about 100 of medial breadth.

Satellite,	<i>wachter. m.</i>
Saturn,	<i>Saturnus.</i>
Circumference,	<i>omtrek. m.</i>
Degree,	<i>graad. m.</i>
Containing,	<i>bevattende.</i>
Geographical,	<i>geographisch.</i>
Most distinguished,	<i>aanmerkelijkst.</i>
Square leagues,	<i>vierkante mijlen.</i>
Surface,	<i>oppervlakte.</i>
To amount,	<i>beloopen.</i>
Venetian,	<i>Venetiaan.</i>
To travel,	<i>reizen.</i>
Century,	<i>eeuw. f.</i>
Extensive,	<i>groot, uitgebreid.</i>
Medial,	<i>middelmatig.</i>

N^o. 110.

The discovery of America is generally ascribed to Colon, or as commonly called Columbus. He sailed from Spain, in quest of the new world, on Friday the third of August, 1492. On the first of October he was, by his reckoning, seven hundred seventy leagues west of the Canaries. His men began to mutiny, and he was forced to promise to return in three days, if land did not appear. With the dawn of Friday, the twelfth October, they discovered a beautiful isle, two leagues to the north, which Columbus called *San Salvador*. Soon afterwards he discovered Cuba and St. Domingo, and returned at Lisbon on the fourth of March 1493.

Discovery,	<i>ontdekking. f.</i>
To ascribe,	<i>toeschrijven.</i>
Commonly called,	<i>gewoonlijk genoemd.</i>
To sail,	<i>zeilen.</i>
In quest of the new world,	<i>om de nieuwe wereld op te zoeken.</i>
The Canaries,	<i>de Kanarische eilanden.</i>
To mutiny,	<i>muiten.</i>
Forced,	<i>genoodzaakt.</i>
To appear,	<i>verschijnen.</i>
With the dawn,	<i>met het aanbreken.</i>
Soon afterwards,	<i>weldra daarna.</i>

N^o. 111.

The second voyage of Columbus began on the twenty fifth of September 1493. He discovered several of the Caribbee islands, founded a town in St Domingo, the first european settlement in the new world, and did not return till 1496. His third voyage was in 1498, when he discovered the island of Trinidad, not far from the mouth of the river Oronoco. Accused by slanderers and envious persons, he was sent back

to Spain in chains in 1500. Amerigo Vespucci, a Florentine, sailed thither in 1499, and from him this part of the world is called America. After many reports concerning the riches of Peru, that country was at last visited by Pizarro in 1526. In 1543 the Spanish viceroy appeared in Peru.

Several.
Caribbee islands,
To found,
Settlement,
Mouth,
To accuse,
Slanderer,
Envious persons,
In chains,
From him,
Report,
Concerning,
To visit,
Spanish viceroy,
To appear,

verschide.
Caribbische eijlanden.
Stic'ten.
vastig'heid. f.
mond. m.
beschuldigen.
kwaad'spreker.
nijdig'aards.
in Ketenen.
naar hem.
berigt.
betreffende.
bezoeken.
Spaansche onderkoning.
verschijnen.

N°. 112.

The Russian empire is, perhaps, the most extensive that ever appeared; the length being about nine thousand two hundred english miles, and the breadth two thousand four hundred. In the sixteenth century Russia first attracted the observation of enlightened Europe. The great founder of the Russian power was Ivan the fourth, who reigned from 1534 to 1584, and subdued the former kingdom of Astracan. The population of Russia is estimated at fourty millions. The ancient capital of this empire is Moscow. The new capital is Petersburg, the imperial residence, with two hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants. The canal of Ladoga extends almost seventy miles:

Perhaps,
Extensive,
That ever appeared,

welligt.
uitgebreid.
dat ooit bestaan heeft.

To attract the observation,	<i>de aandacht tot zich trekken.</i>
Enlightened,	<i>verlicht.</i>
Founder,	<i>stichter.</i>
To reign,	<i>regeren.</i>
To subdue,	<i>ten onder brengen.</i>
Tartar kingdom,	<i>Tartaarsch koningrijk.</i>
Population,	<i>bevolking.</i>
To estimate,	<i>berekenen.</i>
Ancient capital,	<i>oude hoofdstad.</i>
Imperial residence,	<i>keizerlijke residentie.</i>
Canal,	<i>kanaal.</i>
To extend.	<i>zich uitsprekken.</i>

N^o. 113.

The island of Great Britain extends from fifty to fifty eight and a half degrees of north latitude, being about five hundred geographical miles in length. Its greatest breadth, from the land's end to the north foreland in Kent, is three hundred and twenty geographical miles. The extent of England and Wales, in square miles, is computed at fifty eight thousand three hundred; and the population being estimated at nine millions, five hundred thousand three hundred, the number of inhabitants to a square mile will be about hundred sixty two. England proper is divided into forty counties or shires, and the principality of Wales into twelve, thus making the whole number fifty two.

To extend,	<i>zich uitsprekken.</i>
North latitude,	<i>noorder breedte.</i>
Foreland,	<i>voorgebergte. n.</i>
Wales,	<i>Wallis.</i>
Computed,	<i>berekend.</i>
Population,	<i>bevolking.</i>
England proper,	<i>het eigenlijke Engeland.</i>
County or shire,	<i>graafschap. n.</i>
Principality,	<i>prinsdom. n.</i>
Making the whole number,	<i>makende het geheele getal.</i>

London, the metropolis of England, is situated in an extensive plain or valley, watered by the Thames, which is, here about, four hundred forty yards in breadth. The population of this city has by some been exaggerated to a million of souls; but by the late enumeration it contains about eight hundred sixty thousand. London requires in one year hundred thousand beeves, seven hundred thousand sheep, with calves and pigs in proportion. The vegetables and fruits annually consumed are valued at a million sterling. The churches and chapels exceed two hundred in number, and a few are of beautiful architecture.

London,
Metropolis,
Is situated,
Plain,
Valley,
Thames,
To exaggerate,
Enumeration,
To contain,
To require,
Pig,
In proportion,
Vegetables,
Annually,
To value,
Chapel,
Architecture,

Londen.
hoofdstad. f.
is gelegen.
vlakte. f.
vallei. f.
Theems.
overdrijven.
telling. f.
bevatten.
vereischen.
varken.
in evenredigheid. f.
groenten. f.
jaarlijks.
schatten.
kapel. f.
bouworde. f.

N^o. 115.

The branch of York in England began with Edward the fourth. His succesor, Edward the fifth, and the duke of York his brother, were most inhumanly murdered by order of their uncle, who, at their death, ascended the throne, with the title of Richard the third. The differences between the houses of York and Lancaster were terminated under Henry the seventh. The moors were compelled to evacuate Spain in 1492, by the capture of Grenada. Cardinal Richelieu, minister of Lewis the thirteenth of France, very much encreas-

ed the royal power. A great plague raged in London, during the reign of James the first.

Branch,	<i>tak. m.</i>
Succesor,	<i>opvolger.</i>
To murder inhumany,	<i>onmenschelijk vermoorden.</i>
By order,	<i>op bevel.</i>
To ascend the throne,	<i>den troon beklimmen.</i>
With the title,	<i>onder den titel.</i>
Difference,	<i>verschil.</i>
To terminate,	<i>eindigen.</i>
Moors,	<i>Mooren.</i>
To compell,	<i>noodzaken.</i>
To evacuate,	<i>ontruimen.</i>
The capture,	<i>het innemen.</i>
To encrease,	<i>vermeerderen.</i>
Royal power,	<i>koninklijke magt.</i>
A plague raged,	<i>oene pest woedde.</i>

Of Adverbs.

Van de Bijwoorden.

The word *adverb* signifies *joined to a verb*. Its use is to determine the signification of an action; or to express some particular modification or circumstance of the verb.

According to the expression the adverbs are divided into two sorts: *oorspronkelijke*, primitive, and *afgeleide*, derivative.

The primitive adverbs are: *hier*, here; *ja*, yes; *neen*, no; *niet*, not.

The derivative are: *wijselijk*, wisely, from; *wijs*, wise; *zekerlijk*, certainly, from; *zeker*, certain; *voorzigtiglijk*, prudently, from; *voorzigtig*, prudent.

They are also divided into *enkelvoudig*, simple, and *zamengesteld*, compounded. To the former belong: *zelden*, seldom; *dikwijls*, often; *certijds*, formerly. — To the latter: *tot hiertoe*, hitherto; *in kort*, in short; *van waar*, from whence, etc.

According to their signification the adverbs are divided into the following ten sorts:

<i>Bijwoorden van tijd,</i>	Adverbs of time.
<i>van plaats,</i>	of place.
<i>van hoeveelheid,</i>	of quantity.
<i>van hoedanigheid,</i>	of quality.
<i>van bevestiging,</i>	of affirmation.
<i>van ontkenning,</i>	of negation.
<i>van twijfeling,</i>	of doubting.
<i>van vergelijking,</i>	of comparifon.
<i>van ondervraging,</i>	of interrogation.
<i>van orde,</i>	of order.

Bijwoorden van tijd.

Adverbs of time.

<i>Gisteren,</i>	Yesterday.
<i>Wanneer,</i>	When.
<i>Laat,</i>	Late.
<i>Van daag,</i>	To day.
<i>Eergisteren,</i>	The day before yesterday.
<i>Morgen,</i>	To morrow.
<i>Overmorgen,</i>	The day after to morrow.
<i>Eerstdaags,</i>	The first day.
<i>Bij dag,</i>	By day.
<i>Bij nacht,</i>	By night.
<i>Dagelijks,</i>	Daily.
<i>Den volgenden dag,</i>	The following day.
<i>'sAnderen daags,</i>	The other day.
<i>'sMorgens,</i>	In the morning.
<i>'sAvonds,</i>	In the evening.
<i>'sMiddags,</i>	At noon.
<i>'sNamiddags,</i>	In the afternoon.
<i>Altijd,</i>	Always.
<i>Bij helderen dag,</i>	At broad day.
<i>'s nachts,</i>	At night.
<i>Gister avond,</i>	Yesterday evening.
<i>Daags te voren,</i>	The day before.
<i>Voor den middag,</i>	Before noon.
<i>Morgen ochtend,</i>	To morrow morning.
<i>Na het avondeten,</i>	After supper.
<i>Maandelijks,</i>	Monthly.

<i>Wekelijks,</i>	Weekly, every week.
<i>Jaarlijks,</i>	Yearly, every year.
<i>Dikwijls,</i>	Often, often times.
<i>Zelden,</i>	Seldom,
<i>Straks,</i>	Presently,
<i>Van tijd tot tijd,</i>	From time to time.
<i>Wanneer,</i>	When.
<i>Tegenwoordig,</i>	At present.
<i>Nu,</i>	Now,
<i>Van nu af aan,</i>	From to day.
<i>Oogenblikkelijk,</i>	Instantly.
<i>Ten eerste,</i>	Presently.
<i>Terstond,</i>	Immediately.
<i>Eertijds,</i>	Formerly.
<i>Oudtijds,</i>	Anciently.
<i>Voor dezen,</i>	Of old.
<i>Voorheen,</i>	Before this.
<i>Laatst,</i>	Lately.
<i>Voortaan,</i>	Henceforth.
<i>Dan,</i>	Then.
<i>Zonder uitstel,</i>	Without delay.
<i>Ten langste,</i>	At the longest.
<i>Onverwachts,</i>	Unawares.
<i>Ten ontijde,</i>	Proposterously.
<i>Eindelijk,</i>	At last.
<i>Vroeg,</i>	Early.
<i>Plotfelijk,</i>	Suddenly.
<i>Onvoorziens,</i>	Unawares.
<i>Spoedig,</i>	Speedily.
<i>Weldra,</i>	Soon.
<i>In haast,</i>	In a hurry.
<i>In korten tijd,</i>	In short time.
<i>Eeuwiglijk,</i>	Eternally, for ever.
<i>Zonder ophouden,</i>	continually.
<i>Onophoudelijk,</i>	Incesantly.
<i>Zeer laat,</i>	Very late, extremely late.
<i>Toekomende week,</i>	Next week.
<i>Verledene week,</i>	Past week.
<i>Sedert een uur,</i>	Since an hour.
<i>Sedert dezen morgen vroeg,</i>	Since this morning.
<i>Op het oogenblik,</i>	At the moment.
<i>In kort,</i>	In short.
<i>Na dezen,</i>	Hereafter.

Tot hiertoe,
Hoe eerder hoe beter,
Niet zelden,
Nooit,
Vervolgens,
Vroeg en laat,
Intusfchen,

Hitherto.
the sooner, the better.
Not seldom.
Never.
Afterwards.
Early and late.
In the mean while.

Bijwoorden van plaats.

Adverbs of Place.

Waar,
Hier,
Daar,
Ver,
Van waar,
Hieruit,
Nergens,
Overal,
Boven,
Beneden,
Daar boven,
Daar beneden,
Van binnen,
Van buiten,
Ergens,
Hierin,
Daarin,
Van achteren,
Van voren,
Afwezend,
Aan den anderen kant,
Ver van hier,
Hier heen,
Daar heen,
In het midden,
Regts,
Links,
Regts en links,
Nergens heen,
Naar achteren,
Tusfchen beiden,

Where.
Here.
There.
Far.
From whence.
From this.
No where.
Every where.
Above.
Below.
There above.
There below.
From within.
From without.
Every where, some where.
Herein.
Therein.
From behind.
From before.
Absent.
At the other side.
Far from here.
Hither.
Thither.
In the midst.
At the right hand.
At the left hand.
Right and lefthanded.
No where.
Backward.
Betwixt.

<i>Regt uit,</i>	Straight along.
<i>Nabij,</i>	Near.
<i>Van boven,</i>	From above.
<i>Van beneden,</i>	From below.
<i>Tegenover,</i>	Over against.
<i>Dwars over,</i>	Across.
<i>Zoo ver,</i>	So far.
<i>Van alle kanten,</i>	From all parts.
<i>Van beide kanten,</i>	From both sides.
<i>Door en door,</i>	Thoroughly.
<i>Elders,</i>	Somewhere else.
<i>Achter,</i>	Behind.
<i>Ter zijde,</i>	Besides.
<i>Hieronder,</i>	Here under.
<i>Regt toe,</i>	Down-right.
<i>Tot beneden toe,</i>	Till below.
<i>Tot het einde toe,</i>	Till the end.

Bijwoorden van hoeveelheid.

Adverbs of quantity.

<i>Alles,</i>	All.
<i>Weinig,</i>	Little, few.
<i>Veel,</i>	Much, many.
<i>Niet veel,</i>	Not much.
<i>Genoeg,</i>	Enough.
<i>Zeer weinig,</i>	Very little.
<i>Een weinigje,</i>	A little.
<i>In menigte,</i>	In multitude.
<i>Ontzettend veel,</i>	Extremely much.
<i>Al te veel,</i>	Too much, too many.
<i>Meer of minder,</i>	More or less.
<i>Ten minste,</i>	At least.
<i>Dubbel,</i>	Double.
<i>Overvloediglijk,</i>	Abundantly, plentifully.
<i>Oneindiglijk,</i>	Infinitely.
<i>Geheellijk,</i>	Wholly.
<i>Allengskens,</i>	Gradually.

Bijwoorden van hoedanigheid.

Adverbs of quality.

<i>Goed,</i>	Well.
<i>Slecht,</i>	Bad.
<i>Voorzigtiglijk,</i>	Prudently.
<i>Opregtelijk,</i>	Sincerely.
<i>Vrijwilliglijk,</i>	Voluntarily.
<i>Treuriglijk,</i>	Mournfully.
<i>Bedriegelijk,</i>	Deceitfully.
<i>Geweldiglijk,</i>	By force.
<i>Heimelijk,</i>	Secretly.
<i>Kunstiglijk,</i>	Artificially.
<i>Affschuwelijk,</i>	Horribly.
<i>Aangenaam,</i>	Agreeably.
<i>Openlijk,</i>	Plainly.
<i>Gemakkelijk,</i>	Easily.
<i>Redelijk,</i>	Reasonably.
<i>Zacht,</i>	Softly.
<i>Gewoonlijk,</i>	Ordinarily.
<i>Van kwaad tot erger,</i>	From bad to worse.
<i>Met regt,</i>	Justly.
<i>Ten onregte,</i>	Unjustly.
<i>Met geweld,</i>	By force.
<i>Ongaarne,</i>	Unwillingly.
<i>Billijk,</i>	Equitably.
<i>Voorbedachtelijk,</i>	Designedly.
<i>Onbedachtzaam,</i>	Inconsiderately.
<i>Eerlijk,</i>	Honestly.
<i>Immer beter,</i>	Better and better.
<i>Zoo veel te erger,</i>	So much the worse.
<i>Te land,</i>	By land.
<i>Te water,</i>	By water.
<i>Te paard,</i>	On horseback.
<i>In orde,</i>	In order, orderly.

Bijwoorden van bevestiging.

Adverbs of affirmation.

<i>Ja,</i>	Yes,
<i>Zeker,</i>	To be sure.

<i>Zekerlijk,</i>	Sure, surely.
<i>Gewis,</i>	Certainly.
<i>Waarlijk,</i>	Truly.
<i>In waarheid,</i>	In truth.
<i>Werkelijk,</i>	Really.
<i>Op mijn woord,</i>	Upon my word, by my truth, yes faith.
<i>Op mijne eer,</i>	Upon my honour.
<i>Waarachtig,</i>	Faith.
<i>Gewisfelijk,</i>	Certainly.
<i>Op mijn gewsten,</i>	Upon my conscience.
<i>Onfeilbaar,</i>	Infallibly.

Bijwoorden van ontkenning.

Adverbs of negation

<i>Neen,</i>	No.
<i>Noch,</i>	Neither.
<i>Niets,</i>	Nothing.
<i>Niet,</i>	Not.
<i>Geen,</i>	No.
<i>Nog niet,</i>	Not yet.
<i>Niet meer,</i>	No more.
<i>In het tegendeel,</i>	On the contrary.
<i>Geenszins,</i>	By no means.
<i>In het geheel niet,</i>	Not at all.
<i>Niet geheellijk,</i>	Not totally.
<i>Ook niet,</i>	Neither.

Bijwoorden van twijfeling.

Adverbs of doubting.

<i>Mogelijk,</i>	Possibly.
<i>Misfchien,</i>	} Perhaps.
<i>Veelligt,</i>	
<i>Zoo niet,</i>	If not.
<i>Bezwaarlijk,</i>	Difficultly.
<i>Niet zeker,</i>	Not sure.

Bijwoorden van vergelijking.

Adverbs of comparison.

<i>Meer,</i>	More.
<i>Minder,</i>	Less.
<i>Het minst,</i>	The least.
<i>Naauwelijks,</i>	Hardly.
<i>Ten meeste,</i>	At most.
<i>Op zijn hoogst,</i>	At most.
<i>Ook,</i>	Too, also.
<i>Zoo veel,</i>	So much.
<i>Te meer,</i>	So much the more.
<i>Hoe,</i>	How.
<i>Noch meer, noch minder,</i>	Neither more, nor less.

Bijwoorden van ondervraging.

Adverbs of interrogation.

<i>Wanneer,</i>	When.
<i>Waarom,</i>	Why.
<i>Hoe,</i>	How.
<i>Sedert wanneer,</i>	Since when.
<i>Hoe veel,</i>	How much.

Bijwoorden van orde.

Adverbs of order.

<i>Eerstelijk,</i>	Firstly.
<i>Ten eerste,</i>	At first.
<i>Ten tweede,</i>	Secondly.
<i>Eindelijk,</i>	At last.
<i>Ten laatste,</i>	Finally.
<i>Voor alles,</i>	Before all.
<i>Achtereen,</i>	Successively.
<i>Aanvankelijk,</i>	At first.
<i>Daarna,</i>	Afterwards.

EXERCICES,

upon the adverbs.

Your friend can do that easily. You may speak freely, nobody hears you; we are alone. Why did he not act prudently; I have warned him several times. Your brother should have answered wisely, if he had not been troubled. My unhappy mother suffered patiently, every one pitied her. I consent willingly to it, on condition that you perform your duty. These peasants come regularly twice a week, to sell their wares, and to buy coffee and tea. He seldom reads, and that is the cause of his ignorance. Our garden produces all kinds of fruits plentifully.

Easily,	<i>gemakkelijk.</i>
You may,	<i>gij kunt, gij moogt.</i>
Alone,	<i>alleen.</i>
To act,	<i>handelen.</i>
Prudently,	<i>voorzigtiglijk.</i>
To warn,	<i>waarschuwen.</i>
Several times,	<i>verscheidene malen.</i>
Patiently,	<i>geduldiglijk.</i>
To pity,	<i>beklagen.</i>
To consent,	<i>toestemmen.</i>
Willingly,	<i>gaarne.</i>
Regularly,	<i>geregeld.</i>
Twice,	<i>tweemaal.</i>
Seldom,	<i>zelden.</i>
To produce,	<i>voortbrengen.</i>
Plentifully,	<i>overvloediglijk.</i>

N°. 116.

Go straight along, and you will find it presently. He speaks at every turn, without knowing what he

says. They acted frankly; and spoke aloud. I will follow her where ever she goes. These children grow perceptibly. Go with all speed to Master Dunghill, and tell him to come directly. Misfortunes come sometimes suddenly upon us. Speak softly, she is very ill. Stay a little, my father will come back by and by, and he wants to speak you. My son writes sometimes very well, and sometimes very badly. You accuse him wrongfully, he is virtuous and laborious. We will go thither by turns.

Straight along,
Presently,
At every turn,
Frankly,
Aloud,
Where ever,
To grow perceptibly,
Directly,
Misfortune,
Suddenly,
Softly,
By and by,
To accuse wrongfully,
Laborious,
By turns,

regt uit.
dadelijk.
alle oogenblik.
openhartiglijk.
hard op.
waar ook.
merkbaar grooter worden.
dadelijk.
ongeluk. n.
eensklaps.
zacht.
dadelijk.
valschelijk beschuldigen.
werkzaam.
bij beurten.

N^o. 117.

You put all your things preposterously. These travellers arrived safely at Leghorn. Romulus defeated his enemies separately. If we have done you any harm, certainly we did it unawares. Your friend speaks little, but he speaks seasonably. He narrowly escaped being killed. From this moment I begin to believe that they are altered. They killed that man purposely; and therefore they are condemned to die. Did that happen accidentally? I don't know. Have you met with him by chance? They say so. We shall endeavour to deserve your kindness more and more. He is so charitable that he gives alms largely.

Preposterously,

in wanorde. ogle

Safely,
 Leghorn,
 To defeat separately,
 Harm,
 Unawares,
 Seasonably,
 To escape narrowly,
 To alter,
 Purposely,
 To condemn,
 Accidentally,
 By chance,
 To deserve,
 Charitable,
 Largely,
 Alms,

veiliglijk.
Livorno.
afzonderlijk verſtaan.
ongelijk.
zonder voordacht.
van pas.
ter naauwer nood ontfnappen.
veranderen.
voorbedachteli j.
veroordeelen.
toevallig.
bij geval.
verdieneu, waardig maken.
liefdadig.
mildetijk.
aalmoezen.

N°. 118.

He replied plainly to all my questions. We saw them yesterday, but they were at a very great distance. When he does wrong, he repents immediately. You blame him, and nevertheless you act in the same manner. She reads dutch better and better, she will soon be able to speak it. He travels by night as well as by day. It was in full senate Caesar was inhumanly murdered. I will visit your parents within a fortnight. Your master came here every other day, but mine came once a week. He knows the dutch language thoroughly. We have received them politely.

To reply plainly,
 Distance,
 To do wrong,
 To repent,
 To blame,
 Nevertheless,
 Better and better,
 By night,
 By day,
 Every other day,
 Thoroughly,
 Politely,

eenvoudig antwoorden.
afstand. m.
verkeerd handelen.
berouw hebben.
berispen.
desniettegenstaande.
hoe langer hoe beter.
's nachts.
over dag.
om den anderen dag.
volkomen.
beleefdelijk.

N^o. 119.

He generally goes to England thrice a year. I go now and then to Germany and to Bohemia. They have demolished that palace from top to bottom, but they will rebuild it in a short time. You have done it in haste, do it over again. The enemies rushed on us desperately, but we have put them to the flight. They run up and down all day, they forget their work and their duties. In the battle of Marathon the Atheniens were victorious on all sides. How long do you intend to stay in the Netherlands? About a month or two. How far is it hence to Amsterdam? I don't know.

Generally,
Bohemia,
To demolish,
From top to bottom,
To rebuild,
To do over again,
To rush on,
Desperately,
To put to the flight,
Up and down,
On all sides,
Do you intend,
To stay,
How far is it hence to Amster-
dam,

gewoonlijk.
Bohemen.
afbreken.
van boven tot onder.
herbouwen.
weer over doen.
taefsnellen.
wanhopend.
op de vlugt slaan.
op en neer.
aan alle kanten.
zijt gij voornemens.
blijven.
hoe ver is Amsterdam van hier.

M^o 120.

Themistocles obtained deservedly the honour of the victory at Salamis. The Greeks fought desperately at Marathon and Platæa. Regulus kept faithfully his word, and returned to Carthage, where he was killed most cruelly. Gracchus suffered patiently the injuries of the consul Opimius. The english and dutch troops

assaulted the enemies bravely at Waterloo. Nicias went reluctantly to Sicily, because he disapproved that expedition. Fabius acted prudently in the war against Hannibal, the Carthaginian general. The algerine pirates have always used barbarously the christian slaves.

To obtain,	<i>verkrijgen.</i>
Deservedly,	<i>naar verdiensten.</i>
Victory,	<i>overwinning.</i>
Greeks,	<i>Grieken.</i>
Desperately,	<i>wanhopend.</i>
Faithfully,	<i>getrouwelijk.</i>
Cruelly,	<i>wreedelijk.</i>
To suffer patiently,	<i>geduldig lijden.</i>
Injury,	<i>belediging.</i>
To assault,	<i>aanvallen.</i>
Bravely,	<i>dapperlijk.</i>
Reluctantly,	<i>met weezin.</i>
To disapprove,	<i>afkeuren.</i>
Expedition,	<i>krijgstogt. m.</i>
Carthaginian,	<i>Karthaagsch.</i>
The algerine pirates,	<i>de algerijnsche zeerovers.</i>
To use barbarously.	<i>wreedelijk behandelen.</i>
Christian,	<i>Christen.</i>

Of Prepositions.

Van de Voorzetsels.

The prepositions are placed before nouns or personal pronouns, to show the relations they have to other words.

Prepositions, as we have said already, are divided into *separable* and *inseparable*.

Another division of these words is into *simple* and *compound*.

The simple prepositions, *enkelvoudige voorzetsels*, are :

<i>Aan,</i>	to.
<i>Aangaande,</i>	as for.
<i>Bij,</i>	with, near.
<i>Door,</i>	by.
<i>Betreffende,</i>	relating to.

<i>In,</i>	in.
<i>Met,</i>	with.
<i>Na,</i>	after.
<i>Naar, toe,</i>	to.
<i>Om,</i>	to.
<i>Uit, van,</i>	from.
<i>Voor,</i>	before.
<i>Naast,</i>	next.
<i>Wegens,</i>	on account,
<i>Boven,</i>	above.
<i>Beneden,</i>	below.
<i>Betrekkelijk,</i>	relating to.
<i>Ondanks,</i>	in spite of.
<i>Niettegenstaande,</i>	nevertheless.
<i>Op,</i>	upon, on.
<i>Omtrent,</i>	almost.
<i>Volgens,</i>	according.
<i>Onder,</i>	among.
<i>Zonder,</i>	without.
<i>Behalve,</i>	Save, except.
<i>Uitgenomen,</i>	except.
<i>Tusfchen,</i>	between, betwixt.

The compound prepositions (*zamengestelde voorzetsels*) zijn :

<i>Aan deze zijde,</i>	on this side.
<i>Aan gene zijde,</i>	on the other side.
<i>Tegen over,</i>	over against.
<i>Tegen wil,</i>	against his will.
<i>Midden door,</i>	across.
<i>In plaats,</i>	in stead.

According to their several significations the prepositions are divided into :

Prepositions of *place*, as : *by*, near ; *in*, in ; *voor*, before ; *achter*, behind ; *op*, upon, on ; *onder*, under ; *naar*, to ; *onder*, among.

Prepositions of *order*, as : *voor*, before ; *na*, after ; *tusfchen*, between, betwixt ; *sedert*, since.

Prepositions of *time*, as : *gedurende*, during ; *vervolgens*, after.

Prepositions of *separation*, as : *zonder*, without ; *behalve*, except.

Those, which express an opposition, as: *tegen*, against; *ondanks*, in spite of.

Those which express the intention, as: *jegens*, to; *aangaande*, as to.

Of the different signification of some prepositions.

Aan, to, is generally the preposition of the dative case:

<i>Hij schrijft eenen brief aan</i>	he writes a letter to the
<i>den oom,</i>	uncle,
<i>Zeg dit nieuws aan den</i>	tell that news to the grand-
<i>grootvader,</i>	father.
<i>Zend deze boeken aan de</i>	send these books to the
<i>zuster,</i>	sister.

It expresses as well a rest as a motion.

<i>Keulen ligt aan den Rijn,</i>	Cologne lies on the Rhine.
<i>De schilderij hangt aan den</i>	the picture hangs against
<i>muur,</i>	the wall.
<i>Aan alle oorden der wereld,</i>	in all places of the world.
<i>Hij gaat aan het werk,</i>	he goes to work.
<i>Het proces hangt aan den</i>	that law-suit is at a stand.
<i>spijker,</i>	

Tot aan, till, is an adverb.

<i>Tot aan de kerk gaan,</i>	to go as far as the church.
<i>Hoe ver? tot aan deze</i>	How far? to that place.
<i>plaats.</i>	

Aan, as a separable preposition, is found in a great many compound verbs, as: *aankomen*, to come on; *aanroepen*, to call at one; *aanspreken*, to accost, etc.

Bij is used to express the time and the place.

<i>Het is bij twaalfen,</i>	it is near twelve o'clock.
<i>Bij kersmis,</i>	about christmas.
<i>Bij nieuwe jaar,</i>	about new year.
<i>Bij tijds,</i>	in time.
<i>Bij gelegenheid,</i>	at opportunity.

<i>Kom bij mij,</i>	come to me.
<i>Hij zit bij u.</i>	he sits by you.
<i>Hij woont bij het paleis,</i>	he lives by the palace.
<i>Hij is bij de drie uren aan tafel geweest,</i>	he has been almost three hours at dinner.
<i>Hij woont digt bij,</i>	he lives hard by.
<i>Bij iemand slapen,</i>	to sleep with one.
<i>Bij geval,</i>	by chance.

Mark the following phrases :

<i>Bij voorbeeld,</i>	for instance.
<i>Hebt gij geld bij u?</i>	have you money about you?
<i>Bij gebrek van geld,</i>	for want of money.
<i>Bij dag,</i>	by day.
<i>Bij nacht,</i>	by night.
<i>Bij beurten,</i>	alternatively.
<i>Bij menschen heugen,</i>	in the memory of men.
<i>Bij elkander zijn,</i>	to be together.
<i>Bij aldien,</i>	in case of.
<i>Bij kaarslicht,</i>	by light of candle.

Door is often englished by *through*.

<i>Door de deur,</i>	through the door.
<i>Hij trok door Parijs,</i>	he went through Paris.
<i>Door de stad wandelen,</i>	to walk through the town.
<i>Door de traliën kijken,</i>	to look through the grates.
<i>Het gansche jaar door,</i>	all the year through.
<i>Het is geheel door,</i>	it is quite through.
<i>Ik ben door en door nat,</i>	I am wet quite through.
<i>Hij sloeg door de vijanden,</i>	he made his way through the enemies.
<i>Door het ligchaam,</i>	through the body.
<i>Door het bosch,</i>	through the woods.

Mark the following phrases :

<i>Door de bank,</i>	ordinarily.
<i>Door elkander,</i>	preposterously.
<i>Het is door hem gedaan,</i>	it is done by him.
<i>Door uw toedoen,</i>	by your fault.
<i>Door zijn geduld,</i>	by his patience.
<i>Door alle eeuwen heen,</i>	in all ages.

Boven indicates a place :

<i>Boven de tafel,</i>	above the table.
<i>Boven water,</i>	above water.
<i>Boven den grond,</i>	above the ground.
<i>Boven uwv. krachten,</i>	above your strength.
<i>Boven iemand zijn,</i>	to be above one.

From *boven* is formed the adnoun *bovenste*.

<i>De bovenste steen,</i>	the uppermost stone.
<i>Het bovenste gedeelte,</i>	the uppermost part.
<i>De bovenste plaatsen,</i>	the uppermost seats.

Onder indicates also a place.

<i>Onder de tafel,</i>	under the table.
<i>Onder water zwemmen,</i>	to swim under water.
<i>Het ligt onder water,</i>	it lies under water.
<i>Onder den grond,</i>	under the ground.

Onder indicates also the time.

<i>Onder de regering van Wil-</i>	under the reign of William
<i>lem den eersten,</i>	the first.
<i>Onder de predikatie,</i>	during the sermon.
<i>Onder het gebed,</i>	during the prayer.
<i>Onder den maaltijd,</i>	during the repast.
<i>Onder het gevecht,</i>	during the battle.

Onder is sometimes englished by *among*.

<i>Onder ons,</i>	among us.
<i>Onder de heidenen,</i>	among the pagans.
<i>Onder de Rusfen,</i>	among the Russians.
<i>Onder het gespuis,</i>	among the populace.
<i>Onder de regenten,</i>	among the magistrates.

Mark the following phrases :

<i>Iets onder handen hebben,</i>	to be about a thing.
<i>Onder dokters handen,</i>	under the physician's hands,
<i>Onder het volk komen.</i>	to come among the people.
<i>Onder de markt,</i>	under the market.
<i>Onder eede verklaren.</i>	to declare upon oath.
<i>Onder verpligting liggen,</i>	to be under obligation.
<i>Hij is onder bedwang,</i>	He is under restraint.

<i>Onder schijn van vriendschap,</i>	under the colour of friendship.
<i>Onder uw welmeenen,</i>	under your favour.
<i>Hij is sedert lang onder dienst,</i>	he is since long in military service.
<i>Onder eenen veldheer dienen,</i>	to serve under the orders of a general.
<i>Onder een gelukkig gestarn- te geboren zijn,</i>	to be born under a lucky constellation.
<i>Het schip is onder zeil,</i>	the ship is under sail.
<i>Iemand onderhanden nemen,</i>	to cure one.
<i>Dat is onder mij berustende,</i>	that is under my keeping.
<i>Onder op de rekening,</i>	at the bottom of the account.
<i>Wat verweidt gij er onder ?</i>	how much will you lay ?
<i>Onder ons zegel,</i>	under our seal.
<i>Onder het juk brengen,</i>	to submit to the yoke.
<i>Een paard onder den man,</i>	a riding horse.
<i>Onder den voet halen,</i>	to pull down.
<i>Hij zal het niet onder de honderd gulden verkoopen,</i>	he will not sell it under hundred guilders.
<i>Hij is onder de veertien jaar oud,</i>	he is not yet fourteen years old.
<i>Onder elkander,</i>	amongst one another.
<i>Deelt het onder elkander,</i>	divide it amongst yourselves.

In indicates the place :

<i>Hij is in de kerk,</i>	he is in the church.
<i>In de hel,</i>	in the hell.
<i>In de kamer,</i>	in the chamber.

It is used as well with the verbs which indicate a motion, as with those which indicate a rest.

<i>Zij is in de zaal,</i>	she is in the hall.
<i>Zij gaat in de zaal,</i>	she goes in the hall.
<i>Hij komt in de kerk,</i>	he comes in the church.
<i>Zij dansen in die kamer,</i>	they dance in that chamber.

It is also used in the following phrases :

<i>In voorspoed,</i>	in prosperity.
----------------------	----------------

<i>In tegenspoed,</i>	in adversity.
<i>In haast,</i>	in haste, in a hurry.
<i>In het kort,</i>	in short.
<i>In den regen,</i>	in the rain.
<i>In den nacht,</i>	during the night.
<i>In het openbaar,</i>	in publick.
<i>In drift,</i>	in a passion.
<i>In vier dagen,</i>	in four days.
<i>In het geheim,</i>	in secret.
<i>In het einde,</i>	at last.
<i>In den wind,</i>	against the wind.
<i>In het eerst,</i>	at first.
<i>In het Engelsch;</i>	in the English language.
<i>In geenerlei wijze,</i>	by no means.
<i>Hij komt in acht dagen,</i>	he comes in eight days.
<i>Wij zullen het in tijds doen,</i>	we shall do it in time.
<i>In vorige dagen,</i>	in former days.
<i>In groote onrust,</i>	in great trouble.
<i>In een uur,</i>	in an hour.

The preposition *in* is sometimes added to an ad-noun, as:

<i>Het was inbitter,</i>	it was very bitter.
<i>Hij was inblijde,</i>	he was very glad.

Om, about, indicates the place.

<i>Om de stad wandelen,</i>	to walk about the town.
<i>Om en om,</i>	round about.
<i>Iemand honig om den mond smeren,</i>	to caress one.
<i>Om het lijf,</i>	round about the body.
<i>Iemand om zijn middel vat- ten,</i>	to take one about his mid- dle.
<i>Hij vloog mij om den hals,</i>	he fell about my neck.

It indicates also the time:

<i>Kom om zeven uren,</i>	come at seven o'clock.
<i>Om licht en donker,</i>	between hawk and buzzard.

It is frequently placed before the infinitive mood of the verbs.

<i>Het is geene zaak om dit te ondernemen,</i>	it is not for you to under- take this.
--	---

Wij zijn befloten om te gaan, we are refolved to go.
Om u te verpligten, to oblige you.
Ik doe het om hem genaegen I do it to please him.
te geven,
Het is maar om te lagchen, it is but to laugh at.
Om van u ontflagen te zijn, in order to get rid of you.

It is alfo ufed in the following phrafes :

<i>Om Gods wil,</i>	for God's fake.
<i>Om mijnent wil,</i>	for my fake.
<i>Om zijnent wil,</i>	for his fake.
<i>Om zijne deugd,</i>	bècaufe of his virtue.
<i>Ik ben er om verlegen,</i>	I am in want of it.
<i>Ik denk er om,</i>	I think on, or at it.
<i>De tijd is om,</i>	the time is expired.
<i>De wind is om,</i>	the wind is turned.
<i>Om de maand,</i>	every month.
<i>Om hals raken,</i>	to get out of life.
<i>Ik ben er boos om,</i>	I am angry at it.
<i>Een lange weg om,</i>	a long way about.
<i>Om geene redenen,</i>	for no reasons.
<i>Om ftrijd,</i>	for the beft,

Met is generally englished by *with*.

<i>Ik kom met hem,</i>	I come with him.
<i>Met elkander,</i>	with one another.
<i>Met iets bezig,</i>	bufy with a thing.
<i>Met voordeel,</i>	with advantage.

It indicates alfo the time :

<i>Met den morgenftond uit- gaan,</i>	to go out in the morning.
<i>Met der tijd,</i>	in process of time.
<i>Met het kricken vanden dag,</i>	by break of day.

In fome phrafes it is englished by *bij* :

<i>Met geweld,</i>	by violence.
<i>Met verdrag,</i>	gradually.
<i>Met list,</i>	by a stratagem.

It is ufed in the following phrafes :

Hij houdt het met mij, he takes my part.

Met iets bezig zijn,
Met eene pen schrijven,
Met zijne eigene hand,
Het is met inkt gedaan,
Met veel moeite,
Met deze woorden,
Met luider stemme,
Het is met mij even zoo,
Met tranen in de oogen,

to be about a thing.
 to write with a pen.
 with his own hand.
 it is done with ink.
 with great trouble.
 with these words.
 with a loud voice.
 it is the same with me.
 with tears in the eyes.

Na, indicates the time:

Hij kwam na vijven,
Hij ging na u,
Na dit voorval,
Na dien tijd,
Na het avondmaal,
Na het gevecht,
Na zonnen ondergang,
Na lang wachten,
Na elkander,
Na zijnen dood,

he came after six o'clock.
 he went after you.
 after that event.
 after that time.
 after supper.
 after the battle.
 after sun-set.
 after long waiting.
 the one after the other.
 after his death.

Naar, to, indicates the place.

Naar de stad gaan,
Naar den tuin gaan,
Naar bed gaan,
Naar het oosten,
Naar het westen,
Wat meer naar de stad,
De handen naar den hemel
heffen,
Naar boven,
Naar beneden,
Naar huis,

to go to town.
 to go to the garden.
 to go to bed.
 eastward.
 westward.
 nearer to the town.
 to lift up the hands to
 heaven.
 up stairs.
 downward.
 homeward.

It has still other significations, as appears from the following phrases:

Naar de fransche mode ge-
kleed zijn, to be dressed after the
 french fashion.
Naar 's lands gebruik, after the custom of the
 country.
Naar onzen wensch, according to our wish.

<i>Naar het leyen,</i>	to the life.
<i>Ik zal u, naar uw vlijt,</i>	I shall recompense you, according to your diligence.
<i>beloonen.</i>	
<i>Spreek naar uw beste weten,</i>	speak to the best of your knowledge.
<i>Hij raadt er naar,</i>	he guesses at it.
<i>Zij gelijkt naar hare moeder,</i>	she takes after her mother.
<i>Naar ik hoop,</i>	as I wish.
<i>Hij zoekt naar u,</i>	he seeks you.
<i>Naar zijn vermogen,</i>	according to his faculty.
<i>Naar iets rijkaalzen,</i>	to gape after a thing.
<i>Naar uw believen,</i>	just as you like.
<i>Naar zijn voorbeeld,</i>	after his example.
<i>Naar ik geloof,</i>	according to what I believe.

Tot expresses several different reports. It indicates the time and the place.

<i>Van Dordt naar Amsterdam,</i>	from Dordt to Amsterdam.
<i>Tot den Haag,</i>	until the Hague.
<i>Hij is tot in Perzië geweest,</i>	he has been as far as Persia.
<i>Tot dien tijd toe,</i>	till that time.
<i>Tot nog toe,</i>	as yet.
<i>Tot hier toe,</i>	hitherto.
<i>Wacht tot morgen,</i>	stay till to morrow.
<i>Hij werd tot op het hemd toe uitgeschud,</i>	he was stript till his shirt.
<i>Van dag tot dag,</i>	from day to day.
<i>Van huis tot huis,</i>	from house to house.
<i>Van uur tot uur,</i>	from hour to hour.
<i>Van tijd tot tijd,</i>	from time to time.
<i>Van jaar tot jaar,</i>	from year to year.
<i>Van paschen tot pinksteren,</i>	from eastern to whitsuntide.
<i>Tot den dood,</i>	till death.
<i>Tot wien gaat gij?</i>	to whom do you go?

Mark the following phrases:

<i>Hij groet tot den minsten knecht,</i>	he salutes even the meanest servant.
<i>Zij hebben alles gedood, tot de kinderen toe,</i>	they have killed all, even the children.

Zij beminnen iedereen, tot hunne vijanden toe, they love all men, even their enemies.
Al de regters beklagden den ongelukkigigen, tot den strengsten toe, all the judges pitied the unfortunate, even the most severe.

Tot ons voordeel, to our advantage.
Tot iets bestemd, destined to a thing.
Het is tot uwen dienst, it is to your service.
Tot haar nadeel, to her disadvantage.
Tot onderhoud der armen, for the subsistence of the poor.
Tot den drank genegen, given to the drink.
Ik heb hem tot zijn huis vergezeld, I have waited on him as far as his house.

Iemand tot keizer kroonen, to crown one emperor.
Tot wien spreekt gij? to whom do you speak?
Ik heb hem tot vriend, he is my friend.
Tot iets bijdragen, to contribute to a thing.
Dit heeft hij tot grondregel, this is his principle.
Hij is tot geeseling gevonnisd. he is condemned to be whipt.
Zij neemt hem tot man, she takes him for her husband.

Voor, indicates the place:

Voor het huis, before the house.
Voor de deur, before the door.
Het staat voor u, it stands before you.
Voor den wind, before the wind.

In the following phrases it signifies *in the presence*.

Voor den regter, before the judge.
Hij kwam voor den koning, he came before the king.
Voor de gansche stad, before the whole town.
Voor God, before God.

It indicates also the time:

's weeks voor zijne aankomst, the week before his arrival.
Voor den middag, before noon.

Voor hij bij mij kwam, before he came to me.
Voor den tijd, before the time.
Voor den eten, before dinner.

Voor signifies also *instead of, in place of:*

Zij gaat voor mijne zuster, she goes in the place of my sister.

Hij schrijft voor mij, he writes for me.
Hij is voor allen gestorven, he is dead for all.
Ik spreek voor hem, I speak for him.

Voor is often followed by the object of the action.

De zorgen voor de toekomst, the care for the futurity.
Bid voor mij, pray for me.

Offentimes it indicates the person for whom a thing is destined.

Haal water voor mij, fetch water for me.
Dat is voor u, that is for you.
Voorraad voor dit jaar, provisions for that year.
Haver voor de paarden, oats for the horses.

It is used in several very different phrases, as appears from the following examples:

Voor mijn deel, for my part.
Wacht u voor hem, be upon your guards with him.

Voor drie dagen, for three days.
Voor vast houden, to hold for a certainty.

Ik houd dat voor waar, I believe it is true.
Ik houd hem voor een eerlijk man, I look upon him as an honest man.

Ik houd dat voor gedaan, I look upon the business as done.

Ik houd mij voor gelukkig, I account myself happy.
Hij hield de overwinning voor zeker, He thought himself sure of the victory.

Ik houd dat voor eene groote eer, I look upon it as a great honour.

Voor mij, wat mij aangaat, as for me.
Een middel voor de koorts, a remedy against the fever.
Ik ben voor hem, en tegen haar, I am for him, and against her.

Wat voor een man is hij? what man is he?
Wat voor eene zaak is het? which affair is it?
Het voor en tegen, the pro and con.
Wat voor lesfen leert gij? which lesfons do you learn?
Ik houd dat voor niet, I do not account that.

Voor, is alfo an adverb:

Hij is voor, en gij zijt achter, he is before, and you are behind.
Voor en aleeer ik kwam, before I came.
Hij zeide mij vooraf, he told me before.
Eens vooraf, once for all.

Uit, is a preposition which has alfo feveral accep-
 tions. It indicates a place:

Hij komt uit de kerk, he comes from church.
Zij komen uit den tuin, they come from the garden.
Hij is uit de stad, he is on a voyage.
Hij is uit Frankrijk, he is a Frenchman.

Uit, fignifies often *empty, ledig.*

De flesch is uit, the bottle is empty.
De glazen zijn uit; the glafes are empty.
De pot is uit, the pot is empty.

Uit, indicates often the *motive or caufe:*

Uit spijt, out of malice.
Uit haat, out of hatred.
Uit boosaardigheid, out of malice.
Uit joks, in jest.
Uit gewoonte, out of custom.
Uit gunst, by favour.
Uit liefde, by love.
Uit verbittering, out of animofity.

This preposition indicates alfo the parties of which
 a thing is compofed:

Uit kruiden zamengefteld, compofed out of herbs.

Uit, is often placed at the end of a phrafe:

Hij heeft het boek uit, he has read the book out.

<i>Hij heeft zijn schrift uit,</i>	he has finished his writing.
<i>Uw rijk is uit,</i>	your mastership is at an end.
<i>Hij heeft bij mij uit,</i>	he is out with me.
<i>Het komt hier alleen op uit,</i>	this is only the matter.
<i>Zijn tijd is uit,</i>	his time is expired.
<i>Zij zijn uit,</i>	they are gone out.
<i>De kaars is uit,</i>	the candle is out.
<i>De gehoorzaamheid is uit,</i>	there is no obeying any longer.
<i>Zij zijn het land uit,</i>	they are abroad.
<i>Jaag hem de deur uit,</i>	put him out of doors.

This preposition has still other significations.

<i>Uit ondervinding weten,</i>	to know by experience.
<i>Uit den schotel nemen,</i>	to take from the dish.
<i>Uit het Engelsch vertalen,</i>	to translate out of English.
<i>Ik weet het uit zijnen brief,</i>	I know it from his letter.
<i>Uit alle magt schreeuwen,</i>	to cry as loud as one can.
<i>Jaar uit, jaar in,</i>	from year to year.
<i>Uit hoofde van,</i>	because of.
<i>Uit krachte van,</i>	by virtue of.
<i>Uit wat oorzaak?</i>	wherefore?
<i>Uit een adelijk huis gespro-</i>	descended from a noble fa-
<i>ten,</i>	family,
<i>Uit Livius getrokken,</i>	taken out of Livy.
<i>Uit zijnen naam,</i>	in his name.
<i>Ik zal het hem uit het hoofd</i>	I shall dissuade him from
<i>praten,</i>	that thing.
<i>Ik kan niet uit mijne oogen</i>	I cannot see at all.
<i>zien,</i>	
<i>Uit het oog, uit het hart,</i>	out of sight, out of mind.
<i>Uit grond van mijn hart,</i>	with all my heart.
<i>Uit het lid,</i>	out of joint.

Op, on, upon, indicates the place.

<i>Op den vloer,</i>	upon the floor.
<i>Op een paard,</i>	on horseback.
<i>Op den berg,</i>	upon the mountain.
<i>Op eenen boom klimmen,</i>	to get into a tree.
<i>Op eene bank,</i>	upon a bench.
<i>Op een eiland,</i>	in an island.

Op papier schrijven, to write upon paper.
Op den toren, upon the steeple.
Op het gras, upon the grass.
Keulen ligt op den Rijn, Cologne lies upon the Rhine.

Op, indicates also the time.

Op dien dag, on that day.
Op het einde van de week, at the end of the week.
Op eenen zondag, upon a sunday.
Op het oogenblik, immediately.
Op den middag, towards noon.

It is used to affirm a thing.

Op mijne eer, upon my honour.
Op mijn woord, upon my word.
Op mijn geweten, upon my conscience.
Op mijn leven, upon my life.

It indicates also the fashion, the manner :

Op zijn fransch gekleed, dressed after the french fashion.
Op deze wijze, in that manner.
Op eene andere wijze, in an other manner.
Op nieuw, again.

Op, has several different significations, as appears from these phrases :

Een leger op de been brengen, to raise an army.
Op het tapijt brengen, to bring upon the carpet.
Op de kermis, on the fair.
Zijt gij misnoegd op mij? are you angry with me ?
Op de hooge school, at the university.
Op de jagt gaan, to go a hunting.
Op reis zijn, to be on a voyage.
Op zijnen ouden dag, in his old age.
Let er op, pay attention to it.
Allen op een na, all but one.
Val op hem aan, attack him.
Hij kwam op de wereld, he was born.
De impost op het bier, the duty upon the beer.
Ik kan tegen hem op, I can match him.

<i>Op eenen sprong,</i>	on a sudden.
<i>Op doodstraffe,</i>	upon pain of death.
<i>Hij staat op schildwacht,</i>	he is upon duty.
<i>Op de rechterhand,</i>	on the righthand.
<i>Op deze wijze,</i>	in this manner.
<i>Op die tijding,</i>	upon that news.
<i>Hij is op zijne buitenplaats,</i>	he is at his country-seat.
<i>Belust op iets zijn,</i>	to long after a thing.
<i>Op uw bevel,</i>	at your command.
<i>Hij loopt de trap op,</i>	he goes upon stairs.
<i>Hij is vroeg op,</i>	he is up betimes.
<i>Ik berust op u,</i>	I rely on you.
<i>Hij is op zijn' weg,</i>	he is on his way.
<i>Brief op brief schrijven,</i>	to write letter upon letter.
<i>Op verdenking,</i>	upon suspicion.
<i>Op eenen zondag,</i>	upon a Sunday.
<i>Op de proef nemen,</i>	to take upon trial.
<i>Ik vermag niets op hem,</i>	I gain nothing upon him.
<i>Op handen en voeten kruipen,</i>	to go upon all four.
<i>Hij komt op den regten tijd,</i>	he comes in due time.
<i>Op slag van twaalfen,</i>	upon the stroke of twelve.
<i>Op den hoop toegeven,</i>	to give into the bargain.
<i>Iemand op hol helpen,</i>	to seduce one.

Zonder, without, is an exclusive preposition; it indicates the privation of a thing:

<i>Hij is zonder geld,</i>	he is without money.
<i>Zonder goederen,</i>	without goods.
<i>Zonder ophouden,</i>	incessantly.
<i>Zonder einde,</i>	without end.
<i>Zonder zwarigheid,</i>	without difficulty.
<i>Zonder moeite,</i>	without trouble.
<i>Zonder spreken,</i>	without speaking.
<i>Zonder uitstel,</i>	without delay.
<i>Zonder tegenspraak,</i>	without contradiction.
<i>Zonder twijfel,</i>	without doubt.
<i>Zonder uitstel,</i>	without delay.
<i>Zonder medelijden,</i>	without pity.
<i>Zonder reden,</i>	without reason.

Van, of, from. There is no preposition, which has so many acceptations as this. It is, firstly, used in the genitive case:

De huizen van den vader, the houses of the father.
De oom van den broeder, the uncle of the brother.

It indicates also the time:

Hij komt van boven, he comes from above, he descends.
Van de trappen vallen, to fall down stairs.
Van den hemel nedergedaald, descended from heaven.

It indicates also the time:

Van dien tijd af, from that time.
Van eeuwigheid tot eeuwigheid, from eternity to eternity.
Van den morgen tot den avond, from morning to night.

Van, is also used to specify a quality:

Een man van middelen, a rich man.
Eene vrouw van verstand, a wife woman.
Een man van verdiensten, a meritory man.

Een diamant van waarde, a diamond of great worth.
Eene zaak van belang, an important matter.
Eene zaak van langen duur, an affair of long duration.

It is also used in the following phrases:

Een man van de stad, a man of the city.
Een koe van duizend pond, a cow of thousand pounds.
Eene vrouw van tachtig jaar, a woman of eighty years.
Van goud gemaakt, made of gold.
Van ieder bemind, loved by every one.
Een man van zeden, a man of good morals.
Van persoon bevalt hij mij, his person pleases me.
Het is een duivel van een wiif, She is a devilish woman.
Van mijnent wege, as for me.
Van zijnent wege, as for him.
Van harent wege, as for her.
Van langzamer hand, from time to time.
Van gansch harte, from all my heart.

Overvloed van geld, abundance of money.
Van buiten leeren, to learn by heart.
Voorraad van hout, provision of wood.

Tusfchen, between, betwixt, is a preposition of place.

Tusfchen u en mij, betwixt you and me.
Ik zat tusfchen beiden, I fat betwixt both of them.
Tusfchen twee rivieren, between two rivers.

It indicates alfo the time.

Tusfchen elf en twaalf, between eleven and twelve
o'clock.

Mark the following phrafes :

Tusfchen licht en donker, between hawk and buzzard.
Tusfchen u en mij, between you and me.
Tusfchen leven en dood, between life and death.
Daar is een twist tusfchen there is a quarrel among
hen. them.
Tusfchen twee uiterften, between two extremities.
Daar is een proces tusfchen they go to law.
hen,

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the prepositions.

N^o. 121.

Come this way, we fhall walk round the garden. Sit down by him, and tell us all your adventures in Spain and Portugal, during the last war. He will not fell his houfe under three hundred guineas. We fhall fhelter ourfelves from the rain, under that tree. Thofe prifoners made their escape by means of the darkness of the night. The dutch women dress themfelves often after the french fashion. They walk on this fide of

the river. We met with your father on the other side of the bridge. Have you seen all the statues in the garden of the king? There are large trees before the house of the baroness. They can do nothing by want of money and credit. I don't believe it, they are very rich. Let us go along the river.

To tell,
Adventures,
To shelter one'sself,
From,
Made their escape,
By means,
Darkness,
To dress one'sself,
Fashion,
On this side,
Bridge,
Statue,
By want of,
Along,

verhalen.
lotgevallen.
schuilen.
voor.
ontsnapten.
door middel.
duisterheid. f.
zich kleeden.
mode. f.
aan deze zijde.
brug.
standbeeld. o.
door gebrek aan.
langs.

N^o. 122.

We do it for your sake, as well as for their sake. He lives close to the cathedral, over against Master D. We are still far from house, let us make haste as much as we can. A candid and sincere man always speaks and acts according to what he thinks. We have waited for you more than three hours, but we saw nobody. They fought with obstinacy on both sides, until the beginning of the night. We have accompanied him as far as the gate. As for us, we will not lend him a farthing, because he is an unworthy spendthrift. As for him he is very much dissatisfied. Is it true?

For your sake,
Close to,
Cathedral,
To make haste,
Candid,

om uwent wil.
ligt bij.
hoofdkerk. f.
haast maken.
openhartig.

Sincere,
To wait for,
To fight,
Obstinacy,
To accompany,
Gate,
A farthing,
Unworthy,
Spendthrift,
Disatisfied,

opregt.
wachten naar.
vechten, strijden.
stijfhoofdigheid.
vergezellen.
poort. f.
een duit. m.
onwaardig.
doorbrenger, verspiller.
misnoegd.

N^o. 123.

That gentleman painted after nature. We saw you walk with your father and your friend. It was the ancient Britons who cut a road through the mountains. Such was the custom among the asiatic Greeks in the time of Homer. Do not lean against the chair. Let her keep herself always in the limits of decency. I have not heard from that general since his expedition into Egypt. Go into that room; you will find a letter behind the looking-glass. We saw the whole camp and all the troops from the top of that great hill, on the right hand. These children behaved very well during the absence of the master. Tell nobody what passed between your brother and that quarrelsome man.

To paint after nature,
Ancient Britons,
To cut a road,
Such,
Custom,
Asiatic Greeks.
To lean,
To keep one's self,
Limits,
Decency,
Expedition,
Egypt,
Camp,
Top. Hill.
Top behave well,
What passed,
Quarrelsome,

naar de natuur schilderen.
oude Britten.
eenen weg banen.
dit.
gewoonte.
Aziatische Grieken.
leunen.
zich houden.
grenzen.
betamelijkheid.
krijgstogt. m.
Egypte.
legerplaats.
top. m. heuvel. m.
zich wel gedragen.
wat er voorviel.
twistziek.

N^o. 124.

They endeavoured to pass the river, but were all drowned, save my friend. He will certainly succeed in his undertaking, in spite of his enemy. The English and Dutch blocked up Gibraltar by sea and by land. The armies marched three days and three nights without stopping. He lives on this side, and your brother on that side of the great road. A woman may please without beauty, but she cannot succeed without virtue. Did they not live according to the rule you have prescribed? I cannot pay you to day, for I have no money about me. It was towards the evening when he arrived. Every thing I have is at your service.

To endeavour,
To pass,
They were all drowned,
To succeed,
In spite of,
To block up,
By sea,
By land,
Stopping,
To please,
To prescribe,

pogen.
overvaren.
zij verdrinken allen.
slagen.
in weerwil van.
insluiten.
ter zee. f.
te land. n.
ophouden.
behagen.
voorschrijven.

N^o. 125.

In the last sea-fight which took place between the French and the English, above two thousand men perished in the action on the side of the French, and the English took twelve ships of the line. It is above three years since my brother set off for Batavia. I am exasperated at your conduct; did I not tell you to laugh never at a poor man? A good christian never shows any resentment at the injuries which are of-

ferred to him. A patient man never grieves at his misfortunes. I am concerned at the loss you have sustained in your trade. That merchant gets a considerable fortune by buying cheap, and selling dear.

Sea-fight,	<i>zeegevecht. n.</i>
To take place,	<i>plaats hebben.</i>
Above,	<i>meer dan.</i>
Perished in the action,	<i>sneuvelden in het gevecht.</i>
Ship of the line,	<i>linieschip. n.</i>
To set off,	<i>afreizen.</i>
Exasperated,	<i>vertoornnd, misnoegd.</i>
To laugh at,	<i>lagchen om, over.</i>
Tho show resentment,	<i>misnoegen toonen.</i>
Injury,	<i>beleediging.</i>
To offer,	<i>aandoen.</i>
To grieve,	<i>zich bedroeven.</i>
I am concerned,	<i>ik neem deel.</i>
To sustain a loss,	<i>een verlies lijden.</i>
Trade,	<i>handel. m.</i>
To get,	<i>verkrijgen.</i>
By buying,	<i>door te koopn.</i>

N°. 126.

Achilles was killed at the siege of Troy by an arrow, which Paris, king Priam's son let fly at his heel. William the second was killed by an arrow in the new forest. Edward the first was wounded in Palestina with a poisoned dagger. When we have reached the age of reason, we are often sorry, but too late, for the time we lost, when we were young. Ovid, one of the finest poets of the Augustan age, expired in the seventeenth year of our Lord, at Tomi, near Varna, on the western coast of the Black Sea, whither he had been banished by the emperor Augustus. If you wish to be happy and esteemed in the world, live like a man of honour and probity.

To kill,	<i>dooden.</i>
Siege of Troy,	<i>belegering van Troje.</i>
Arrow,	<i>pijl.</i>
To let fly at,	<i>affchieten op.</i>
Palestine,	<i>Palestina.</i>

Poisoned dagger,
To reach the age of reason,

vergiftige dolk. m.
de jaren van onderscheid berek-
ken.

We are sorry for,
Ovid,
The Augustan age,
To expire,
Of our Lord,
Cost,
The Black Sea,
Whither,
To banish,
Probity,

beklagen wij.
Ovidius.
de eeuw van Augustus.
sterven.
onzes Heeren.
kust. f.
de Zwarte zee.
werwaarts.
verbannen.
braafheid. f.

Of Conjunctions.

Van de Voegwoorden.

The conjunctions serve to connect the several parts of a discourse.

As to the signification, they are divided into the following sorts:

Copulative (verbindende): en, and; ook, also; maar ook, but also; als ook, also.

Intentional (oogmerk aanduidende): opdat, that; ten einde, to the end that.

Causative (redengevende): omdat, because; dewijl, because; want, for.

Continuative (redevoortzettende): ten eerste, firstly; vervolgens, afterwards; wijders, the more; verder, further.

Explicative (verklarende): te weten, viz; namelijk, namely.

Conclusive (besluitende): dus, thus; derhalve, consequently.

Adversative (tegenstelling aanwijzende): maar, but; echter, nevertheless; evenwel, nothans, though.

Conditional (voorwaardelijke): indien, if; mitsdien, on condition; ten ware, unless.

Comparative (vergelijkende): als, as; zoo als, as:

Periodical (tijdsopvolging aanduidende): *terwijl*, while; *zoodra als*, as soon as.

As to the expression, they are divided in:

Primitive: *ook*, also; *maar*, but; *noch*, neither.

Derivative: *gevolgelyk*, consequently; *anders*, otherwise.

Compounded: *insgelyks*, also; *offchoon*, though.

There is a great difference between: *toch* and *doch*. The former is used in these phrases: *doe het toch*, do but do it; *schryf toch*, do but write; *ga toch*, do but go.

Doch, is synonymous with *maar*, as: *ik zou schryven, doch ik heb geen' tijd*, I would write, but I have no time. *Ik zou betalen, doch ik heb geen geld*, I would pay, but I have no money.

There is difference between *terwijl* and *dewijl*. The former expresses the time: *terwijl ik sprak*, when I was speaking; *terwijl wij zongen*, when we were singing.

Dewijl is causative: *dewijl ik schryven moet*, because I must write; *dewijl ik betalen moet*, because I must pay. —

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the Conjunctions.

N^o. 127.

He is gone to the play, instead of coming here. I would not do it, for fear of displeasing you. She would do any thing in the world, rather than speak to him. I called at your friend's, as you had desired me. I love you, because you are more careful than the sister of my neighbour. According as I see, you are very well. I punish these pupils, just as they deserve. He shall write to him, on condition that

he shall speedily receive his answer. In proportion as we study, we become learned. A skilful gardener pulls up weeds, as they grow. We did not stay in Germany as long as you did.

In stead of,
 For fear of,
 To displease,
 Any thing,
 Rather,
 Desired,
 Careful,
 According as I see,
 Pupil,
 To deserve,
 Speedily,
 In proportion as,
 Skillful,
 To pull up,
 To grow,
 To stay,

in plaats van.
uit vreeze van.
mishagen.
alles.
eerder, liever.
verzocht.
zorgvuldig.
zoo als ik zie.
leerling.
verdienen.
spoediglijk.
naar mate.
bekwaam.
uittrekken.
groeijen,
blijven.

N°. 128.

As soon as the allies had taken the general, the army surrendered. I followed him with my eyes as far as I could. You look at him, as if he had stolen your golden watch. I lend you my horse and coach, because you are my bosom friend. The misfortune of others seem to us but a dream, in comparison to our own. If you could give me but half of the money you owe, I should be very much obliged to you. We were hardly arrived, when it began to rain. Tell us the truth, perhaps the master will forgive you. He plays on the flute, while I write an important letter.

Allies,
 Taken,
 To surrender,
 To follow,
 To look at one,
 Bosom friend.

bondgenooten.
gevangen genomen.
overgeven.
volgen.
iemand aanzien.
boezemyriend.

Seem to us,
 Dream.
 In comparison of,
 To owe,
 Sturdily,
 To tell the truth,
 Flute,
 Important,

schijnen ons.
droom.
in vergelijking van.
schuldig zijn.
naauwelijks.
de waarheid spreken.
fluit. f.
gewichtig.

N°. 129.

This proceeding was the more extraordinary, as it was contrary to the laws of the king. Speak as long as you will, I will not grant you what you ask me. If you loved to study as much as you love to play, I should have no occasion to complain. I avoid slanderers, as much as I fear them. We would spare ourselves many troubles, if we were more prudent. He interrupts me, as often as I speak. Virtue reigns so much the more sovereignly, as it does not reign by force and fear. All men seek after riches, and yet we see few rich men happy. Though he come at his time, he will not find us. Tell me sincerely, whether he did it or not.

Proceeding,
 Was the more,
 Extraordinary,
 Contrary to,
 To grant,
 As much as,
 Occasion,
 To complain,
 To spare one's self trouble,
 To interrupt,
 To reign,
 Sovereignly,
 To seek after,
 Sincerely,

handelwijs. f.
was des te meer.
buitengewoon.
tegenstrijdig met.
toestaan.
zoo zeer als.
reden.
klagen.
zich voor moeite bewaren.
in de rede vallen.
heerschen.
onbepaald.
zoeken naar.
opregtelijk.

N^o. 130.

She said nothing to me, except that it was impossible for her to do what you required. You will be rewarded just as you deserve. I will explain these rules to you, as we read them. It is more pleasing to enjoy good health, than to possess a large fortune. You will write the words, according as I dictate them. In short said this good king, I shall only think myself happy, in as much as I cause the happiness of my people. It is harder to be revenged of an enemy, than to forgive him. When the thunder roars, it is less dangerous to be in an open field, than to take shelter under a tree. That would give me more pleasure than you imagine.

To require,
To reward,
Just as,
To deserve,
To explain,
As,
Pleasing,
To dictate,
In as much as,
To be revenged,
To roar,
To shelter,
Than you imagine.

vorderen, eischen.
beloonen.
naar mate.
verdiennen.
uitleggen.
naar mate als.
genoegelijker.
voorzeggen.
in zoo verre als.
zich te wreken.
rommelen.
schuilen.
dan gij denkt.

N^o. 131.

How many people can say to themselves, had I employed my time better, than I did when I was young, I should be in good circumstance now. I will explain to you every difficulty, that you may not be disheartened in your undertaking. You will never be respected, unless you forsake the bad company you keep. You cannot finish to day, unless I

help you. Carry that money to Charles, in order that he may pay his drawing-master, when he comes. Before you begin an action, consider well whether you can bring it about, for you know the proverb: the end crowns the work. Diseases come faster than they go away.

To employ,
Circumstance,
To explain,
Difficulty,
That you may not be,
To dishearten,
To respect,
To forsake,
Unless,
In order that he may pay.
Drawing-master.
Whether you can,
Proverb,
To crown,
Disease,

besteden.
omstandigheid. f.
uitleggen.
moeijelijkheid.
opdat gij niet wordet.
ontmoedigen.
eeren.
verlaten.
ten zij.
opdat hij kunne betalen.
teekenmeester.
of gij kunt.
spreekwoord. n.
kroonen.
ziekte. f.

N^o. 132.

They are not happy, though they be rich. I will go to the Hague to morrow, provided you accompany me. Although you have a good memory, this is not enough to learn a language whatever, you must make use of your judgment. I lend you this book, with a proviso, that you will return it to me in an hour. The general arrived yesterday morning at the camp, weary and tired, but very seasonably; immediately he gave his orders to begin the action, though he had not yet all his troops. The enemy avoided an engagement, for fear they should be taken, our force being superior to theirs. Your business never will be done properly, unless you do it yourself.

Provided,
Although you have,
Whatever,

mits.
alhoewel gij hebbet.
welke ook.

To make use,	<i>gebruik maken.</i>
Judgment,	<i>oordeel. n.</i>
With a proviso,	<i>onder beding, op voorwaarde.</i>
To return,	<i>teruggeven.</i>
Camp,	<i>legerplaats. f.</i>
Weary,	<i>afgemat.</i>
Tired,	<i>vermoeid.</i>
Seasonably,	<i>van pas.</i>
Action,	<i>gevecht. n.</i>
To avoid,	<i>vermijden.</i>
Engagement,	<i>gevecht.</i>
For fear of,	<i>uit vreeze van.</i>
Superior,	<i>talrijker.</i>
Properly,	<i>in orde.</i>

 N°. 133.

If your father do not arrive to day, and if you want money, I will lend you some. It is so far from raining, that I think we will have dry and hot weather during all this month. Whether you eat, drink, sing, dance or play, do every thing with grace and attention. Why did you tell me my father was arrived, notwithstanding you knew the contrary. God grant you be not disappointed in your hope. They fought with fury, on both sides, till the night came. I forgive you this time, provided you promise me to be lazy no more, and pay more attention to what you are told. As soon as I have breakfasted, I will go out to see him. God grant you may succeed in your pursuits.

To want,	<i>noodig hebben.</i>
Dry weather,	<i>droog weer.</i>
Whether you eat,	<i>het zij gij eet.</i>
Grace,	<i>bevalligheid.</i>
Contrary,	<i>tegendeel.</i>
God grant,	<i>God geve.</i>
Disappointed,	<i>teleurgesteld.</i>
Fury,	<i>woede.</i>
Lazy,	<i>lui.</i>
On both sides,	<i>aan weerszijden.</i>
To pay attention,	<i>oplettend zijn.</i>
Pursuit,	<i>onderneming, poging. f.</i>

Of Interjections.

Van de Tusschenwerpsels.

Interjections serve to express the sudden emotion of the soul: They are divided in:

Interjections of joy, as: *ha! ha! heisa*, eh joy.

Of grief: *ach! ah; helaas! alas!*

Of admiration: *he! ah! zoo!*

Of averfion: *foei! fy! fchaam u! fy upon you!*
weg! away!

Of warning: *ho! ho! hola! ho there! pas op!*
have a care.

Of threatening: *wee! wo! wee u! wo to you!*

Of filence: *fus! hush, hist.*

The following words belong, according to some grammarians, alfo to the interjections:

Brand! brand! a fire! a fire!

Houd den dief! ftop thief!

Houd moed! keep courage!

Help! help! help! help!

Berg uw hoofd! have a care!

Ach hemel! ah heaven!

And a great many more.

E X E R C I S E,

upon the prepositions.

N^o. 134.

Alas! who can express my grief! I am undone!
Wo to you! Ufurers, misers, unjust poffefors of
other people's good. Come, let us rejoice! Good!

we have money and time enough. Oh! how lovely a virtue is modesty! He is, alas! a very unfortunate creature! Fy! fy! you do not know what you say! O heaven! all is lost! Have a care! they will hurt you! Come, be cheerful! all will do better. Hush there! Silence! Do not cry. Oh! the dismal effects which laziness produces!

To express,
I am undone,
Usurer,
Miser,
Possessor,
To rejoice,
How lovely a virtue,
To hurt,
Cheerful,
Dismal,
Effect,
To produce,

uitdrukken.
het is met mij gedaan.
woekeraar.
gierigaard.
bezitter.
verheugen.
wat eene beminnelijke deugd.
flaan.
opgeruimd.
noodlottig.
uitwerksel. n.
voortbrengen.

P A R T. III.

O F

S Y N T A X.

The third part of Grammar is Syntax, which treats of the agreement and construction of words in a sentence.

Syntax principally consists of two parts, *concord*, (*overeenkomst*) and *government* (*regering*).

Concord is the agreement which one word has with an other, in gender, number, case or person.

Government is that power which one part of speech has over an other, in directing its mood, tense or case.

Of Articles.

Van de Lidwoorden.

The articles, whenever used in the dutch language, are placed before the substantives.

The definite article is used before a substantive taken in a particular, or an individual sense.

De dagen van den winter the days or the winter are
zijn kort, short.

De aarde draait, en niet the earth turns, and not
de zon, the sun.

The indefinite article is used before a substantive singular, and not specified.

*Ik heb een boek,
Zij koopen eene tafel,*

I have a book.
they buy a table.

Substantives taken in a partitive sense have no article at all:

*Geef ons geld,
Breng ons boter en kaas,* give us money.
bring us butter and cheese.

The definite article is used before the several parts of speech used substantively.

*Het eten is noodzakelijk,
Het goed en kwaad is ver-
mengd.* eating is necessary.
good and bad is blended.

*Wij kennen het voor en te-
gen,* we know the pro and con.

No article is used before proper names of persons, countries, regions, and towns, as:

<i>Alexander werd de groote bijgenaamd,</i>	Alexander was surnamed the great.
<i>Cicero was een redenaar,</i>	Cicero was an orator.
<i>Engeland ligt ten zuiden van Schotland,</i>	England is situated on the south of Scotland.
<i>Normandië is eene provincie van Frankrijk,</i>	Normandy is a province of France.

Except: *de Nederlanden*, the Netherlands; *de vereenigde Staten*, the united States; *de Elzas*, Alsace; *de Kerkelijke Staat*, the Ecclesiastical State; *den Haag*, the Hague.

The article is used before proper names, which denote an individual distinction, as:

<i>Het paradijs van Milton,</i>	Milton's paradise.
<i>De Athalia van Racine,</i>	Racine's Athalia.
<i>De Merope van Voltaire,</i>	Voltaire's Merope.

It is also used before the nouns proper of persons in the plural.

<i>Hij is eene der Stuarts,</i>	he is one of the Stuarts.
<i>Zij is eene van de familie der Howards,</i>	she is of the family of the Howards.

The nouns of rivers and mountains are preceded by the definite article:

Wij vinden de Pyreneën tus- we find the Pyrenees be-
schen Frankrijk en Spanje, tween Spain en France.
De Oder is eene rivier in the Oder is a river in Ger-
Duitschland. many.

When te proper names of countries, cities or vil-
 lages are preceded by an adnoun, the definite article
 is used:

Het vermaarde Londen, the famous city of London.
Het volkrijke Frankrijk, populous France.
Het rijke Engeland, rich England.

The article is not used before words expressing the
 title, dignity, profession, etc.

Keizer Alexander, the emperor Alexander.
Koningin Maria, queen Mary.
Maria Stuart, koningin Mary Stuart, queen of Scot-
van Schotland, land.
Hertog Philippus van Bour- duke Philip of Burgundy.
gondië.

The proper names of nations are always preceded
 by the definite article.

De Grieken voerden krijg the Greeks made war against
tegen de Perzen, the Persians.
De Romeinen verwoestten the Romans destroyed Car-
Karthago, thage.
De Engelschen hebben groote the English have vast pos-
bezittingen in Indië, sessions in Indië.

No article is used before the names of persons
 spoken to, as:

Kinderen, doe uwen pligt, children, perform your du-
 ty.
Vrienden, geloof het niet, my friends, do not believe
 it.
Nicht, wat denkt gij van my niece, what do you
die zaak? think of the matter?

The article must be used before the cardinal num-

bers, if the nouns to which they are joined have a fixed number, such as:

<i>De vier jaargetijden,</i>	the four seasons.
<i>De negen zanggodinnen,</i>	the nine muses.
<i>De twaalf maanden des jaars.</i>	the twelve months of the year.

Also if it be specified:

<i>De drie brieven, die ik ontvangen heb,</i>	the three letters which I have received.
<i>De tiende van Oogstmaand,</i>	the tenth of August.

The definite article is used in Dutch, and not in English, before all substantives taken in the whole extend of their signification:

<i>De deugd is beminnelijk,</i>	virtue is amiable.
<i>De ondeugd is hatelijk,</i>	vice is odious.
<i>De geschiedenis is aange-naam.</i>	history is agreeable.

No article is used when the verb and noun form together but one idea. It is also omitted in a great many phrases. Examples:

<i>Medelijden hebben,</i>	to pity.
<i>Honger hebben,</i>	to be hungry.
<i>Dorst hebben,</i>	to be thirsty.
<i>Tijd hebben,</i>	to have time.
<i>Geduld hebben,</i>	to have patience.
<i>Te paard rijden,</i>	to ride on horseback.
<i>Geloof slaan,</i>	to give credit.
<i>Raad vragen,</i>	to take advice.
<i>Vermaak hebben,</i>	to have pleasure.
<i>Adem halen,</i>	to take breath.
<i>In hemel en op aarde,</i>	in heaven and upon earth.
<i>Hollandsch spreken,</i>	to speak dutch.
<i>Vrouw en kinderen verlaten,</i>	to forsake wife and children.
<i>Fortuin maken,</i>	to make fortune.
<i>Schipbreuk lijden,</i>	to be shipwrecked.
<i>Haast hebben,</i>	to be in a hurry.
<i>Vergiffenis vragen,</i>	to ask pardon.
<i>Gehoor geven,</i>	to give audience.
<i>Plaats maken,</i>	to make room.

<i>Verlof geven,</i>	to go leave.
<i>Voornemens zijn,</i>	to have design.
<i>Eer bewijzen,</i>	to do honour.

No article is used in a great number of proverbs :

<i>Nood breekt wet,</i>	necessity has no law.
<i>Praatjes vullen den buik niet,</i>	a hungry belly has no ears.
<i>Als katten en honden zamen leven,</i>	to agree like dog and cat.
<i>Op handen en voeten loopen,</i>	to go upon all four.
<i>Geld is de ziel van alles,</i>	money answers all occasions.
<i>Met pak en zak yertrekken,</i>	to truss up bag and baggage.
<i>Overvloed baart verdelheid.</i>	plenty gets division.
<i>Weelde doet gebrek lijden,</i>	luxury brings forth poverty.
<i>Geld blinkt en klinkt,</i>	money chimes and chinks.
<i>Haantje de voorste zijn.</i>	to be cock a hoop.

The articles agree, in gender, number and cases, with the substantives, to which they are joined, as :

<i>Het boek van den meester,</i>	the book of the master.
<i>Het huis van de moeder,</i>	the house of the mother.
<i>De zuster der tante,</i>	the sister of the aunt.

In some phrases the article is separated from the substantive by some words, as :

<i>De altijd vrolijke moeder,</i>	the mother, who is always gay.
<i>De altijd in kunde toene- mende jongeling,</i>	the youth who is continually improving in science.

This construction however must be avoided; it is better to say :

De jongeling, die steeds in kunde toeneemt,

The definite article *het*, of the neuter gender, is sometimes used alone :

Waar is het kind? hier is het, where is the child? here it is.

Waar is het mes? hij heeft where is the knife? he
het, has it.

Het is often joined to the auxiliary verb *zijn*, followed by a substantive; it is then used instead of a pronoun, as:

Het is een rijk man, he is a rich man.
Het is een deugdzaam vrouw, she is a virtuous woman.
Het zijn soldaten, they are soldiers.

Het has sometimes a reference to a whole phrase:

Wat gij zegt kan waar zijn, what you tell may be true,
maar ik geloof het niet, but I don't believe it.

Het is used with the impersonal verbs:

Het regent, it rains.
Het hagelt, it hails.
Het dondert, it thunders.

The indefinite article *een* is often used without a substantive:

Hij zoekt een boek. Hier seeks a book. Here is one.
is er een,
Geef mij eenen hoed, indien give me a hat, if you have
gij er eenen hebt, one.

It is not necessary to repeat the articles before the substantives of the same gender and the same number, as:

De deugd en schoonheid van the virtue and beauty of
deze vrouw, this woman.
De leijen en pennen dezer the slates and pens of these
kinderen, children.

When the substantives have different genders, the repetition of the article is absolutely necessary.

De dood en het leven, death and life.
Ik heb het mes en de vork, I have the knife and fork.
De jongen en het meisje leeren de lessen, the boy and girl learn the lessons.

Chiefly in the oblique cases:

Hij heeft de boeken van den vader en van de moeder, he has the books of the father and the mother.
Hij schrijft aan den koning en aan de koningin, he writes to the king and to the queen.
Wij hebben den aartshertog en de aartshertogin gezien, we have seen the archduke and the archduches.

The article is also repeated before substantives of differend number, as :

Ik ken den vader en de zoons, I know the father and the sons.
Wij zagen den meester en de leerlingen, we saw the master and the pupils.

The article is always repeated before substantives connected by the conjunction *en*.

De koning en de veldheer, the king and the general.
De moeder en de dochter, the mother and the daughter.

The indefinite article is repeated before each substantive :

Hij heeft een boek en eene pen, he has a book and a pen.
Hij koopt eenen hoed en eenen rok, he buys a hat and a coat.

The English use the definite article before nouns of measure, weight and number, when they want to express how much a thing is worth. The dutch use, in such cases, the definite article :

Drie gulden de el, three guilders a yard.
Zes schellingen het pond, six shillings a pound.
Vijf gulden het schepel, five guilders a bushel.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the syntax of Articles.

N°. 135.

Fortune is a capricious deity. A friend cannot be well known in prosperity, nor hidden in adversity. The instructions of adversity are wholesome, though unpleasing; the lessons of prosperity are pleasant, but often pernicious. This cheese costs seven pence a pound, and that beer five pence a pot. They sell sugar for four guineas a hundred weight. Corn was sold last week for three crowns a bushel. France, England and Prussia are three powerful kingdoms in Europe. Intemperance and idleness are the two most dangerous enemies of life. Charity is the greatest of all christian virtues.

Capricious,
Deity,
Prosperity,
Adversity,
Wholesome,
Unpleasing,
Pernicious,
A hundred weight,
Bushel,
Intemperance,
Charity,
Christian,

eigenzinnig.
Godheid. f.
voorspoed. m.
tegenspoed. m.
heilzaam.
onaangenaam.
nadeelig.
het kwintaal.
schepel. n.
onmatigheid. f.
liefdadigheid.
christelijk.

N°. 118.

Pride and vanity are often the source of many misfortunes. Europe is the smallest part of the world. Sicily is the granary of Italy, and Italy the garden of

Europe. Heroes have their fits of fear, and cowards their brave moments. We have travelled in the most fruitful parts of Indie and Persia. The Ebro flows into the Mediterranean, the Tagus into the Atlantic ocean, and the Thames into the North-sea. Jutland, a peninsula, stretches out from the north of Germany; its northern extremity is cape Scaw. The strait of Dover leads from the British channel to the German sea. The silvermines of Kongsberg in Norway, about forty miles from Christiana, are esteemed the richest in Europe.

Pride, vanity,
Source,
Granary,
Fits,
Coward,
To flow,
Mediterranean,
Tagus,
Atlantic ocean,
Thames,
North-sea,
Peninsula,
To stretch out,
Extremity,
Strait,
To lead,
British channel,
Silvermine,
Are esteemed,

hoogmoed. m. ijdelheid. f.
bron. f.
graanschuur. f.
oogenblik. m.
lafaard.
uitloopen.
Middellandsche zee.
Taag.
Atlantische oceaan.
Theems.
Noord-zee.
Schierëiland. o.
zich uitstrekken.
punt.
straat.
leiden.
Britsch kanaal.
zilvermijn.
worden gehouden.

N^o. 137.

Great events happened at the death of Caesar. A good christian considers the world as a place of banishment, where he meets with snares, difficulties and dangers. Learn to speak well; but, above all, to speak truth. Does your master teach you to translate English into French? To understand geography well, you must read this book. The copper-mines of Roras, are about sixty eight miles from Drontheim, in the southern slope of the chain of mountains called Doffra.

European Turkey was subjugated in the fifteenth century by the Turks or Turcomans. Belgrade lies on the Danube, in the province of Servia.

Ewent,	<i>gebeurtentis, f.</i>
To consider,	<i>beschouwen.</i>
Banishment,	<i>ballingschap. f.</i>
Snares,	<i>strik. m.</i>
To understand,	<i>verstaan.</i>
Copper mines,	<i>kopermijnen. f.</i>
Slope,	<i>helling. f.</i>
Chain of mountains,	<i>bergketen. f.</i>
European Turkey,	<i>Europisch Turkeije.</i>
To subjugate,	<i>overwinnen, ten onder brengen.</i>
Turcomans,	<i>Turcomannen.</i>
Belgrade,	<i>Belgrado.</i>
Danube,	<i>Donau. m.</i>
Servia,	<i>Servië.</i>

N^o. 381.

Emperor Alexander is surnamed the blessed. Interest, glory and ambition are the great motives of our actions. What are the sources of superstition? Fear and ignorance. Speech is the pencil of wit, and the interpreter of the heart. Vice and virtue have contrary effects. He always prefers virtue to interest. Remedies are often disgusting in proportion as they are salutary. Sicily makes a very respectable figure in history; a large part of it was highly cultivated and fertile. Civilization, arts and sciences had been early introduced in that island, by grecian colonies. The Carthaginians and Romans long contested the empire of the world.

Surnamed,	<i>bijgenaamd.</i>
The blessed,	<i>de gezegende.</i>
Interest,	<i>eigenbelang. o.</i>
Motive,	<i>beweegreden. f.</i>
Superstition,	<i>bijgeloof. o.</i>
Speech,	<i>de spraak. f.</i>
Pencil,	<i>penceel. o.</i>
Wit,	<i>verstand.</i>

Interpreter,
 Contrary effects,
 To prefer to,
 Disgustful,
 In proportion,
 Salutary,
 Cultivated,
 Civilization,
 To introduce,
 Colony,
 To contest,

soek. m.
tegenstrijdige uitwerkselen.
verkiezen boven.
walgelijk.
naar mate.
heilzaam.
aangekweekt.
beschaving. f.
invoeren.
volkplanting.
betwisten.

N°. 139.

Agrippa, the favourite general and son in law of August, built the Pantheon, an edifice in Rom, dedicated to all the Gods united. Rome, justly called the queen of nations, was situated twelve miles from the mouth of the river Tiber. Pliny, the roman naturalist, says, that the circumference of the city was twenty miles, and some writers make the population to have amounted to four millions. Isfus, where Alexander gained that great victory over Darius, is situated at the foot of mount Amanus. Rare events strike us with admiration. The globe of the earth is supposed to turn upon its axis.

Favourite,
 To dedicate,
 United,
 Justly called,
 Situated,
 Naturalist,
 Circumference,
 Make the population to have
 amounted,
 To gain a victory,
 Rare event,
 To strike with admiration,
 Globe of the earth,
 Is supposed,
 Axis,

begunstigde.
toewijden.
vereinigd.
met regt genaamd.
gelegen.
natuurkundige.
omtrek. m.
vooronderstellen dat de bevolking
beliep.
eene overwinning behalen.
zeldzaam voorval.
verwonderd doen staan.
aardbol. m.
wordt vooronderstelt.
as. f.

N^o. 140.

He is the Cicero of his age, and his brother the Virgil of England. Every man is not a Newton, a Bacon, a Pope. He has the courage of a Wellington, the prudence of a Nelson, and the wit of a Fielding. The Franklins will always be rare. The age of Lewis the fourteenth, by Voltaire, is rather the history of the mind and of the manners, than recitals of battles. Hypocrisy is a homage which vice pays to virtue. Custom is the legislator of languages. Machiavel and Hobbes lay down for maxims in the art of governing: craft, artifice, stratagem, despotic power and irreligion. A Demosthenes and a Socrates do not appear in every age.

Age, Virgil,
Rare,
Mind,
Manners,
Recital,
Hypocrisy,
Homage,
Custom,
Legislator,
Lay down,
Maxim,
Craft,
Artifice,
Stratagem,
Despotic power,
Irreligion,
To appear,

eeuw. Virgilius.
zeldzaam.
geest. m.
zeden. f.
verhaal. o.
geveinsdheid. f.
hulde. f.
gebruik. o.
wetgever.
felden.
grondregel. m.
slimheid.
breek.
list.
onbepaalde magt.
ongodsdienstigheid. f.
verschijnen.

N^o. 141.

Ambitious men sacrifice every thing to fortune. To the shame of human reason, the grossest errors find their abettors. Light is supposed to be an emanation

of the rays of the sun. The use of words is often contrary to their analogy. The Adriatic sea is a great gulph of the Mediterranean. One ought in learned works, join profit to pleasure. The industrious are praised, but the slothful are punished and despised. Newton says, there are seven primitive colours, red, orange-colour, yellow, green, indigo and violet-colour. People begun to play at cards in France in 1390, under the reign of Charles the sixth.

To sacrifice,
To the shame,
Reason,
A gross error,
Abettor,
Emanation,
Analogy,
Adriatic Sea,
To join profit to,
Industrious,
Slothful,
To despise,
Primitive,
Violet-colour,
People begun,
To play at cards,

opofferen.
tot fchande.
rede. f.
eene grove dwaling.
verdediger.
uitvloefel. o.
analogie.
Adriatifche-Zee.
voordeel voegen bij.
vljichtige.
lui.
verachten.
oorspronkelijk.
paars.
men begon.
kaart fpielen.

N° 142.

The mouth of the Danube has five large canals in the Euxine Sea. Homer and Virgil are the princes of poets; Demosthenes and Cicero the princes of orators. Confucius was the great lawgiver of the Chinese. Pythagoras taught the immortality of the soul to the Scythians. The fidelity of Andromache and Penelope are celebrated in the writings of Homer. Harvey, physician to Charles the first, king of England, is the first who observed the circulation of the blood in 1628. Wisdom and modesty do not less gain the esteem of men, than folly and pride their contempt. Helen, daughter of Tyndar, king of Laconia, was the cause

of the Trojan war. The character of Esop's fables is simple nature.

Euxine Sea,
 Prince,
 Orator,
 Lawgiver,
 Immortality,
 Scythians,
 Fidelity,
 Celebrated,
 To observe,
 Circulation,
 Do not less gain,
 Contempt,
 Folly; pride,
 Helen,
 Trojan war,
 Simple nature,

Zwarte zee,
 vorst.
 redenaar.
 wetgever.
 onsterfelijkheid.
 Scythen.
 getrouwheid.
 bezongen.
 waarnemen.
 omloop. m.
 winnen niet minder.
 verachting.
 dwaasheid. Hoogmoed, m.
 Helena.
 Trojaansche oorlog. m.
 eenvoudige natuur.

N^o. 143.

The hieroglyphics of the Egyptians were figures of men, birds, animals and reptiles. Man is exposed to all sorts of infirmities. Old age is a sort of tyrant, who forbids under pain of death, all the pleasures of youth. Praises are a sort of tribute that is paid to true merit. No one becomes debauched or virtuous on a sudden. Nothing can be more intolerable than a fortunate fool. Whoever spares the bad does harm to the good. We find it book the third, chapter the seventh, rule the eleventh. Besides coffee and sugar we draw from the East-Indies, spices, rice, etc. A liar and a flatterer are equally despicable. Cares and infelicities attend often human grandour.

Hieroglyphics,
 Egyptians,
 Figure,
 Reptiles,
 To forbid,
 Under pain of death,
 Praises,
 Tribute,

beeldspraak. v.
 Egyptenaars.
 figuur.
 kruipende dieren.
 verbieden.
 op doodsstraffe.
 loftuitingen.
 schatting. v.

To become debauched,	<i>secht worden</i>
Intolerable,	<i>ondragelijk.</i>
On a sudden,	<i>eensklaps.</i>
To do harm,	<i>benadeelen.</i>
We draw,	<i>wij krijgen.</i>
Spice,	<i>specerijen.</i>
Despicable,	<i>verachtelijk.</i>
Infelicity,	<i>ongeluk.</i>
To attend,	<i>vergezellen.</i>

Of the syntax of Substantives.

Over de woordvoeging der zelfstandige Naamwoorden.

If two or more substantives, in a phrase, have the same relation to the verb, or to an other part of speech, they are in the same case.

<i>Ik zie uwen neef en uwe nicht,</i>	I see your cousin and your niece.
<i>Ik ken, niet alleen den hertog, maar ook de hertogin,</i>	I know, not only the duke, but also the dutches.
<i>Hij vreest God, menschen, noch wetten.</i>	He fears neither God, men, not laws.

It appears from these phrases, that substantives, which have the same relation, are united by copulative conjunctions.

If the latter substantive determinates the signification of the former, they are both in the same case, but not always in the same number.

<i>Ik ga naar Weenen, de hoofdstad van Oostenrijk,</i>	I go to Vienna, the capital of Austria.
<i>Ik ben geboren te Londen, de hoofdstad van Engeland,</i>	I am born at London, the capital of England.
<i>Zijne dwaasheden, de eenige bron van zijn ongeluk,</i>	his follies, the only source of his misfortune.
<i>Breng aan zijnen buurman, mijnen vriend, dit boek,</i>	bring to his neighbour, my friend, this book.
<i>De hertog van Wellington, opperbevelhebber des legers,</i>	the duke of Wellington, general in chief of the army.

If one substantive has some power over an other, we say that the latter is governed by the former. The connection of such substantives is effectuated by a preposition, or by putting the latter noun in the genitive case.

By a preposition:

<i>Brieven van Willem,</i>	letters of William.
<i>Een ring van goud,</i>	a ring of gold.
<i>Liefde tot den pligt,</i>	love for duty.
<i>Menschen uit de hoofdstad,</i>	men from the capital.
<i>Groot door verdiensten,</i>	great by merits.
<i>Een hoop hout,</i>	a pile of wood.

By the genitive:

<i>De starren des hemels,</i>	the stars of heaven.
<i>De grootte des heelals,</i>	the grandour of the univers.
<i>De ylijt der kinderen,</i>	the application of children.

When two nouns are connected so as to form but one idea, the latter is only in the genitive:

<i>Koning Willems verjaardag,</i>	the birthday of king William.
<i>Koning Georges regering,</i>	the reign of king George.
<i>Graaf Hendriks lotgevallen,</i>	the adventures of count Henry.

In some phrases the preposition is not expressed but understood.

<i>Eene rei bergen,</i>	a ridge of hills.
<i>Een regiment voetvolk,</i>	a regiment of foot.
<i>Een snoer parelen,</i>	a necklace of pearls.
<i>Eene kudde schapen,</i>	a flock of sheep.
<i>Een hoop ruiters,</i>	a troop of horse.

Sometimes two substantives are joined together so as to make a compound word.

<i>De windmolen,</i>	the wind-mill.
<i>Een tinteldoos,</i>	a patch-box.
<i>Er zijn veel zijwormen in Italië,</i>	there are a great many silkworms in Italy.

The second substantive, governed by the first, may govern in its turn, the third noun.

De rijkdommen van de inwoners der hoofdstad, the riches of the inhabitants of the capital.

De deugden van de koningin der Nederlanden. the virtues of the queen of the Netherlands.

De sukkelingen des ouderdoms zijn dikwerf de gevolgen van de losbandigheden der jeugd, the infirmities of old age are oftentimes the consequences of the debauches of youth.

EXERCISES,

upon the syntax of Substantives.

N°. 144.

One day spent in the practice of virtue and religion is better than a whole life spent in impiety and wickedness. The rules of civility are those of decency and good manners. The impious are enemies to virtue. Our consciousness of good and evil shews us what ought to be the rule to govern our actions. The corruption of the heart is often the cause of the corruption of the mind. The society of men should soon be overturned, if every one could with impunity take from another what he should think proper. Peru has rich mines of gold, silver and diamonds. Many pretend that the battles are not so bloody, since the invention of fire-arms.

To spend,
Practice of virtue,
Impiety,
Wickedness,
Civility,
Decency,
Consciousness,
To shew,

doorbrengen.
uitoefening der deugd.
goddeloosheid. v.
slechtheid. v.
wellevendheid.
betamelijkheid.
kennis. f.
tooren.

What ought to be the rule,	<i>wat de regel behoort te zijn.</i>
Corruption,	<i>bedorvenheid.</i>
Society,	<i>maatschappij. v.</i>
To overturn,	<i>omverwerpen.</i>
With impunity,	<i>straffeloos.</i>
To think proper,	<i>goed vinden.</i>
To pretend,	<i>voorgeven.</i>
Bloody,	<i>bloedig.</i>
Invention,	<i>uitvinding. f.</i>

N°. 145.

Corrupted men easily believe that there is no more virtue, probity and sincerity in others than in themselves. When the unbelievers invaded Spain, an innumerable multitude of inhabitants retired into the Asturias, where they proclaimed Jelagius for their king. The people wish for war, but the king who knows best the interest of the nation has voted for the continuation of peace. The kingdom of Prussia is composed of territories partly in Germany, and partly in Poland. It was not erected into a kingdom until the beginning of the eighteenth century.

Corrupted,	<i>bedorven.</i>
Easily,	<i>ligtelijk.</i>
Unbeliever,	<i>ongeloovige.</i>
To invade,	<i>eenen inval doen.</i>
Unnumerable multitude,	<i>tallooze menigte.</i>
To retire,	<i>eene schuilplaats zoeken.</i>
Asturias,	<i>Asturië.</i>
To proclaim for,	<i>uitroepen tot.</i>
Interest,	<i>belang. o.</i>
To vote,	<i>stemmen.</i>
Continuation,	<i>voortdoring.</i>
To compose,	<i>zamenstellen.</i>
Territories,	<i>landen.</i>
Partly,	<i>gedeeltelijk.</i>
To erect in,	<i>verheffen tot.</i>

Of the syntax of Adnouns.

Van de Woordvoeging der bijvoegelijke Naamwoorden.

Every adjective belongs to a substantive, expressed or understood.

Hij is een goed, zoo wel als he is a good, as well as a
een wijs man, wife man.
Weinigen zijn gelukkig, few are happy.

The adjectives are put before the substantives to which they belong, and must agree with them in genre, nombre and case:

Een deugdzaam vorst, a virtuous prince.
Eene gevoelige vrouw, a sensible woman.
Een vlijtig kind, a diligent child.
Ongelukkige veldheeren, unfortunate generals.

When the adjective belongs to a proper name, it is put often after the substantive.

Alexander de gezegende, Alexander the blessed.
Karel de twaalfde was een Charles the twelfth was
vijand van Peter den eer- an enemy to Peter the
sten, first.
Lodewijk de welbeminde, Lewis the beloved.

The adjectives are used like adverbs, when they are put, without article, after the substantive.

Een kind gezond, vrolijk a child wholesome, gay and
en vlijtig, diligent.
Wij kennen eene vrouw, we know a woman, young,
jong, schoon, kuisch en beautiful, chaste and vir-
deugdzaam, tuous.

The adjectives are also indeclinable after the verbs *zijn*, to be; *worden*, to be; *blijven*, to remain.

De dochter is deugdzaam, the daughter is virtuous.
 and not
De dochter is deugdzaam,

Die onderwijzers zijn geleerd, these teachers are learned.

Die steden worden volkrijk, these cities become populous.

De man blijft geduldig, the man remains patient.

Sometimes the adnoun is put before the auxiliary verb *zijn*, to be; but remain, nevertheless, indeclinable.

Majestueus is het gezigt der ondergaande zon, majestic is the sight of the sun setting.

Verrukkend is het denkbeeld der deugd, charming is the idea of virtue.

Overtuigend zijn de woorden van dien redenaar, persuasive are the words of that orator.

In some expressions the adjective is remotod from the substantive.

Allerlei menschen, rijke zoo wel als arme, all sorts of men, rich as well as poor.

In de toekomende week, zoo wel als in de verledene, in the following week, as well as in the past.

A simple adnoun is sometimes joined to two substantives.

Hooge torens en kerken, high steeples and churches.
Brede tafels en banken, broad tables and benches.

The adnoun must be repeated, when the substantives are of different genders.

De vlijtigste jongen, en het vlijtigste meisje, the most diligent boy and girl.

The repetition of the adnoun may be avoided by a transposition of words, as:

De jongen en het meisje, die vreesachtig zijn, the boy and the girl who are timorous.

When, of two substantives, the one determinates the other, the adnoun agrees in gender, number and case, with the determinative.

De mensch, het edelste schepsel, man, the most noble creature.

De leeuw, het moedigste viervoetige dier, the lion, the most courageous quadruped.

Sometimes two or more adjectives relate to one substantive.

Een regtvaardig en goeder- a just and bountiful God.
tieren God,

een eenvoudige en natuurlij- a plain and natural stile.
ke stijl,

The adnouns are sometimes connected by copulative conjunctions :

Groote en kleine kamers, great and small chambers.

Dappere en voorzigtige man- brave and prudent men.
nen,

When two adnouns have the same termination, the first termination is retrenched.

De in- en uitwendige deelen, the internal and external parts.

The adnoun, which modifies an other adjective, is taken adverbially, or is indeclinable.

Eene lang vergetene geschie- a history, long forgotten.
denis,

Eene kunstig gemaakte tafel, a table artificially made.

Ligt gekwetste soldaten, slightly wounded soldiers.

This modification is also expressed by some adverbs :

Een zeer fraaije tuin, a very fine garden.

Een buitengewoon geleerd a very learned man.
man,

The adnouns used substantively are of the neuter gender.

Het verhevene is de navol- the sublime is the imitation
ging der eenvoudige na- of simple nature.
tuur.

Het blaauw en het groen, blue and green.

Het goede wordt geprezen, good is praised.

Het eerlijke bevalt mij, honesty pleases me.

To the adnouns, used substantively, we add *e*, except to those which express a colour.

Of the government of Adjectives.

Van de regering der bijvoegelijke Naamwoorden.

Some adnouns have no government, as: *groot*, great; *klein*, small; *wijs*, wise; *gelukkig*, happy, and all those which have a limited signification.

Those which govern the genitive case are: *schuldig*, *waardig*, *kundig*, *magtig*, *zat*, *moede*, *gedachtig*, *bewust*; also those which express the contrary: *on-schuldig*, *onmagtig*.

<i>Zij is des doods schuldig,</i>	she deserves death.
<i>Eene der beantwoording</i> <i>waardige vraag,</i>	a question worthy to be answered.
<i>Des levens zat,</i>	tired of live.
<i>Der zake kundig,</i>	having knowledge of the affair.
<i>Zij zijn mijner vriendschap</i> <i>onwaardig,</i>	they are unworthy of my friendship.
<i>Mijner afkomst gedachtig,</i>	mindful of my descent.
<i>Mijner onschuld bewust,</i>	conscious of my innocence.

Some of these adjectives are also used with a preposition, or followed by the accusative case.

Those which govern the dative case are: *bekend*, *duidelijk*, *gelijk*, *gevaarlijk*, *dienstig*, *aangenaam*, *gehoorzaam*, *gevaarlijk*, *heilzaam*, *schadelijk*, *nuttig*, *veroorloofd*, *toegenegen*, *toegedaan*, *verkleefd*, *getrouw*, *onderworpen*.

<i>Die knecht is zijnen heer ge-</i> <i>lijk,</i>	that valet resembles to his master.
<i>De leerlingen zijn den mees-</i> <i>ter gehoorzaam,</i>	the pupils are obedient to the master.
<i>Zij is hem onderworpen,</i>	she is submitted to him.
<i>Zij zijn den regter veel</i> <i>verschuldigd,</i>	they owe much to the judge.
<i>Dat is u zeer nuttig,</i>	that is very useful to you.
<i>Zij is hem toegenegen,</i>	she has affection for him.
<i>Wij zijn aan u verkleefd,</i>	we are attached to you.
<i>Getrouw aan den koning,</i>	loyal to the king.

Die raad was ons heilzaam, that advise was wholesome
to us.

Is dit hem schadelijk? is that hurtful to him?

Het is mij veroorloofd, it is allowed to me.

Also those which express the contrary as: *onaan-
genaam*, disagreeable; *on gehoorzaam*, disobedient; *on-
getrouw*, not loyal.

The adnouns expressing the weight, the value, etc.
govern the accusative case:

Het kost mij eenen gulden, it costs me a guilder.

Dat stuk is eene el lang, that piece is a yard long.

Het is eenen duim breed, it is an inch broad.

The adjectives followed by certain prepositions are:

*Zij zijn schuldig aan dief- they are guilty of robbery.
stal*,

*De dood is aan alle menschen- death is common to all men.
gemeen*,

Zijn zij tevreden over u? are they content of you?

Hij is van verraad verdacht, he is suspect of treason.

*Zij zijn doof voor mijne they lend a deaf ear to my
klachten*, complaints.

*Is dat nadeelig voor de ge- is that prejudicial to health?
zondheid?*

Genegen tot toorn, inclined to wrath.

Dat is voor u nuttig, that is useful to you.

*Dat is aangenaam voor het that is agreeable to the fight.
gezicht*,

*Zij is megaande omtrent an- she is of a merciful temper.
deren*,

*Hulpvaardig omtrent ande- helpful to others.
ren*,

*Gij zijt ongevoelig voor dit you are insensible to all
alles*, that.

Verplichtend jegens ieder, obliging to every one.

*De straf is geëvenredigd aan the punishment is propor-
de misdaad*, tionate to the crime.

*Hij is onbekwaam voor zij- he is incapable of his of-
nen post*, fice.

*Zij zijn vatbaar voor goede they are susceptible of good
indrukken*, impressions.

Door de fortuin begunstigd, favoured by fortune.

<i>Onvermoeid in het werk,</i>	indefatigable in business.
<i>Het is moeijelijk voor hem,</i>	it is difficult to him.
<i>Onafhankelijk van den koning,</i>	independent of the king.
<i>Hij is tegen haar verbit- terd,</i>	he is exasperated against her.
<i>Verliefd op een meisje,</i>	in love with a girl.
<i>Verslingerd op het spel,</i>	eager at play.
<i>Geneigd tot kwaad,</i>	inclined to evil.
<i>Beleefd jegens een ieder,</i>	courteous to every one.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the syntax of Adjectives.

N^o. 145.

We are infinitely obliged to our forefathers for the fundamental rules of the sciences. A litigious man is an abominable being. The courage and intrepidity of Charles the twelfth, king of Sweden, were wonderful. The victories which that hero obtained were baneful to his country. That is pernicious to the inhabitants of the Netherlands. All that is dismal to human nature. Lewis the fourteenth had in France an absolute power and authority. Garrick played with charming taste and nobleness. The English fight at sea with wonderful courage and intrepidity.

Infinitely,
Forefathers,
Fundamental rule,
Litigious,
Abominable,
Intrepidity,
To obtain a victory,
Baneful to,
Pernicious to,

oneindig.
voorvaderen.
grondregel. m.
twistziek.
afschuwelijk.
onversaagdheid.
eene overwinning behalen.
noodlottig voor.
nadeelig voor.

Dismal to,
Absolute,
Authority,
Charming,
Taste,
Nobleness,

heilloos voor.
onbepaald.
gezag. n.
bevallig.
smaak. m.
edelheid.

N^o. 147.

In most of the courtiers we find nothing but an affected politeness and sincerity. Uranus is the most distant planet; it takes eighty four years to turn round the sun. A lie is unworthy of an honest man. The pythian games were consecrated to the God Apollo. The holy scriptures are a treasure of noble, grand and sublime thoughts. Most men are desirous of new things. I am uneasy about that matter, what will be the issue of it? God alone is free from inconstancy. Nature is content with a little. Maritime and marshy places are liable to heavy fogs.

Courtier,
Affected,
The most distant,
It takes,
Unworthy,
Pythian games,
Consecrated,
Holy scripture,
Treasure,
Sublime,
Desirous of,
New things,
Uneasy about,
Issue,
Free from,
Inconstancy,
Maritime,
Marshy,
Liable to,
Heavy fog,

hovelings.
gemaakt.
de verste.
zij heeft noodig.
onwaardig.
Pythische spelen.
toegewijd.
heilige schrift.
schat. m.
verheven.
gretig naar.
nieuwigheden.
ongerust over.
uitslag. m.
vrij van.
onstandvastigheid.
aan de zee liggend.
moerasfig.
onderhevig aan.
dikke mist. m.

N^o. 148.

Nothing is more agreeable to the nature of men, than beneficence. The favours of fortune are common to the righteous and wicked. These children are inclined to idleness. Life is full of miseries. I am satisfied with him and with her. Is he not fatigued with running? Wellington, loaded with honours, has defeated the enemies. We are invain endued with reason, if we are not endued with virtues. They are worthy of praise, they have performed their duty. A christian ought to be ready to die, rather than deny his faith. We are sensible of your kindness.

Agreeable to,
Beneficence,
Common,
Righteous,
Wicked,
Misery,
Fatigued with,
To run,
Loaded with,
Endued,
Invain,
Worthy of praise,
To perform,
To deny,
Sensible of,

overeenkomstig met.
weldadigheid.
gemeen.
regtvaardige.
goddeloos.
ellende.
vermoeid van.
loopen.
overladen met.
begaafd.
te vergeefs.
waardig geprezen te worden.
doen.
verzaken.
gevoelig voor.

N^o. 149.

You ought to be civil to every one. He is very precise in fulfilling his engagements. Christians should be patient in suffering injuries. Scipio Africanus was respectful to his mother, liberal to his sisters, good to his servants, just and affable to every body. The diligent pupils are praised, but the idle one's are dis-
nised and reprov'd. His negligence was always very

prejudicial to his affairs. They were provided against the cold, and continued their voyage in the midst of the winter. That vice is inseparable from our age. His garden is contiguous to mine and hers. He has an inclination for study, and despises idleness.

You ought to be,
Precise,
To fulfill,
Engagement,
To suffer injuries,
Liberal,
Affable to,
The idle one's,
To despise,
To reprove,
Prejudicial,
Provided against,
Inseparable,
Contiguous to,
Inclination for,

*gij behoort te aijn.
naauwkeurig.
vervullen.
verbindtenis. v.
beleedigingen lijden.
milddadig.
vriendelijk jegens.
de luije.
verachten.
berispen.
nadeelig.
voorzien tegen.
onscheidbaar.
grenst aan.
geneigdheid voor.*

N°. 150.

The servants ought to be faithful to their masters. It fell out agreeably to our wishes. They are submissive to their superiors, they will be loved. He is unknown to all the inhabitants of the capital. We are very much obliged to him for all his goodness. It is a sad accident, we were not beware of it. These actions are worthy of reward. The man you mention is not capable of that employment. We are all of us subject to the laws. Were they not bound to these conditions? Holland is a country liable to inundations. The emperor was averse from peace, and carried on war. That conduct is usual to close men.

Faithful,
Agreeably to,
Submissive,
Superior,
Sad accident,
Aware of,

*getrouw.
overeenkomstig met.
onderworpen.
meerdere.
droevig voorval.
verdacht op.*

Subject to,	<i>onderworpen aan.</i>
Bound to,	<i>verbonden aan.</i>
Liable,	<i>onderhevig.</i>
Inundation,	<i>overstroming.</i>
Averse from,	<i>afkeerig van.</i>
To carry on,	<i>voortzetten.</i>
Usual,	<i>eigen.</i>
Close men,	<i>geheimhoudende lieden.</i>

 N°. 151.

Why is he obstinately bent against me? We are very much beholden to your uncle for his trouble. My father is deaf to my prayers, because I was not submissive to my betters. It is not becoming for you to do such things. That general is suspected of treason, he will be soon condemned. He is not susceptible of it, believe me. He is equal to the ancients in that art. Probity is one of the greatest qualities man can possess. Of all the amusements and pleasures of life, conversation has always been looked upon as the most reasonable method of unbending the mind. The reign of Lewis the fourteenth was one of the longest, and altogether one of the most glorious which is recorded in history.

Obstinately,	<i>stijfhoofdighijk.</i>
Bent,	<i>verbitterd.</i>
Beholden,	<i>verpligt.</i>
Betters,	<i>meerdereen.</i>
Becoming for,	<i>voegzaam voor.</i>
Suspected,	<i>verdacht.</i>
He is equal,	<i>hij evenaart.</i>
Conversation,	<i>de verkeerig.</i>
To unbend the mind,	<i>den geest ontspannen.</i>
And altogether,	<i>en tevens.</i>
Which is recorded,	<i>waarvan melding wordt gemaakt.</i>

 N°. 152.

The canal of Languedoc is one of the most memo-

able monuments, which have been made in the age of Lewis the fourteenth. Sobriety renders the most common way of living agreeable; it gives the most vigorous health, which is the most constant of all pleasures. The epic poem, whether it appear in the majestic simplicity of Homer, or in the finished elegance of Virgil, presents an endless variety of grand and beautiful objects, which it is impossible to contemplate without a perpetual succession of agreeable emotions. There is no knowledge more useful than that of ourselves. The walls of Babylon were two hundred feet high and fifty broad.

Memorable,
Monument,
Sobriety,
Vigorous,
Constant,
Epic poem,
To appear,
Majestic simplicity,
Finished elegance,
Variety,
Object,
To contemplate,
Perpetual succession,
Emotion,
Knowledge,

gedenkwaardig.
gedenkteeken. n.
matigheid.
sterk.
bestendig.
heldendicht. n.
verschijnen.
majestueuze eenvoudigheid.
uitgezogste sterlijkheid.
verscheidenheid.
voorwerp, n.
beschouwen.
bestendige opvolging.
aandoening.
kennis. f.

N°. 153.

The simplicity of nature is more amiable than all the embellishments of art. Nothing is more dangerous to young men, than bad company. Homer was more careful to describe nature, such as he found it, than to form heroes completely perfect. The passion for liberty is hardly less powerful in the heart of men, than the fear of death. Nothing is more flattering than praises received from a person generally praised. The reputation of honour is often more sought after than honour itself. Ambition excites no less jealousy than love does. Nothing is so eloquent than good

example. There is no rest so sweet as that which is bought by labour.

Amiable,
Embellishment,
Caretul,
To describe,
Completely perfect,
Passion for liberty,
Hardly,
Praises,
To seek after,
To excite,
Jealousy,
Eloquent,
Sweet,

beminnelijk.
verfraaijing.
zorgvuldig.
beschrijven.
geheel volmaakt.
zucht naar vrijheid.
naauwelijks.
loftuitingen.
opwekken.
zoeken.
ijverzucht. f.
welsprekend.
aangenaam.

N^o. 154.

Pride shuts the mind against the plainest conviction. The most learned men are not often the most virtuous. The most ancient and general idolatry was the worship rendered to the sun. The fewer desires, the more peace. Obedience is the surest means of pleasing our superiours. In what concerns futurity, fears are always as false as hopes. Cleopatra had on her ears two pearls, the finest which ever had been seen, each was valued at more than a million. Paternal authority is the most respectable of all laws. The greatest of misfortunes is to sink under them. It often happens that the greatest enemy a man has is himself.

To shut against,
Plain conviction,
Idolatry,
Worship,
The fewer,
Sure means,
In what concerns,
Futurity,
On her ears,
To value,
Paternal authority,
To sink under,

suiten voor.
klare overtuiging.
afgoderij.
aanbidding.
hoe minder.
zeker middel. n.
wat aangaat.
toekomst. f.
in hare ooren.
schatten.
vaderlijk gezag. n.
bezwijken onder.

Of the syntax of Pronouns.

Over de woordschikking der Voornaamwoorden.

a. Of Personal Pronouns.

The personal pronouns of the first and second person do not denote the gender; they are used as well for the masculine as for the feminine. But the pronoun of the third person expresses the gender.

<i>Hij is deugdzaam,</i>	he is virtuous.
<i>Zij is medelijdend,</i>	she is pitiful.
<i>Het kind is daar ; het speelt,</i>	the child is there ; it plays.

The personal pronoun is often followed by a substantive; in that case it is not repeated.

<i>Hij, uw vriend, gaf mij dit geld,</i>	he, your friend, gave me that money.
<i>Gij, mannen, zijt zeer wreed,</i>	you men are very cruel.
<i>Wij, vrouwen, zijn niet zoo ligtgeloovig,</i>	we, women, are not so credulous.

In these phrases the substantive agrees with the personal pronoun in gender, number and case:

<i>Geef het aan haar, mijne geliefde zuster,</i>	give it to her, my beloved sister.
<i>Ik zag hem, den gunsteling des konings,</i>	I saw him, the favourite of the king.

If two verbs govern the same pronoun, it is not repeated.

<i>Ik zal hem zoeken en vinden,</i>	I will seek and find him.
<i>Wij zullen het haar brengen of zenden,</i>	we shall bring or send it to her.
<i>Zij haat en veracht hem,</i>	she hates and despises him.

The personal pronouns are in some phrases relative, or have a reference to a preceding noun. In that case they cause often an equivocalness; chiefly when two nouns precede, so that it is difficult to distinguish to which noun it relates, as:

De veldheer werd gewond in the general was wounded
het gevecht, en toen de in the fight, and when
geneesheer hem wilde ver- the surgeon would dress
binden, werd hij gedood, the wound, he was killed.

Who was killed? Custom has decided that the pronoun has a reference to the first substantive. When the pronoun relates to the latter noun, we make use of *dezelve*. When the surgeon is killed we say:

De veldheer werd gewond in
het gevecht, en toen de
geneesheer hem wilde ver-
binden, werd dezelve ge-
dood.

In other phrases the ambiguity is avoided by the words *deze, gene, de eerste, de laatste*.

Men, one, does not express the gender, and is used in the plural and in the singular.

Men gelooft het algemeen, it is generally believed.
Men is voornemens, one has the intention.

The words *people, they, one*, are all rendered by *men*.

Niemand, nobody; and *iemand*, somebody do not express the gender, and have always the verb in the singular number.

Iemand vertelde mij dat somebody told me that
nieuws, news.

Niemand wil het koopen, nobody will buy it.
Ziet gij iemand? do you see any body?

Niemand is always followed by *dan*, and not by *als*, as:

Niemand dan gij, nobody but you.
Niemand dan zij sprak, nobody but she spoke.

Ieder, every one, and *iedereen*, every body, are also followed by the verb in the singular number.

Ieder zegt dat het waar is, every one says that it is true.

Iedereen gelooft het, every body believes it.

Instead of *iedereen* we use also *een ieder*.

Een ieder is overtuigd van de waarheid, every body is convinced of the truth.

In the oblique cases we use often *dezelve*, instead of the personal pronoun, when we speak of an inanimate thing. Speaking of a table one says: *Ik zag dezelve*, I saw it; *ik ging bij dezelve zitten*, I sat near it.

Er is also often used instead of the pronoun of the third person, as:

Er kwam een kind, a child came.
Er is iemand, there is somebody.

EXERCISES,

upon the syntax of personal pronouns.

N^o. 155.

The eagle has a piercing eye; he looks at the sun, without lowering his eyelids; he inhabits the cold countries, he builds his nest on the summit of the highest trees. Telemachus, speaking of his father Ulysses to the Goddess Calypso, said to her: Penelope his wife, and I who am his son, have lost all hope of seeing him again. He has written a book against you; but what he writes is read by no one. When one advised Philip to expell from his dominions a man who had spoken ill of him; I will take care not to do it, replied the king; he would go

every where, and speak ill of me. I forgive both you and him, because I hope you will behave better for the future.

Eagle,
Piercing,
To lower,
To inhabit,
Summit,
To advise,
To expel,
Dominions,
To speak ill,

arend. m.
doordringend.
sluiten.
bewonen.
kruin. m.
aanraden.
verbannen.
grondgebied. n.
kwaad spreken.

N^o. 156.

Cerberus was a horrible dog; he kept the gates of the hell. The forgiveness of our enemies does not consist solely in not hurting them in their reputation or fortune; we must beside love them, and do them good. What a misfortune is ours, neither of us is believed. It is better, says some one, to excite envy than pity. May you imitate the virtues of your ancestors. The manner of bearing the misfortunes, which happen to us, augments or diminishes them. We listen with complaisance to the advises, which are given to us by those who know how to flatter our passions. The first step to folly is to believe ourselves wise.

To keep,
Gate,
Forgiveness,
Does not consist solely,
To hurt,
What a misfortune is ours!
To excite,
To imitate,
To bear,
To augment,
To diminish,
Complaisance,
Folly,

bewaren.
poort. f.
vergiffenis. f.
bestaat niet alleenlijk.
benadeelen.
hoe groot is ons ongeluk.
verwekken.
navolgen.
dragen.
vermeerderen.
verminderen.
welgevallen. n.
dwaasheid.

N°. 157.

God is a father to those who love him, and a protector to those who fear him. Vice often deceives us under the shape of virtue. May these children be to you, what they have been to me. Pistratus said of a drunken man, who had spoken against him; I am no more angry with him, than if a blind man had run against me. Ambition is a noble passion, but it often occasions many mischiefs. History teaches us morality, in setting before us examples of virtues and vices, in order to imitate the former, and shun the latter. Believe me! fortune sells often very dear what people believes she gives away. Flattery has a soothingness in its sound; it is difficult not to listen to it.

Under the shape,
To be angry with one,
To run against one,
Mischiefs,
To teach,
Morality,
To shun,
To sell dear,
Soothingness,
To listen,

onder de gedaante.
boos op iemand zijn.
iemand tegen het lijf loopen.
onheil. n.
leeren; onderwijzen.
zedelijkheid.
vermijden.
duur verkoopen.
zachtheid.
luisteren.

N°. 158.

You, children, are obliged to perform your duty. That general was wounded in the battle of Waterloo, and when his brother came on to succour him, he was killed by a musket-ball. The flatterer has no good opinion either of himself or others. Self-love directs every thing to itself. Grief is a poison to those who abandon themselves to it. Seneca tells and repeats to us that anger is madness. Piety refers

all things to God, and selflove applies every thing to itself. Life is a gift of God; to destroy it is a crime. Labour is fruitless when nature is against it. Every body acts for himself. When a man does not mind any body but himself, he does not deserve to live.

To succour,	<i>ondersteunen.</i>
Opinion,	<i>denkbeeld. n.</i>
To direct,	<i>terugbrengen.</i>
Grief,	<i>verdriet. n.</i>
Poison,	<i>vergift. n.</i>
To repeat,	<i>verhalen.</i>
Anger,	<i>toorn. m.</i>
Madness,	<i>dolheid. f.</i>
Piety,	<i>godsvrucht. f.</i>
To apply to,	<i>toepassen op.</i>
Gift,	<i>gave. f.</i>
To destroy,	<i>vernietigen.</i>
Fruitless,	<i>vruchteloos.</i>
To mind,	<i>zorgen.</i>
To deserve,	<i>verdieneu; waardig zijn.</i>

b. Of pronouns possessive.

The pronouns possessive relative are always put before the substantives, and agree with them in gender, number and cases, as:

<i>Mijn geluk is zeer groot,</i>	my happiness is very great.
<i>Uwe beminnelijke dochter is deugdzaam,</i>	your lovely daughter is virtuous.
<i>Zijne heldendaden zijn overal bekend,</i>	his exploits are known every where.

We have observed already that the possessive pronoun of the third person expresses the gender as well of the possessor, as of the possessed thing. Therefore one says of a king: *zijne majesteit*, his majesty; of a queen: *hare majesteit*, her majesty; of a prince: *zijne hoogheid*, his highness; of a princess: *hare hoogheid*, her highness.

The possessive pronouns have a reference to the person of whom we speak, and not to the word, by

which that person is denoted. When the person of whom we speak is a man, the possessive pronoun must be masculine, though that man be denoted by a feminine noun, as:

Uwe majesteit heeft de grenzen van zijn gebied uitgebreid, your majesty has extended the bounds of his dominions.

Mark also the following phrases:

Het meisje viel, en brak haar been, the girl fell, and broke her leg.

Het wijf is boos op hare kinderen, the wife is angry with her children.

The possessive pronoun is not repeated before the nouns of the same gender, and number, connected by *en*:

Uwe vrouw en dochter, your wife and daughter.

Zijn broeder en zoon, his brother and son.

Zijne deugden en bekwaamheden, his virtues and capacities.

Uw goed en leven, your possession and life.

But the pronoun is repeated when the substantives are of different genders or numbers.

Eer uwen vader en uwe moeder, honour your father and mother.

Wij beminnen uwen broeder en uwe zuster, We love your brother and sister.

Ik spreek van uwe vrouw en van uwe kinderen, I speak of your wife and children.

If the genitive case is used in a question, it must also be found in the answer.

Aan wien zendt gij dit? to whom do you send it?

Aan uwen vader, to your father.

Van wien spreekt hij? Van den zoon, of whom does he speak? of the son.

When the possessive pronoun causes an ambiguity, one uses the pronouns demonstrative *dezelve*, *deraeveler*, etc.

When, in a phrase, two persons precede, the possessive pronoun has a reference to the agent.

Hij zeide zijnen oom, dat he told his uncle that he
hij zijn huis verkocht had, had sold his own house.

When the house of the uncle was sold, one should say:

Hij zeide zijnen oom, dat he told his uncle, that he
hij deszelfs huis verkocht had, had sold his house.
had,

Deszelfs and *derzelyer* are often used for unanimated things:

Dat huis is schoon; wie is that house is fine; who is
deszelfs bezitter? its possessor?

The pronouns possessive absolute are often used alone, without substantive.

Ik heb het mijne gedaan, I have done my best, do
doe gij het uwe, now yours.

Mark the following phrases:

De mijnen zijn welvarend, my family is in good health.
De uwen zijn ziek, your family is not in good health.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the syntax of possessive pronouns.

N^o. 159.

A good king does not so much consult his own dignity and elevation, as the advantage and happiness of his subjects. The laborious man shuts out idleness from his house. Achilles sacrificed twelve Trojans to the manes of his friend Patroclus. The pride of man is still greater than his ignorance; and

What is wanting to his knowledge, he supplies it by his vanity. War has its theory like other sciences. Men often reap more fruit from their errors, than from their glorious actions. Every tongue has its phrases and its beauties. Hercules, before he died, made a present to Philoctetes his friend and companion, of his arrows, dyed in the blood of the hydra.

To consult,
Dignity,
Elevation,
To shut out,
To sacrifice,
Mane,
Pride; ignorance,
What is wanting,
Theory,
To supply,
To reap fruit,
Error,
To make a present,
Companion,
Dyed,

raadplegen.
waardigheid.
grootheid f.
buitensluiten.
opofferen.
fchim.
hoogmoed; onwetendheid.
wat er ontbreekt.
theorie.
verhelpen.
vruchten plukken.
dwaling.
ten geschenke geven.
makker.
gedoopt.

N^o. 160.

Jealousy has love for its father, and fear for its mother. Nobles, remember that an illustrious birth receives from virtue its most shining lustre. Every science has its principles. To paint the passions with accuracy, it is necessary to have studied the heart of man, and to know all its springs. If you see a friend of mine (*) do not forget to mention my return. The depravity of human nature is so great, that we oftener please with our failings, than with our good qualities. Cesar determined to pass over into the island of Britain, dispatched Volsenius, a lieutenant of his, to cruise on the British sea.

(*) When such phrases are translated literally, we make use of the personal pronoun, f. i. *een vriend van mij* and not *van mijn*.

That woman is whimsical, she changes her resolution every day.

Remember,
Illustrious,
Shining lustre,
To paint,
Accuracy,
Spring,
Depravity,
Failing,
To determine,
To dispatch,
To cruise,
Whimsical,

bedenk.
luisterrijk.
grootste glans.
schilderen.
naauwkeurigheid.
drijfveer. f.
bedorvenheid.
misflag. m.
bekuiten.
afzenden.
kruisen.
grilziek.

N^o. 161.

Master N. mentioned his friend that he had sold his house (the friend's house). Master K. told his brother that he had sold his books (Master K's books). His royal highness, the Prince Regent, has enlarged his country-seat. Diogenes seeing one day a young man who blushed at the least equivocal word; well, friend! said he to him, I see upon your face the very complexion of virtue. It is a great comfort to have a friend, to whom you may communicate your thoughts, and who participates in your pleasures and pains. Such are most men: their ungratefulness is almost always the price of our favours. One of the seven sages of Greece, seeing a man who was complaining of his sufferings: alas, friend! said he to him: consider those of others, and thine will appear light to thee.

To enlarge,
To blush,
Equivocal word,
Face,
Complexion,
Comfort,
To communicate,
To participate,

vergrooten.
blozen.
dubbelzinnigheid.
aangezicht. n.
kleur, f.
troost. f.
mededeelen.
deelnemen.

Such,
Ungratefulness,
Suffering,
To appear light,

zoodanig.
ondankbaarheid.
lijden, ongeluk. n.
ligt, gering toefchijnen.

c. Interrogative Pronouns.

The interrogative pronouns require in the answer the same case and the same preposition of the question.

<i>Wie fchrijft den brief? de broeder,</i>	who writes the letter? the brother.
<i>Van wien fpreekt hij? van den koning,</i>	of whom does he fpeak? of the king.
<i>Met wien hebt gij gefpeeld? met den oom,</i>	with whom have you played, with the uncle.
<i>Over wien is hij teyreden? over den leerling,</i>	of whom is he content? of the pupil.
<i>Voor welke indrukken is hij vatbaar? voor goede,</i>	of which impreffions is he fufceptible? of good one's.

We must obferve that one ufes often *waar*, joined to a preposition, inftead of an interrogative pronoun, in the oblique cafes, and fpeaking of things.

<i>Waarover is hij teyreden? over die boeken,</i>	of what is he content? of thefe books.
<i>Waarmede fpot hij? met die zaak,</i>	what does he mock at? at that affair.
<i>Waarvan fpreekt hij? van den oorlog,</i>	what does he fpeak of? of war.
<i>Waar aan denkt zij? aan haar ongeluk,</i>	what does fhe think on? on her misfortune.

E X E R C I S E,

upon the syntax of interrogative pronouns.

N^o. 162.

Who doubts that a young man, who loves virtue and science, enjoys more solid happiness, than he who spends his life in dissipation and pleasure? Whom can we trust now a days? Few persons. For whom does a miser get riches? Not for himself. You have read Telemachus and Jerusalem delivered; which of these two poems do you prefer? What man can say that he knows himself? About what business is he come to you? Where of does he speak? Who was Cleopatra? She was queen of Egypt. With whom was she married? With Antony. What avail riches without health? Of what does he accuse me? Of robbery. What do you aim at? At that matter.

To enjoy,
Solid happiness,
Dissipation,
Now a day,
Miser,
Jerusalem delivered,
Poem,
To prefer,
Antony,
To avail,
Robbery,
To aim at,

genieten.
waar geluk.
verstrooijing.
tegenwoordig.
gierigaard.
Jerusalem verlost.
dichtstuk. n.
verkiezen.
Antonius.
baten.
diefstal. m.
doelen op.

d. Of demonstrative pronouns.

Deze, this, marks the nearest object; *gene* the most distant. When there are three objects, *die* is

used to mark that which is in the middle. If there are several objects we use the words *eerste*, first; *tweede*, second; *derde*, third; *vierde*, fourth.

Deze is braaf, maar die is this is virtuous, but that
slecht, is wicked.

Deze is te jong, die te oud, this is too young, that too
en gene wil niet, old, and the latter will
not.

Dit, the neuter gender of *deze*, and *dat*, the neuter gender of *die*, are used for all genders in the beginning of a phrase.

Dit is de man, die onder- this is the man, who
wijst, teaches.

Dat is de vrouw, die speelt, that is the woman, who
plays.

Is dat het kind, hetwelk ge- is that the child, which
danst heeft? has danced?

Speaking of things one uses often *hier* and *daar*, instead of *deze* and *die*.

Hiervan maakt hij melding, he makes mention of this.

Daaryan spreekt hij, he speaks of that.

Daaraan gelooft hij, he gives credit to that.

Degene and *diegene* are always followed by a relative pronoun.

Degenen, die hunnen pligt those who perform their
betrachten, duty.

Diegenen, van welke gij those of whom you speak,
spreekt, zijn op reis, are on a voyage.

In the nominative case one uses often the pronoun personal *zij*, in stead of *degenen* and *diegenen*.

Zij, die hunnen pligt be- those who perform their
trachten, duty.

Zij, welke dit gelooven, those, who believe it.

Dezelfde is taken adjectively, and is englished by *the same*; but *dezelfde* is used substantively.

Ik heb denzelfden man ge- I have seen the same man.
zien,

Daar is dezelfde vrouw, there is the same woman.
Waar is de man? wijs mij where is the man? show
denzelyen. him to me.

Dezelfde is sometimes also used substantively, as:
Zij is nog dezelfde, she is still the same.

EXERCISE,

upon the demonstrative pronouns.

N^o. 163.

What gratifies the senses, softens the heart. You are very curious; you always ask why this, why that? What I fear most is treason. Consider o man! what the law of God commands, and what society requires of you. What renders man miserable is cupidity. What costs little is too dear, when it is of no use. The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body. The term of life is short; that of beauty still more so. The injuries which we receive from a man in passion, are not so great as those which the same man commits in cool blood. All men hate those who are unmindful of a good turn.

To gratify,
 To soften,
 Treason,
 To consider,
 Society,
 To require,
 Miserable,
 Cupidity,
 Disorder,
 Term,
 A man in passion,
 To commit,
 In cool blood,
 To be unmindful,
 A good turn,

streten,
verzwakken,
verraad. o.
bedenken.
maatschappij.
eischen.
ellendig.
begeerlijkheid. f.
ziekte. f.
tijd. m.
een driftig mensch.
begaan.
in koelen bloede,
vergeten.
een dienst. m.

e. Of relative pronouns.

The relative pronoun agrees with the substantive to which it refers in gender and number; but it is put in the case, which the following verb requires:

Hij is de man, die spreekt, he is the man who speaks.
Hij was de man, dien ik zag, he was the man, whom I saw.
Dat is de tuin, dien ik gisteren gekocht heb, that is the garden I bought yesterday.

The relative pronouns in dutch are always preceded by a comma.

If these pronouns refer to several persons or things they are put in the plural.

De ondeugden, die wij veracht hebben, the vices, which we have abhorred.
De goede en kwade hoedigheden, die wij opgemerkt hebben, the good and bad qualities which we have observed.

When the relative pronoun refers to a whole phrase or sense, it is used in the neuter gender.

Hij leert de aardrijkskunde en de geschiedenis, hetwelk mij aangenaam is, he studies geography and history, which is very agreeable to me.
Zij hebben dit aan den vader verhaald, hetwelk mij misvalt. they have told that to the father, which displeases me.
Zij werken vlijtiglijk, dat mij aangenaam is. they work diligently, which is agreeable to me.

Die is generally used after the personal pronouns in the nominative case; in the other cases it is better to use *wie*, or *welke*.

Zij, die daar spreekt, is deugzaam, she, who speaks there, is virtuous.
Hij, wien ik zie, is zeer geleerd, he, whom I see, is very learned.

When the relative *die*, in the nominative case, refers to *wie*, it may be suppressed.

Wie geleerd wil worden, he who will become learned
moet werkzaam zijn, must be diligent.

In all other cases the relative pronouns are used in dutch, though understood in English.

De man, dien ik gezien heb, the man, I have seen.

De zaak, welke gij hoort, the matter you hear.

Wie is commonly used in the second and third case of the singular, instead of *welke*.

De kinderen, wier lessen te the children whose lessons
moeijelijk zijn, are too difficult.

De koopman, wiens waren the merchant whose wares
verkocht zijn, are sold.

De vrouw, aan wie gij de the woman to whom you
brieven gegeven hebt, have given the letters.

If the pronoun refers to a substantive neuter, one can use *hetwelk*, *welk* and *dat*, instead of *wat*.

Het kasteel, dat or hetwelk the castle which the duke
de hertog van Wellington of Wellington has built.
gebouwd heeft,

Het geld dat, or hetwelk zij the money she has received.
ontvangen heeft,

In the oblique case, *waar*, with a preposition, is often used instead of the pronoun relative, when one speaks of things, and not of persons.

Het tooneel, waarop zij spe- the stage, on which they
len, play.

Eene kwaal, waarvoor geen an evil, for which there is
geneesmiddel is, no remedy.

Het paleis, waar de keizer the palace in which the em-
gewoond heeft, peror has resided.

De tijden, waarvan wij the times of which we
spreken, speak.

EXERCISES,

upon the syntax of relative pronouns.

N^o. 164.

The glory to which heroes sacrifice, is often a false glory. All the advantages which we enjoy on earth come from God. Cicero was one of those, who were sacrificed to the vengeance of the triumvirs. Actions which have caused repentance, must be of great instruction. It is evident that there is a God, by whom all things are governed. Men who are created to know and love God, ought to apply themselves to shun vice, and to practice virtue. The same pride which makes us blame the faults from which we think ourselves free, induces us to condemn the good qualities which we have not. I speak of the beasts, whose ignorance is the consequence of their nature, and not the effect of neglect and indifference.

Vengeance,
Triumvirs,
Repentance,
To be of instruction,
Evident,
To shun,
To practice,
Pride,
To blame,
To think free,
To induce,
Consequence,
Indifference,
Effect,

wraak. f.
driemannen.
berouw. n.
leerzaam zijn.
klaarblijkelijk.
vermijden.
uitoefenen.
hoogmoed. m.
berispen.
vrij gelooven.
aanzetten.
gevolg. n.
onverschilligheid. f.
uitwerksel. n.

N°. 165.

It is said that Cromwell had fifty chambers, and that his best friends never knew in which he used to lie. Marcus Aurelius used to say, that he would not part with what he had learned, for all the gold in the world; and that he had more glory from what he had read and written, than from all the kingdoms he had conquered. Let us render ourselves able to fulfill the duties of the situation, to which God destines us. Wisdom is content with what is present, and expects patiently what is to come. Alexander, to whose courage they give so many praises, died at thirty three years of age. Prudence and moderation gain us the esteem of those with whom we converse.

To lie,
Used to say,
To part with a thing,
To conquer,
To render one's self able,
To fulfill,
Situation,
To destine,
To expect,
To give praises,
Moderation,
To gain,

slapen.
plagt te zeggen.
iets willen misfen.
veroveren.
zich bekwaam maken.
vervullen.
stand. m.
bestemmen.
afwachten.
prijzen.
gematigdheid. f.
winnen.

N°. 166.

Chuse a man whom you esteem, and who is able and willing to serve you in need. We must not keep the promises, which are hurtful to those we have made them to. Take care whom you trust. Philip, king of Macedonia, said to his son Alexander, on giving him Aristotle for his preceptor: learn under so good a master to avoid the faults in which I have fallen. The thing the covetous least thinks of, is to succour

the poor: his chest is the object in which he places all his pleasure. It is from good or bad education that depends almost always the happiness or the misfortune of life. After the existence of God, there is nothing of which I doubt less than the immortality of the soul.

To chuse; need.

Hurtful,

Take care,

To trust,

Preceptor,

Aristotle,

To avoid,

Covetous,

To succour,

Chest,

In which he places,

To depend,

Existence,

To doubt of,

Immortality,

kiezen; nood. m.

nadeelig.

zie wel toe.

vertrouwen.

leermeester.

Aristoteles.

vermijden.

gierigaard.

ondersteunen.

geldkist. f.

waarin hij stelt.

afhangen.

bestaan. n.

twifelen aan.

onsterfelijkheid.

Of the syntax of Verbs.

Over de woordvoeging der Werkwoorden.

a. Of Persons.

The first and second person are never suppressed. But one suppresses the pronoun of the third person, when this is denoted by a substantive.

Cesar won den veldslag van Cæsar gained the battle of
Pharsalië, Pharsalia.

Anacreon was een grieksch Anacreon was a greek lyric
lierdichter, poet.

But the pronoun of the second person is never understood, though it be expressed by a noun.

Kinderen! gij verzuimt uwe children! you neglect your
lesfen, lessons.

Schurk! gij zult gestraft rascal! you shall be pu-
worden, nished.

Some dutchmen make a fault in suppressing the first person in the following phrases: *hebbe de eer te zijn*, I have the honour to be, instead of: *ik heb de eer te zijn*; — *bekenne schuldig te zijn*, I acknowledge to owe, for, *ik beken schuldig te zijn*, etc.

Sometimes the pronoun is separated from the verb by a substantive:

Gij, wreede moordenaar, you, cruel murderer, shall
zult *sterven*. die.

Zij, uwe weldoenster, zal she, your benefactress,
daarvoor zorgen, shall take care of it.

If the interposed phrase be too long, it is necessary to repeat the pronoun.

Hij, die altijd zijn werk, he, who neglects always
verzuimt, en nooit aan his work, and who is
zijn pligt denkt, hij zal unmindful of his duty,
gestraft worden, he shall be punished.

If two, three or more verbs belong to the same person, the pronoun is never repeated.

Ik schrijf, lees en zing, I write, read, and sing.
Hij straft altijd de misdaad, he always punishes the
en beloont de deugd, crime, and recompenses
the virtue.

But the pronoun must be repeated when two phrases, being somewhat long, are connected by the copulative conjunction *en*.

Hij heeft mij eerst verze- At first he has assured me
kerd dat het waar is, that it is true, and now
en hij twijfelt nu zelf, he doubts himself.

The pronoun must always be repeated, if it is in the first part of the phrase before, and in the second part after the verb:

*Zij leest nu, en denkelyk now she reads, and appa-
zal zij morgen schrijven,* rently she shall write to
morrow.

In the imperative mood the verb is always without pronoun. Nevertheless, when the person must be accurately distinguished, the pronoun can be used.

*Indien uw vader niet komt, if your father do not
kom gij dan zelf, come, come than your-
self.*

It is not necessary to repeat the verb, when it belongs to more than one person.

*Ik lees een boek, en hij eene I read a book, and he a
krant. gazette.*

*Hij koopt kaarten, en ik he buys maps, and I pens.
pennen,*

E X E R C I S E,

upon the persons of the verbs.

N°. 167.

He, who has always been laborious, and who has contributed so much to our fortune, he deserves to be rewarded. We, your bosomfriends, shall never abandon you. He is departed already, but apparently he shall come back to morrow. Music pleases to my brother, and dancing to my sister. John speaks of his horses, and Peter of his cattle. He seeks tranquillity, and your brother pleasures. Infancy is commonly attended with folly, youth with disorder, and old age with infirmities. As your brother will not encourage these children, do it then yourself. He despises cowardice, and your cousin rashness. He considers the misery, and my friend the inconstancy of human life.

To contribute,
To reward,
Apparently,
Cattle,
Tranquillity,
Infancy,
Attended,
Infirmities,

*toebrengen.
beloonen.
waarschijnlijk.
vee. v.
rust. v.
kindschheid.
vergezeld.
zwakheid.*

To encourage,
 Cowardice,
 Rashness,
 To consider,
 Misery,
 Inconstancy,

aanmoedigen.
lafhartigheid.
onbezonnenheid.
overdenken.
ellende. v.
onbestendigheid.

b. Of the number of Verbs.

The verb agrees in number with its subject, or nominative case.

God regeert de wereld, de God governs the world;
engelen gehoorzamen zij- the angels are obedient
nen wil. to his will.

Two or more nouns in the singular number have verbs agreeing with them in the plural number, as:

De vader en de moeder heb- the father and mother have
ben er in toegestemd, consented to it.

Except when they are joined by the conjunctions *of*, or; *noch*, nor.

De verleiding of de vrees the seduction or the fear
heeft dit veroorzaakt, has caused this.

Noch rijkdom, noch groot- neither grandour nor richness
heid maakt ons gelukkig, make us happy.

The verb is often in the singular, though referring to two nouns; in that case it is in the beginning of a phrase, as:

Er is een man en eene vrouw, there is a man and a wo-
 man.

Er was een jongen en twee there was one boy and two
meisjes, girls.

The following expressions in arithmetic are also expected:

Twee en twaalf is veertien, two and twelve make
 fourteen.

Zeven maal zeven is negen- seven times seven make four-
en-veertig, ty nine.

The verb is used in the plural, when the substantive, though in the singular, expresses a plural:

Ik heb meer dan een kind gezien, die zoo speelden, I have seen more than one child who played so.

Also the collective partitive nouns, followed by a noun in the plural:

Het meeste deel der menschen doen het, most part of men do it.

Een aantal kinderen speelden in dien tuin, a great number of children played in that garden.

If the persons of the subject are different, the verb, in the plural, prefers the first, to the second and the third, and the second to the third.

Gij en ik kunnen daar gaan, you and I can go there.

Hij en ik schrijven brieven, he and I write letters.

Gij en hij zult gaan, you and he shall go.

Sometimes the pronoun, in the plural, is placed before the verb:

Gij en ik, wij moeten het weten, you and I, we must know it.

If several nouns are followed by a word in which they are all united, the verb is put in the singular, as:

Goederen, waardigheden, alles is opgeofferd, Goods, dignities, all is sacrificed.

Rijkdom, aanzien, eer, niets geeft ons dan waar genoegen, riches, dignity, honour, nothing gives us then true contentment.

EXERCISES,

upon the number of Verbs.

N^o. 168.

Twelve times twelve make hundred forty four.

Faith and reason prove that truth. The greater part of men are of that opinion. That emperor is one of the greatest princes, that ever reigned. Nature begins, education finishes. Prudence is the eye of virtue. Health is the support of life, and joy is the soul of health. Innocent pleasures make the comforts of life. Valour is the compound of prudence and courage. The greatest part of philosophers are not reasonable. Most men see only through self-love, Half of the people take pleasure in slandering, and the other half in believing slanders.

To prove,
Support,
Innocent,
Comfort,
Compound,
Valour,
Reasonable,
To slander,
Slander,

bewijzen.
steun. m.
onschuldig.
troost. m.
zamenstelling.
dapperheid. f.
billijk.
kwaadspreken.
laster.

N^o. 169.

The too great indulgence of fathers ruins children. Memory is the depository of the riches of the mind. Imagination makes the greatest part of all the pleasure and displeasure of men. Wealth, dignities, honours, every thing disappears at death, virtue alone remains. Youth and love are two fine excuses for many follies. Liberality and thankfulness are the bonds of concord. Neither riches nor dignities render us happy. Most people act more by habit than by reflection; it is for that reason that we see so many people, though with great abilities, commit very great faults. Age and merit make a man venerable; rank and dignity make him respectable.

Indulgence,
To ruin,
Depository,
Wealth,
Dignity.

toegevendheid.
bederven.
bewaarpplaats. v.
rijkdom. m.
waardigheid.

To remain,	<i>blijven.</i>
Excuse.	<i>verschooning.</i>
Liberality,	<i>milddadigheid.</i>
Bond,	<i>band. m.</i>
Concord,	<i>eendragt. v.</i>
To act by,	<i>handelen door.</i>
Habit,	<i>gewoonte. v.</i>
Reflexion,	<i>overdenking. v.</i>
Though with great abilities,	<i>hoewel met groote bekwaamheden begaafd.</i>
Venerable,	<i>eerwaardig.</i>
Respectable,	<i>achtbaar.</i>

N^o. 170.

A very great number of youth ruin themselves, because they read impious books, and because they get acquainted with licentious people. Not only his dignities, his riches, but his virtue vanishes away. It is more difficult to conquer one'sself than an enemy. Our reputation does not depend on the caprice of men, but on our good actions. It was the Phoenicians who invented the art of writing. It was envy which occasioned the first murder in the world. A man in a high post is never regarded with an indifferent eye, but is always considered as a friend or an enemy. Knowledge is the treasure, but judgment the treasurer of a wise man.

Impious,	<i>slecht.</i>
To get acquainted,	<i>bekend raken.</i>
Licentious,	<i>losbandig.</i>
To vanish away,	<i>verdwijnen.</i>
To depend on,	<i>afhangen van.</i>
Caprice,	<i>eigenzinnigheid.</i>
To invent,	<i>uitvinden.</i>
Envy,	<i>nijd. m.</i>
In a high post,	<i>in eenen hoogen stand.</i>
To regard,	<i>aanzien.</i>
Indifferent,	<i>onverschillig.</i>
To consider,	<i>beschouwen.</i>
Treasure,	<i>schat.</i>
Treasurer,	<i>schatmeester.</i>

Of moods and times.

Van de wijzen en tijden.

The present tense is used, when speaking of actions or things which we habitually do, are accustomed to do, or can do:

Wij staan altijd ten zes we rise always at six o'
uren op, clock.
Zij leert de aardrijkskunde, she studies geography.
Spreekt hij fransch? does he speak french?
Hij wijdt dagelijks drie uren he gives every day three
aan de studie, hours to the study.

We often use this tense instead of the future, when speaking of actions, which are to be done in a very short time.

Ik ga dezen avond naar Lon- I set out this evening for
den, London.
Waar gaat gij morgen heen? whither do you go to mor-
row?

The present tense is also used instead of the preter imperfect tense, in order to represent a past action or event as present to the mind of the hearers or readers, as:

Cesar komt, ziet en over- Caesar comes, sees and con-
wint, quers.

This tense serves also to express an eternal truth.
God is goedertieren, onver- God is merciful, immutable.
anderlijk,

Tweemaal twee is vier, two times two make four.
De deugd is beminnelijk, virtue is lovely.

Preceded by *als*, it expresses also a future:

Als uw vader afreist, if your father sets out.
Schrijf mij eenen brief, als write me a letter, when
uw neef komt, your cousin comes.

The preter imperfect tense, *onvolmaakt verledene tijd*, is employed every time we speak of actions of habit, or actions reiterated at a time which is not defined.

Hij was altijd gehoorzaam, he was always obedient.
Toen ik te Londen woonden, when I lived at London,
ging ik alle dag naar West-munster, I went every day at West-
 minster.

We must never use two different tenses in the same phrase.

Ik deed alles, wat in mijn vermogen was, I did all that was in my power.

and not:

Ik deed alles, wat in mijn vermogen geweest is, I did all, that has been in my power.

and:

Ik heb al gedaan, wat in mijn vermogen geweest is, I have done all, that has been in my power.

In answers we use the same tense, which is employed in the questions.

Zijt gij bij mijne zuster geweest? have you been at my sister?

Ja, ik ben er geweest, yes, I have.

Of moods.

The indicative mood serves to indicate the affirmation, in the different tenses of the verb. It forms a complete and independent sense.

Ik leer de muziek, I learn music.
Ik las eene bladzijde, I read a page.
Hij is op de univerfiteit geweest, he has been at the univerfity.
Zij zullen in vreemde landen reizen, they will travel in foreign countries.

The subjunctive mood, as we have observed already, expresses an incertainty, a doubtful thing.

It is called subjunctive or conjunctive because it is always preceded by, or subject to, some conjunction; and used alone, it never forms a complete sense.

If this mood is met with in a sentence containing an affirmation, that affirmation can only be expressed by the verb that precedes the subjunctive mood, which is used to modify that affirmation. f. i.

Ik werk, opdat ik bekwaam I work, that I may become
worde, skilful.

In this phrase the affirmation is only expressed by *ik werk*, and what follows only expresses the end which I propose by working.

In the subsequent phrase the subjunctive mood is used:

Vooronderstelt gij, dat dit do you suppose, that this
mogelijk zij? may be possible?

Ik twijfel, of zij tevreden I doubt whether she be
zij, content.

Al kwame zij nu, het zou though she came now, it
te laat zijn, would be too late.

Geloof niet dat hij waar- do not believe that he speaks
heid spreke, true.

Ik wil dat hij het boek I desire that he fetches the
hale, book.

Ik vrees dat dit waar zij, I fear it may be true.

Ingeval hij kome, zal ik In case he come, I will go.
heengaan.

The preter imperfect tense of this mood is used to express a wish.

Ik wenschte, dat hij geluk- I wished he was happy.
kig ware,

Zij wenschte, dat ik rijk she wished I was rich.
ware,

Wij wenschten dat hij zich we wished he behaved well.
wel gedroeg.

In the subsequent phrases the other tenses of this mood are employed.

Zij twijfelt, of hij het ge- she doubts whether he has
zegd hebbe, said it.

Hij ware rijk geworden, he should have grown rich,
hadde hij langer geleefd, if he had lived longer.

The imperative mood serves not only to command, but also to entreat, to pray, to exhort, and sometimes even to forbid. This mood has no first person in the singular, because it is impossible for a man to command himself; and, if it have the first person plural, it is because we speak as much to others as to ourselves.

Laat dat staan, let that alone.
Geef ons heden ons dagelijks brood, give us every day our daily bread.
Leidt ons niet in verzoeking, do not lead us in temptation.
Laat ons vermijden al, wat anderen zou kunnen beleiden, let us avoid every thing that might offend others.

The imperative mood is sometimes used to express an idea in few words, and emphatically.

Wees zonder vriend, hoeveel verliest uw leven, be without friend, how much does life loose.

The infinitive mood, as we have already observed, is often used substantively with, or without article.

Het slapen is noodzakelijk voor alle menschen, sleep is necessary to all men.
Het veel eten is ongezond, to eat much is unwholesome.

The active participle is often used adjectively:
De vrucht dragende aarde, the earth producing fruits.

Sometimes it is attended by the case which the verb governs:

Do ons troostende vrienden, the friends, who comfort us.

The passive participles are also used adjectively:

Gesmolten boter, melted butter.
Onderdrukte vrienden, oppressed friends.

The active participle is often used instead of the preter imperfect tense:

Gereed zijnde, ging hij op being ready, he set out.
reis,

instead of:

Daar ik gereed was, ging
ik op reis,

and:

Misnoegd zijnde, sprak ik being discontent, I did not
geen enkel woord, speak a single word.

instead of:

Daar ik misnoegd was, sprak
ik geen enkel woord,

EXERCISES,

upon the tenses and moods.

N^o. 171.

Carthage carried on an prodigious trade by the means of her ships, which went as far as the Indies. Philip, the father of Alexander the great, was the deepest politician of his time. To speak too much is dangerous. To walk is wholesome. To keep up acquaintance with vicious people is to authorise vice. To mourn without measure is folly, not to mourn at all is insensibility. Men ought to shun vice, and stick to virtue. Those who pretend to be learned, are often very ignorant. It is folly to think of escaping censure, and a weakness to be affected by it. It is dangerous to trust every body. It is important to be careful, when one is in a public situation.

To carry on,
Prodigious,
Trade,

drijven.
buitengemeen groot.
koophandel. m.

A deep politician,
 To keep up acquaintance,
 Vicious,
 To authorise,
 To mourn,
 Insensibility,
 To shun,
 To stick to,
 To pretend,
 To escape censure,
 Weakness,
 To affect,
 It is important,

*een groot staatkundige.
 verkeer hebben.
 slecht, bedorven.
 beschermen.
 zich bedroeven.
 ongevoeligheid.
 vermijden.
 aankleven.
 voorgeven.
 de berisping ontgaan.
 zwakheid.
 aangedaan zijn.
 het is van gewigt.*

N^o 172.

If you desire to be esteemed, you must be civil, complaisant, mild and affable. Youth is the soul of beauty, and beauty is the stumbling block of men of feeling. History is the picture of times and men, consequently the image of inconstancy, caprice and a thousand variations. Fear exaggerates the danger, and it is contagious. The learning of the old Egyptian priests consisted in geometry and astronomy. The Lacedemonians presented drunken slaves to the view of their children, to inspire them with more horror of drunkenness. Seleucus used to say, that he who could know the weight of a scepter, would not deign to pick it up. The law of nature forbids us to do injustice to one another.

Mild,
 stumbling block,
 Picture,
 Consequently,
 Caprice,
 Variations,
 To exaggerate,
 Contagious,
 Geometry,
 Astronomy,
 Presented to,
 To inspire,
 Used to say,

*zachtzinnig.
 struikelblok. o.
 tafereel.
 gevolgelijk.
 eigenzinnigheid.
 verscheidenheden.
 vergrooten.
 besmettelijk.
 meetkunde. v.
 sterrekunde.
 stelden ten toon voor.
 inboezemen.
 plagt te zeggen.*

Scepter,
To deign,

schepter. m.
zich verwaardigen, zich de moeite
geven.
oprapen.

To pick up,

N^o. 173.

Charity is ready to sacrifice her own interests to those of others. One thing useful to acquire is, to know how to live contented with the situation, in which we have been placed by divine providence. The latter part of a wife man's life is taken up in curing the false opinions and prejudices, which he has contracted in the former. A true christian places all his happiness in relieving the unfortunate. There is more glory in dying like Nelson, than in living in unmerited honours. True wisdom consists in knowing our duty exactly; true eloquence in speaking of it clearly; and true pity in doing, what we know to be good. Nobody can be happy, without practising virtue.

Charity,
To acquire,
Situation,
Is taken up,
To cure te false opinions,

liefdadigheid.
verkrijgen.
stand. m.
wordt besteed.
om de valsche denkbeelden te
beteren.

Prejudice,
To contract.
To relieve,
Unmerited,
True wisdom,
Clearly,
Pity,
To practise,

vooordeel. n.
aannemen.
verligten, bijstaan.
onverdiend.
ware wijsheid.
duidelijk.
braafheid.
uitoefenen.

N^o. 174.

It is necessary to know the human heart, to judge well of others. Palamedes invented the game of chess,

to serve for diversion to his soldiers, and to teach them the stratagems of war. If Titus passed one day without doing good to any body, he used to say: I have lost that day. The Romans always kept the sacred fire in the temple of Vesta; they looked upon the extinction of it, as an omen of public disaster, and the chief priest kindled it again at the funbeams, with the religious ceremonies prescribed by Numa Pompilius. Orpheus, according to the fable, mixed so agreeably his voice with his lute, that he stopped the course of rivers, calmed the tempests, even attracted the most savage beasts, and gave motion to the trees and rocks.

Human,
Game of chess,
Diversion,
Stratagems of war,
To keep,
To look upon.
Extinction,
Omen,
Disastre,
To kindle again,
Religious ceremonies,
To prescribe,
To mix,
To stop,
To calm the tempest,
To attract,
Motion;

menschelijk.
schaakspel. n.
uitspanning.
krijgslisten.
onderhouden.
aanzien.
uitgaan.
voorteeken. n.
onheil. n.
weer aansteken.
Godsdienstige plegtigheden.
voorschrijven.
mengen.
stoppen, doen ophouden.
den storm stillen.
tot zich trekken.
beweging. v.

N^o. 175.

All men are liable to mistake. There are persons whom we hate, others whom we love, without knowing why? the one is injustice, the other weakness. The desire of deserving the praises which are given us, strengthens our virtue. Death is an eternal decree, to which all men ought to submit. Men often think of death, when it is too late; and begin to study how to live, when they should learn how to die. King Alphonso used to say, that a prince ought so

much to love truth, that every word of his ought to have as much credit and power, as the oaths of private men. The loadstone has surprizing effects. Plato banished music out of his common-wealth.

Liable to mistake,	<i>kunnen dwalen.</i>
To deserve,	<i>verdieneu.</i>
To strengthen,	<i>versterken.</i>
Decree,	<i>besluit. n.</i>
To submit,	<i>onderwerpen.</i>
That every word of his,	<i>dat elk zijner woorden.</i>
Oath,	<i>eed. m.</i>
Loadstone,	<i>zeilsteen. m.</i>
Surprizing,	<i>verwonderlijk.</i>
To banish,	<i>verbannen.</i>
Common-wealth,	<i>gemeenebest. n.</i>

N°. 176.

People are often afraid of seeing themselves such as they are, because they are not what they should be. Men act most frequently from motives arising from present circumstances. Alms given without ostentation acquire new merit. A noble, but confused thought, is a diamond covered with dust. The wicked are always tormented by their own conscience. Happy the princes, who have always used their power for the good of their people. Demetrius being informed that the Atheniens had overthrown his statues: they have not, replied he, overthrown the valour which has caused them to be erected to me. The fleet destined to the siege of Troy, was composed of thirteen hundred ships.

Such as they are,	<i>zoodanig als zij zijn.</i>
To act from,	<i>handelen uit.</i>
To arise,	<i>voortkomen, voortspruiten.</i>
Ostentation,	<i>praal. f.</i>
To acquire,	<i>verkrigen.</i>
Confused,	<i>verward.</i>
Dust,	<i>stof. n.</i>
To torment,	<i>kwellen.</i>
For the good,	<i>tot het welzijn.</i>

To overthrow,	<i>omverwerpen.</i>
Statue,	<i>standbeeld. n.</i>
To erect,	<i>oprigten.</i>
Which has caused them,	<i>welke de oorzaak waren.</i>
To destine.	<i>befsemmen.</i>

N°. 177.

All will respect the magistrates who, forgetting their own interest, observing the law, favouring virtue, and restraining vice, seek the welfare of their country. The desire of Alexander the great to be thought the son of Jupiter Ammon, caused him to wear the horns of that God. Marius was very ill used by fortune; however, he did not loose his courage. The temple of Diana, at Ephesus, was burnt on the day that Alexander the great was born. The Egyptians did not doubt that certain animals and plants were divinities. Good kings order that justice be well administered in their kingdom. Do nothing to day, that thou mayest repent of to morrow.

To restrain vice,	<i>de ondeugd beteugelen.</i>
Welfare,	<i>welvaart. f.</i>
To be thought,	<i>gehouden worden voor.</i>
To wear horns,	<i>hoornen dragen.</i>
Ill used,	<i>mishandeld.</i>
Burnt,	<i>verbrand.</i>
Divinities,	<i>Godheden.</i>
To administer justice,	<i>het regt uitoefenen.</i>
To repent,	<i>berouw hebben.</i>

N°. 178.

Cato killed himself, lest he should fall into the hands of Cæsar. William the conqueror was one of the greatest generals of his age; in him were united activity, vigilance, and intrepidity, he was strict in his discipline, en kept his foldiers in perfect obedience,

yet he preserved their affection; he was perfect master of the military art, his aspect was noble, his constitution robust, and nobody but himself could bend his bow. Who doubts that true riches are placed in virtue? Keep a strict watch over all your senses, lest intemperance get the master of you, and lest your senses be the instruments of polluting your soul. Though he approves of your advice, yet he will not act according to it. You will learn very well, provided you take pains.

Lest,
 Conqueror,
 Vigilance,
 Strict,
 Discipline,
 To preserve,
 He was perfect master,
 Aspect,
 Constitution,
 Robust,
 To bend,
 Strict watch,
 Get the master of you,
 To pollute,
 To act according to it,

opdat niet.
veroveraar.
waakzaamheid.
stipt.
krijgstucht. f.
behouden.
hij was zeer bedreven.
uitzigt. n.
ligchaamsgestel. n.
sterk.
spannen.
stipte wacht.
u overmeesteren.
bezoedelen.
daarnaar handelen.

N^o. 179.

Employ all the days of your youth, so that you may fulfill honorably all the duties of your station. I have nothing to tell you, except that I have done, and shall always do, what religion commands all christians. I doubt whether any philosopher have ever known the origin of the winds. Erostratus set on fire the temple of Diana, that his name might be spread through the whole earth. Unless a book be instructive or entertaining, I do not care to read it. Though ambition be a vice, it is nevertheless the foundation of many virtues. Though an honourable title may be conveyed to posterity, yet the enobling qualities, such as greatness of soul, cannot be transferred.

Station,

stand. m. Digitized by Google

To fulfill the duties,
Origin,
To set on fire,
To spread,
Entertaining,
Nevertheless,
Foundation,
To convey,
Posterity,
Enobling,
Transferred,

de pligten betrachten.
oorsprong. m.
in brand steken.
verspreiden.
onderhoudend.
desniettegenstaande.
grondslag. m.
overbrengen.
nakomelingschap.
verzedelend.
overgebracht.

*Of the auxiliary verbs, and of the connexion
of two verbs.*

If several verbs, of the same government, have the same auxiliary, the latter must not be repeated.

Menschen, die ik noch gezien, noch gehoord, noch gekend heb. men, whom I have neither seen, heard nor known.

Kinderen, die noch gegeten, noch gedronken hebben, children, who have neither eaten noch drunk.

To connect two verbs, one makes use 1° of the conjunctions.

Hij kwam, en ging zitten, he came, and sat down.
Zij viel, en bezeerde zich, she fell, and hurt herself.

2°. Or by joining two verbs, of which the former determines the latter. In that case the infinitive is used with, or without preposition or participle.

The infinitive alone is used, without preposition, after the verbs: *durven*, to dare; *kunnen*, to can; *laten*, to let; *mogen*, to may; *willen*, to will.

Ik durf niet uitgaan, want ik ben ongesteld, I dare not go out, for I am indisposed.

Hij kan niet schrijven, de tijd ontbreekt hem, he can not write, by want of time.

Hij mag dat geld verteren, he has got the permission to spend that money.

Hij wil betalen, maar kan niet, he will pay, but he can not.

Also the verb *blijven*, to remain; with the infinitive mood of the verbs which express a situation.

Wij blijven liggen, we remain lying.
Zij blijven zitten, they remain sitting.

Also *gaan*, to go; to express the intention.

Wij gaan dansen, we are going to dance.
Zij gaan spelen, they are going to play.
Gij gaat schrijven, you are going to write.
Zij gaat lezen, she is going to read.

Vinden, to find; in these phrases:

Wij vonden u staan, we found you standing.
Zij vinden hem leeren, they find him studying.

The active verbs, which govern the accusative case, cause sometimes an equivocalness, as: *ik hoor hem roepen*, I hear him calling. This may signify that the person, expressed by *hem*, calls, or is called. This must be avoided by periphrasing.

Most of the other verbs are followed by the preposition *te*, to.

Zijt gij gewoon te lezen? are you accustomed to read,
Ik beveel hem te gehoorzamen, I command him to obey.

Ik verzoek u te spelen, I pray you to play.
Ik beken ontvangen te hebben, I acknowledge to have received.

Het begint te regenen, it begins to rain.
Zij vergeet te betalen, she forgets to pay.

It is the same with the participle.

Zij gelooft bemind te zijn, she believes to be loved.

Wij wenschen betaald te worden, we desire to be paid.

Zij geven voor ziek te zijn, they pretend to be ill.

Also with the auxiliaries *hebben*, to have; and *zijn*, to be; in these phrases.

Daar is eene zeldzaamheid te zien, there is a curiosity to be seen.

zijn boeken te lezen, there are books to read.

Hij heeft veel te doen, he has much to do.
Zij had veel te werken, she had much to work.

To indicate the aim more determinately, the word *om* is added:

Hij was gekomen om te be- he was come to pay.
talen,
Zij dansen, om zich te ver- they dance to amuse them-
maken, selves.

Zonder, is also followed by the infinitive mood with *te*:

Zij loopen, zonder moede they run, without being
te worden, tired.
Hij doet dit, zonder mij he does it, without warn-
te waarschuwen, ing me.

The infinitive mood is used with *te*, when it is the subject of the discourse:

Daar te gaan is noodig, it is necessary to go there.
Dit te zeggen is nadeelig, it is hurtful to say that.

The verbs, attended by the infinitive without *te*, have in the perfect and plu-perfect tense the form of the infinitive mood.

Ik heb hem helpen schrijven, I have holpen him to write.
Zij heeft leeren spreken, she has learned to speak.
Hij heeft het niet kunnen he was not able to do it.
doen,

The verbs, on the contrary, which are attended by the infinitive mood with *te*, are conjugated in the perfect tense as usual.

Hij heeft verlangd haar te he has wished to hear her.
hooren,
Ik heb getracht hem te nood- I have endeavoured to for-
zaken, ce him.

Staan, liggen and *zitten* are excepted.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon these rules.

N^o. 180.

He knows how to put bounds to his desires. I will go and see him the day after to morrow. Receive my thanks for having exerted yourself so much for the success of my affair. He is unworthy of being preferred for that employment. I advise you to fulfill your promises. I propose to go thither next week. He likes to read itineraries and novels. They will endeavour to satisfy you. The unfortunate will never fail to complain. He aims at doing you a prejudice. We long to see our brother, who has been four years absent. As religion obliges us to love princes, so princes are obliged to protect us.

To put bounds,
To go to see one,
To exert one's self,
Success,
To prefer,
Employment,
To fulfill,
Novel,
Itinerary,
To fail,
To aim,
Absent,
To protect,

palen stellen.
iemand gaan bezoeken.
zijn best doen.
welzijn.
bevorderen.
ambt.
vervullen.
roman.
reisbeschrijving.
nalaten.
trachten.
afwezend.
befchermen.

N^o. 181.

By taking revenge a man is but equal with his enemy, by passing it over, he is his superior. If you have rashly engaged to do a thing which ought not

to be done, do not make bad worse by persisting to do it. Nobody is able to write well, who has not learned to think well, to arrange his thoughts methodically, and to express them with propriety. To be a christian, is to follow the precepts delivered by Jesus Christ, to love, what he loved, and to despise, what he despised. Giddy minds begin many things, without ever finishing any. Life is given us to glorify God, and to save our souls by good actions. In general, young men are more fond of hearing strange things, than ready to believe them.

To take revenge,	wraak nemen.
Equal,	gelijk.
Rashly,	onbezonnen.
Do not make bad worse,	maak het kwaad niet, erger.
To persist,	volharden.
To arrange,	schikken.
With propriety,	eigenaardig.
Precept,	regel, m. les.
Delivered,	voorgescreven.
To despise,	verachten.
Giddy minds,	loshoofden.
To glorify,	verheerlijken.
Strange,	vreemd.

Of the government of Verbs.

The greater part of verbs govern the accusative case, as: *zoeken*, to seek; *beminnen*, to love; *verachten*, to despise; *straffen*, to punish; etc.

Substantives placed in the accusative by the active verbs, may be in the nominative with the passive verbs.

<i>De meester onderwijst den leerling,</i>	the master teaches the pupil.
<i>De leerling wordt onderwezen door den meester.</i>	the pupil is taught by the master.

The following verbs have two nominatives, as: *schijnen*, to resemble, to seem; *zijn* and *worden*, to be; *blijven*, to remain; *heeten*, to be called.

<i>De vader is koning,</i>	the father is king.
<i>De leerling heet Karel,</i>	the pupil is called Charles.
<i>Hij schijnt een geleerd man te zijn,</i>	he seems to be a learned man.
<i>De zoon wordt opvolger,</i>	the son is succesfor.

Two substantives compared with each other, by the particle *als*, are in the same case.

Uw neef handelt als uw broeder, your cousin acts like your brother.

De zoon werkt als de vader, the son works as the father.

Het kind schrijft als de meester, the child writes as the master.

The following verbs govern the genitive case: *erbarmen*, to have pity; *gedenken*, to think on; *ontfermen*, to have mercy; *zich schamen*, to shame.

Gedenk mijner, remember me.

Hij zal zich mijner erbarmen, he will have pity with me.

Hij schaamt zich dezer gedachte, he is ashamed of that idea.

Ontferm u mijner, take mercy upon me.

But it is better to use a preposition with these verbs, as: *Gedenk aan mij*; — *Hij zal zich over mij erbarmen*; — *Hij schaamt zich over die gedachte*, enz.

In the following words we find the genitive without the influence of the verbs: *'s morgens*; *'s middags*; *donderdags*; *maandags*; *goedsmoeds*; *eensklaps*; *buitenbeens*; *overhands*.

The following verbs govern the dative of the person, and the accusative of the thing:

<i>Aanraden,</i>	to counsel, to advise.
<i>Aandoen,</i>	to offer.
<i>Afhalen,</i>	to pull off the skin.
<i>Afslaan,</i>	to refuse.
<i>Afraden,</i>	to dissuade.
<i>Aankondigen,</i>	to announce.
<i>Aanduiden,</i>	to denote.
<i>Aanbieden,</i>	to offer.

<i>Besteden,</i>	to employ.
<i>Bekennen,</i>	to confess, to allow.
<i>Afvragen,</i>	to ask, to demand.
<i>Aanbevelen,</i>	to recommend.
<i>Beloven,</i>	to promise.
<i>Geyen,</i>	to give.
<i>Onthouden,</i>	to abstain.
<i>Afnemen,</i>	to take from.
<i>Onttrekken,</i>	to deprive.
<i>Betalen,</i>	to pay.
<i>Verhalen, vertellen,</i>	to relate.
<i>Bezorgen,</i>	to procure.
<i>Afhandig maken,</i>	to take from.
<i>Schrijven,</i>	to write.
<i>Zenden,</i>	to send.
<i>Misgunnen,</i>	to envy.
<i>Wedergeven,</i>	to render, to return.
<i>Toestaan,</i>	to allow, to permit.
<i>Toeschrijven,</i>	to attribute.
<i>Leenen,</i>	to bud.
<i>Afleenen,</i>	to borrow.
<i>Uitleggen,</i>	to explain.

Examples.

<i>Hij geeft aan zijne kinderen eene goede opvoeding.</i>	he gives his children a good education,
<i>Ik sta hun toe daar te gaan,</i>	I allow them to go thither.
<i>Geef hun dit geld weder,</i>	render them this money.
<i>Schrijf eenen brief aan den landvoogd,</i>	write a letter to the gover- nor.
<i>Leen hem goede boeken,</i>	lend him good books.
<i>Leg hun dit uit,</i>	explain that to them.
<i>Ik zal hem dit afraden,</i>	I will disuade him from it.
<i>Die uitvinding wordt aan hem toegeschreven,</i>	that invention is attributed to him.
<i>Hij heeft haar geweld aan- gedaan,</i>	he has offered violence to her.
<i>Neem hem dat geld af,</i>	take that money from me.
<i>Zij hebben hem dit gewei- gerd,</i>	they have refused him that.

<i>Iets aan het volk verkonden,</i>	to announce a thing to the people.
<i>Maak haar dat afhankelijk,</i>	take that from her.
<i>Misgun hun dat geluk niet,</i>	Do not envy them that fortune.
<i>Ik zal u dat alles aanduiden,</i>	I shall indicate to you all that.
<i>Heeft hij het uwen vriend verhaald?</i>	Has he told it to your friend?
<i>Beveel hem den koning aan,</i>	recommand him to the king.

Some neuter verbs govern the dative, as: *beval- len*, to please; *blijven*, to remain; *draaijen*, to turn; etc.

<i>Het bevalt aan de koningin,</i>	it pleases to the queen.
<i>Het hoofd draait mij,</i>	my head turns.
<i>Hem geschiedt onrecht,</i>	wrong is done unto him.
<i>Het hart klopt mij,</i>	my heart palpitates.
<i>Blijf haar altijd getrouw,</i>	remain always faithful to her.
<i>Het staat haar voor,</i>	she remembers.
<i>Het kwam mij in de gedachten,</i>	I recollected it.
<i>Dat past u niet,</i>	that does not suit you,
<i>Aan wien behoort het schip?</i>	to whom does the ship belong?

The verb *laten*, to let; governs the accusative.

<i>Laat hem schrijven,</i>	let him write.
<i>Laat den jongen spelen,</i>	let the boy play.
<i>Laat hen eten,</i>	let them eat.

The reciprocal pronouns of the reciprocal verbs are always in the accusative, except that of the verb *zich erinneren*, to recollect, which is in the dative.

A great many verbs are followed by certain prepositions, which must absolutely be known, above all, when they do not agree with those of the English language, which is the case in the following examples.

<i>Met iemand spotten,</i>	to mock at one.
<i>Wacht u voor hem,</i>	take care of him.
<i>Overvloed hebben van,</i>	to abound with.

<i>Zich voor het gerecht verbergen,</i>	to abscond from justice.
<i>Hij bewilligt daarin,</i>	he accedes to it.
<i>Neem dit aan,</i>	accept of this.
<i>Ik geef rekenfchap daarvan,</i>	I account for that.
<i>Zich van eene zaak kwijten,</i>	to acquit one'sself in an affair.
<i>Dat verwondert ons,</i>	we admire at it.
<i>In iets toefstemmen,</i>	to agree to a thing.
<i>Laat dat toe,</i>	admit of that.
<i>Hij keurde dat goed,</i>	he approved of it.
<i>Ik bedoelde dat;</i>	I aimed at that.
<i>Ik vraag dit,</i>	I ask for that.
<i>Naar iets dingen,</i>	to aspire at a thing.
<i>Iets inpakken,</i>	to bail up a thing.
<i>Tot iets geraken,</i>	to attain to a thing.
<i>De prooi wegvoeren,</i>	to bear off the prey.
<i>De hond blaft tegen hem,</i>	the dog barks at him.
<i>Tot iemand naderen,</i>	to bear towards one.
<i>Ik fmeek u dat te doen,</i>	I beg of you to do that.
<i>Iemands gemelijkheid verdragen,</i>	to bear with one's bad temper.
<i>Leg u daar op toe,</i>	betake yourself to that.
<i>Over iets tieren,</i>	to bluster about a thing.
<i>Hij wacht zich daarvoor,</i>	he beware of it.
<i>Omver waaijen,</i>	to blow down.
<i>Over iets razen,</i>	to brawl about a thing.
<i>Zich op iets beraemen,</i>	to boast of a thing.
<i>Dat zwelt op,</i>	that bouges out.
<i>Den prijs behalen,</i>	to bring away the prize.
<i>Ontbijten met eijeren,</i>	to breakfast upon eggs.
<i>Van vleefch leven,</i>	to live upon meat.
<i>Ik heb dat ten uitvoer gebragt,</i>	I have brought that about.
<i>Iemand voor den rechter brengen,</i>	to bring one to justice.
<i>Eenen rok toeknoppen,</i>	to button up a coat.
<i>Hij berft van nijd,</i>	he burfts with envy.
<i>Den krijg voortzetten,</i>	to carry on the war.
<i>Bij iemand aankomen,</i>	to call at one.
<i>Iets ontvoeren,</i>	to carry off a thing.
<i>Op iemand loeren,</i>	to catch at one.
<i>Eene lijn trekken,</i>	to chalk out a line.

<i>Befchuldigen van,</i>	to charge with.
<i>Verberg het voor hen,</i>	conceal it from them.
<i>Eene weduwe troosten,</i>	to condole with a widow.
<i>Vertrouw op hem,</i>	confide in him.
<i>Toegeven in,</i>	to connive at.
<i>Bestaan in,</i>	to confist of.
<i>Doe uwe laarzen uit,</i>	do off your boots.
<i>Het hangt van haar af.</i>	it depends upon her.
<i>Aan iets wanhopen.</i>	to despair of a thing.
<i>Ik keur het af.</i>	I disapprove of it.
<i>Op iets aandringen,</i>	to dwell upon a thing.
<i>Een glas uitdrinken,</i>	to drink off a glass.
<i>Droog uwe tranen af,</i>	dry up your tears.
<i>Iemand ontmoeten,</i>	to meet with one.
<i>Ik greep hem aan,</i>	I fastened upon him.
<i>Iemand vleijen, flikflooijen,</i>	to fawn upon one.
<i>Ergens wat op te zeggen</i>	to find faults with.
<i>weten,</i>	
<i>Op iets schieten,</i>	to fire at.
<i>Ten einde loopen,</i>	to grow towards its end.
<i>Naar iets hunkeren,</i>	to hanker after a thing.
<i>Iemand aan iets helpen,</i>	to help one to a thing.
<i>Ik hoop daarop,</i>	I hope for that.
<i>Vernemen naar,</i>	to inquire about.
<i>Spotten met,</i>	to jest at.
<i>Ik doe voorraad op,</i>	I lay in store.
<i>Hij fcheidt uit met drinken,</i>	he leaves off drinking.
<i>De deur fluiten,</i>	to lock up the door.
<i>Hij zoekt naar het boek,</i>	he looks for the book. etc.

E X E R C I S E S,

upon the government of verbs.

N°. 182.

Help your neighbour and do not insult him in his misfortune. Nothing persuades men more effectually.

than good examples. He who engages another to commit a crime, is not less guilty than he who commits it. We are guilty of great injustice towards one another, when we are prejudiced by the features of those whom we do not know. Whoever is not ashamed of his faults, is deserving of punishment. Whatever happens to a virtuous man, he never murmurs against the divine providence. Charity never looks on others with contempt. God requires nothing of us, but what is for our advantage. The impious mock at virtue and ridicule religion. The excess of a distemper sometimes forces the physician to be cruel.

To insult,
To persuade,
Effectually,
To engage,
Towards,
Prejudiced,
Features,
Is deserving of,
To murmur,
To look on,
Contempt,
To require,
To ridicule,
The excess.
Distemper,

beledigen.
overtuigen.
krachtig.
overhalen
tegen.
vooringenomen.
trekken.
verdient.
morren.
aanzien.
verachting.
eischen.
belagchelijk maken.
het kwaadaardige.
kwaal, ziekte.

N^o. 183.

The burying grounds of the Africans are planted with flowers, less to serve as ornaments, than to indicate the frailty of human life. If you seek for happiness any where but in God, you are sure to be disappointed. God accepts of our endeavours after holiness, provided they be sincere. A thought is not fine, if it is not understood by the most ignorant, and esteemed by the most skilful. Our timidity augments the arrogance of an enemy. Henry the fourth looked upon the good education of youth, as a thing upon which depends the felicity of kingdoms and peo-

ple. Let us exclude liars from society. An honest man hurts nobody, he does not slander his neighbour.

Burying ground,	<i>begraafplaats.</i> f.
An African,	<i>een Afrikaan.</i>
Ornament,	<i>versiersel.</i>
Frailty,	<i>broosheid.</i>
To seek for,	<i>zoeken naar.</i>
Any where but,	<i>elders dan.</i>
To be disappointed,	<i>te leur gesteld worden.</i>
After holiness,	<i>naar heiligheid.</i>
Skilful,	<i>bekwaam, kundig.</i>
Timidity,	<i>befchroomdheid.</i>
Arrogance,	<i>verwaandheid.</i>
Upon which depends,	<i>waarvan afhangt.</i>
Felicity,	<i>geluk.</i> n.
To exclude,	<i>buitenstuiten, verbannen.</i>
To slander,	<i>lasteren.</i>

N°. 184.

It is the part of a fool to accuse another of a fault, of which he is himself guilty. Our infirmities often remind us of mortality, sickness warns us of death; adversity ought to admonish us of our duties, and make us think of religion. A learned man doubts of all that is not certain; the prudent man mistrusts all that is not sure; the wise man abandons to popular prejudices all that, which is not sufficiently ascertained. Ask nothing of your friend but what is right. Prefer virtue to riches. We cannot easily withstand the allurements of pleasure. Justice gives every body his own. It is the duty of a christian to please God, to hurt nobody, and to do good, even to his enemies.

Part,	<i>daad.</i> f.
Guilty of,	<i>schuldig aan.</i>
Infirmity,	<i>gebrek.</i> n.
To remind,	<i>herinneren.</i>
Mortality,	<i>sterfelijkheid.</i>
To admonish of,	<i>vermanen tot.</i>
doubt of,	<i>twifelen aan.</i>
mistrust,	<i>mistroutwen.</i>

Popular prejudice,
To ascertain'd,
To prefer to,
To withstand,
Allurement,
His own,
To hurt,
Even,

volks-vooroordeelen.
bewaarheid.
verkiezen boven.
weerstand.
aanlokfel. n.
het zijne.
benadeelen.
zelfs, wat meer is.

N^o. 185.

Aristippus, the Philosopher, requested his companions to tell from him to his fellow-citizens to mind betimes to provide themselves with stores, which they could save with them from shipwreck. Fortune often snatches away wealth from the rich, but she cannot take away probity from the virtuous. The wise know how to foresee events, and to lay hold of occasions. If we were allowed to take away from others, whatever we should think proper, the society of men would be soon overturned. Among the virtues which ought to surround the throne, the people look chiefly for piety, justice, courage, and mercy. We may admire the time past, but we must conform ourselves to the present.

To request,
Companion,
Fellow-citizen,
To mind a thing,
To provide,
Store,
To save,
To snatch away,
Probity,
Know how to foresee.
To lay hold of,
If we were allowed,
To overturn,
To surround,
To look for,
Chiefly,
Mercy,
To conform one'self to,

verzoeken.
gezel.
medeburger.
ergens aan denken.
zich voorzien.
voorraad. m.
redden.
wegnemen.
braafheid.
kunnen vooruitzien.
gebruik maken van.
indien het veroorloofd ware.
in wanorde geraken.
omringen.
zien naar.
voornamelijk.
langmoedigheid.
zich schicken naar.

N°. 186.

We all of us complain of the shortness of time, says Seneca, and yet have much more than we know what to do with. Most men spend the greater part of their lives, says he, either in doing nothing, or in acting amiss; and quite other things than they ought to do. It was a maxim with Cæsar, that we ought to reckon we have done nothing, so long as any thing remains to be done. The rich ought to supply the wants of the poor. It is necessary to know how to penetrate into the interior of men, not to be the dupe of their exterior. True grandour does not consist in doing what one is willing to do, but in willing to do what one ought to do. He is despised who fails to fulfill the duties of his station.

Shortness,
To complain of,
To act amiss,
Maxim with,
To supply,
Want,
To penetrate,
Interior,
Not to be the dupe,
Exterior,
To fail.

kortheid.
klagen over.
verkeerd handelen.
grondregel van.
voorzien in.
behoefte.
indringen, doordringen.
binnenste.
om niet bedrogen te worden.
uiterlijk.
zalaten.

N°. 187.

Reading is a method of conferring with men, who, in every age, have been the most distinguished for their learning, of becoming acquainted with the result of their mature reflexions, and of contemplating at leisure the finished productions of good authors. You complain of hard times, without thinking on your former I am really surpris'd at it. The soldiers were

exhausted with fatigue, they could no longer hold their guns. We are much concerned at the death of that great man, who was an ornament of his age. We often mistake when we judge of others by appearance, and often a person displeases us by the very quality by which another has pleased us. Do not these soldiers join dexterity to valour?

To confer with,
The most distinguished,
Acquainted,
Result,
Mature reflexions,
At leisure,
Finished productions,
To complain of,
To be surpris'd at,
Exhausted with,
Concerned at,
Ornament,
To mistake,
By appearance,
The very,
Join to,
Dexterity,

omgaan, verkeerren met.
de voornaamste.
bekerd.
uitslag. m.
rijpe overdenkingen.
op zijn gemak.
volmaakte voortbrengfels.
klagen over.
verwonderd zijn over.
uitgeput van.
bedroefd over.
sieraad, n.
mislaan.
naar den schijn.
dezelfde.
voegen bij.
handigheid, vlugheid.

N^o. 388.

The english and dutch fleets have performed actions worthy to be transmitted to posterity. According to Newton's calculation, seven or eight minutes are sufficient for the light, to come from the sun to the earth; that is to say, to cross a distance of near twenty one millions of geographical leagues. I believe that your friends have done it through spite. Whatever merit a master has, he cannot succeed in teaching young people, if he do not join practice to theory. He is incapable of commanding others, who cannot command himself. We ought to make a judicious choice of those friends, to whom we intend to give our confidence. All the finest talents united are not worth

one virtue. They were willing to withdraw, but we hindered them from it.

To transmit to,	overbrengen. <i>tot.</i>
Passivity,	nakomelingschap. <i>f.</i>
Calculation,	berekening.
To cross,	doorloopen.
Through spite,	uit spijt.
Whatever merit he has,	welke verdiensten hij ook hebbe.
To succeed,	slagen.
Practice,	praktijk. <i>f.</i>
Theory,	theorie. <i>f.</i>
Incapable of,	onbekwaam om.
Judicious,	oordeelkundig.
To intend,	willen.
To withdraw,	heengaan.
To hinder from.	beletten.

N^o. 189.

The study of history disposes us not to be surpris'd at the various events of which we are the witnesses. Diana had her temple at Ephesus: it was one of the seven wonders of the world: Erostratus set it on fire, to render his name immortal; but the Ephesians prohibited, on pain of death, the very mention of his name. If we had no pride, we would not so often complain of that of others. We despise the world, when we know it thoroughly, but we give ourselves to it, before we know it, and the heart is lost, before reason has enlightened it. Cæsar was celebrated for his generosity, and Cato for his great integrity. Prosperity gains friends, and adversities tries them. He knows not how to fear, who dares to die.

To dispose,	maken.
Various,	verschillende.
Event,	gebeurtenis.
Witness,	getuige.
To set on fire,	in brand steken.
To render immortal,	onsterfelijk maken.
To prohibit,	verbieden.
On pain of death,	op doods straffe.

The very mention,
Thoroughly,
To enlighten,
Celebrated for,
Integrity,
To try,
He knows not how to fear,

het noemen zelf.
geheellijk.
verlichten.
beroemd wegens.
braafheid.
beproeven.
hij kent geene vrees.

Of nouns of number.

Van de telwoorden.

The nouns of number are commonly used without articles. There are, nevertheless, some cases, in which the article is used:

Zend hem de honderd gulden, send him the hundred guilders, which you have received.
die gij ontvangen hebt,
Geef mij de tien dukaten give me the ten ducats of his brother.
van zijnen broeder,

The nouns of number are put before the substantives to which they belong; except in the following phrases:

In het jaar veertien hon- in the year fourteen hundred
dert twee en negentig ont-dekte Columbus Amerika. Colomb discovered America.
Lodewijk de veertiende over- Lewis the fourteenth died
leed in zeventien honderd in seventeen hundred
vijftien. fifteen.

Gij zult het vinden hoofd- you will find it, chapter
stuk vijf, vers twaalf, the fifth, vers the twelfth.

In denoting the hour, the word *uur* is often understood:

Het slaat acht, it strikes eight o'clock.
Het is bij negen, it is almost nine o'clock.

When we speak of half an hour, the word *uur* is never expressed:

Het is half zeven, it is half an hour past six.

The substantive, after the number, is often attended by the prepositions *van, uit, onder, in,* etc.

<i>Zes van de geleerdste mannen uit Europa,</i>	fix of the most learned men of Europe.
<i>Zij kozen er drie uit hun midden,</i>	they chose there from among them.
<i>Eenigen onder u zijn van dat gevoelen,</i>	some among you are of that opinion.

The substantives, attended by a number in plural, are also put in the plural, except those followed by *een, one*; which is declined as an article:

<i>Honderd en eene pen,</i>	hundred and one pen.
<i>Duizend en een boek,</i>	thousand and one book.

The following substantives, which express a weight, measure or sum, are put in the singular, though attended by a number in plural.

<i>Honderd riem papier,</i>	hundred reams of paper.
<i>Zes honderd voet hoog,</i>	six hundred feet high.
<i>Twaalf voet diep,</i>	twelve feet deep.
<i>Eene kaas van twintig pond,</i>	a cheese of twenty pounds.
<i>Zeven schepel koorn,</i>	seven bushels of corn.
<i>Dertig vel postpapier,</i>	thirty sheets of postpaper.
<i>Eene som van drie duizend gulden,</i>	a sum of three thousand guilders.

When the sum is not expressed in guilders, but in other pieces, these are put in the plural.

<i>Hij is mij honderd dukaten schuldig,</i>	he owes me hundred ducats.
<i>Geef mij twaalf schellingen,</i>	give me twelve shillings.

It is the same with the word *gulden*, when it denotes, not so much the sum, but the pieces.

<i>Hier zijn vier guldens en drie schellingen,</i>	there are four guilders and three shillings.
--	--

Mark also.

<i>Een regiment van twee duizend man,</i>	a regiment of two thousand men.
<i>Zeven duizend man voetvolk,</i>	seven thousand feet.
<i>Drie duizend man paardenvolk,</i>	three thousand horse.

When speaking of pounds, yards, bushels, etc. taken each asunder, the plural is used.

Vier ponden koffij, four pounds of coffee;
Zes schepels koren, six bushels of corn.

With a fractional number the singular is always used.

Twaalf en een half pond, twelve and a half pound.
Negend' halve gulden, eight and a half guilder.
Zevend'half el laken, six and a half yard.

E X E R C I S E,

upon the use of nouns of number.

N^o. 190.

London bridge is nine hundred feet long, forty three feet high, and seventy three feet wide. The coffy-trees are commonly forty feet high; they yield twice a year an abundant crop. The famous mine of Potifi in Peru, is more than fifteen hundred feet deep. Your friend owes me a sum of three thousand guilders; he has paid me to day five hundred ducats, and to morrow he will bring me sixty ducats. The army of the English consisted of forty thousand men. He has bought twenty reams of postpaper, and seven books of brown paper. Bring me two hundred and one pen. What o'clock is it? Is it almost half an hour past eight. What have you sold? Twenty bushels of corn.

Wide,
Commonly,
To yield,
Crop,
Consisted of,
Almost,

breed.
gewoonlijk.
opleveren.
oogst. m.
bestond uit.
bijna.

Of the syntax of adverbs.

Van het gebruik der bijwoorden.

The adverb expresses some modification of the verb, of the adnoun, or of another adverb, to which it is joined. But the adverbs of quantity are also joined to substantives, as:

Hij heeft meer geld dan ik, he has more money than I.
Zij heeft minder boeken, she has less books.

We must never use an adverb when the signification requires an adnoun.

Hij heeft het haar rood,
 is a fault; it must be:

Hij heeft rood haar, he has red hair.

Some adverbs require a verb to determine the propriety; in that case one uses the infinitive mood with the prepositions *te*, and *om te*,

Dat is zwaar te verteren, that is of difficult digestion.

Zij zijn bereid om te gaan, they are ready to go.

Gij zijt verplicht te komen, you are obliged to come.

Is dat moeilijk te doen? Is that difficult to do?

Dat is gemakkelijk te doen, that is easy to be done.

The negation *niet* is not used with verbs, which express themselves a negation, as:

Hij ontkende daar geweest he denied his having been
 - te zijn, there.

and not:

*Hij ontkende daar niet ge-
 weest te zijn,*

Consequently we must say:

Wacht u dat te doen, take care not to do it.

and not:

Wacht u dat niet te doen.

The adverb *niet* is in some phrases an affirmation:
Hoe gelukkig zou zij niet how happy should she have
geweest zijn, *ve. been,*
Wat doet men al niet om what is not done to appear
geleerd te schijnen, *learned.*

In the following cases, the adverb is in Dutch before, and in English after the verb:

a. In the simple tenses, which depend on a conjunction, and in the infinitive mood:

Dat ik fraai schrijve, that I write well.
Dat zij langzaam gaan, that they go slowly.
Om goed te werken, to work well.

b. In the compound tenses, which do not depend on a conjunction, the adverb is between the auxiliary and the participle:

Zij heeft lang gelezen, she has read a long time.
Wij hadden slecht geschreven. we had written wretchedly.
Zij hadden eenpariglijk besloten, they had resolved unanimously.

c. If the compound tense depends on a conjunction, the adverb is after the verb, and the auxiliary at the end:

Dat zij spoedig betaald hebben, that they have paid soon.
Dat hij moedig gestreden hebbe, that he has fought courageously.
Dat wij onophoudelijk gelezen hebben, that we have read without ceasing.

The adverb is always placed after the imperative mood:

Bid aandachtelijk, pray devotedly.
Weiger hardnekkiglijk, refuse obstinately.

In some cases the adverb is before the verb in English, and after the verb in Dutch.

Hij spreekt zelden, he seldom speaks.
Zij komt dikwerf, she often comes.
Zij lezen somtijds, they sometimes read.

EXERCISES,

upon the use of adverbs.

N^o. 191.

I hope you will spend the day pleasantly. I had the honour of seeing him formerly. That he may tell me sincerely the truth. That she may get up betimes. We will set out early, that we may arrive before the heat of the day. They will have been long in England. He has acted conformably to reason and justice, nobody will condemn his conduct. They have done their exercises hastily, they wanted to go out. Homer sometimes slumbers in the midst of Gods and heroes. Never reproach any one with the services you do him. What is made with pleasure is generally well made. Courtiers often pass their life in the hope of acquiring what they never obtain.

To spend,
Formerly,
To get up,
Conformably to,
To condemn,
Hastily,
To slumber,
To reproach with,
Generally,
Courtier,
To acquire, to obtain,

doorbrengen.
voormaals.
opstaan.
overeenkomstig met.
veroordeelen.
in haast.
sluimeren.
verwijten.
in het algemeen.
hovelings.
verkrijgen.

N^o. 192.

Death almost always comes at an improper hour. Friendship commonly finishes, where rivalry begins. Passions are sometimes rash, and always credulous.

Ignorant people are generally obstinate. The public often ascribe to merit all the success of fortune. Those who have been always prosperous, are the most sensibly affected with every attack of ill-fortune. Carthage lies over against Sicily; that city made war several times against the Romans, but it was at last entirely ruined. We do not easily quit a bad habit, which affords us any pleasure. Great talents are seldom found in a man without great defects. There is no man so perfect, but he sometimes yields to human frailties.

Improper,
Rivalship,
Rash,
Credulous,
Obstinate,
To ascribe,
Prosperous,
Affected,
Ill-fortune,
Over against,
Ruined,
To quit,
Defect,
To yield,
Frailty,

ongeschildt.
naijver. m.
vermetel.
ligtgeloovig.
bijzhoofdig.
toeschrijven.
voorspoedig.
getroffen.
tegenspoed.
tegen over.
geruineerd.
ontdoen.
gebrek.
wijken.
zwakheid.

N^o. 193.

There are some men who foolishly enjoy their wealth, and who know nothing but how to be rich. It is hardly ever but at the expence of our rest, that we undertake to trouble that of others. Socrates formerly taught philosophy; Xenophon and Plato were his disciples. We seldom repent of talking too little, but very often of talking too much. Fortune always reserves to herself the disposal of what she gives. Nature has many observers, but few confidants. All the fine words are not so much worth as a little good will. I put no value in boldness, if it is not accompanied with prudence.

Foolishly,

dwazelijk. Digitized by Google

It is hardly ever but,
 At the expence,
 Philofophy,
 To repent,
 To refolve to herfelf,
 Difpofal,
 Obferver,
 Confident,
 To put value in,
 To accompany,

*het is bijna altijd,
 ten koste,
 wijsbegeerte. f.
 berouw hebben.
 voor zich behouden.
 befchikking.
 waarnemer.
 vertrouwing,
 waarde hechten aan,
 vergezellen.*

Of the use of Prepositions.

Over het gebruik der Voorzetsels.

If feveral fubftantives, connected by *en* or *of*, require the fame preposition, this may be repeated, or, it may be placed alone before the firft noun, *door beleid, door moed en door dapperheid*, by conduct, courage and valour; or: *door beleid, moed en dapperheid*.

The prepositions are always repeated, when we fpeak with energy.

Zij zullen zich op den vorst they will avengè themselves
en op zijn huis wreken, of the king and his family.

But when the fubftantives are connected by *deels, het zij, niet alleen, noch*, etc. the prepositions must be repeated.

Noch door den vorst, noch neither by the prince, nor
door den ftattdienaar, by the minifter.
Niet alleen voor den vader, not alone for the father,
maar oók voor den zoon, but alfo for the fon.
Deels door goedheid, deels what with bounty, and
door geweld, what with violence.

Two prepositions must not follow one another; euphony requires the evitation of it. Instead of: *door met geld omgekochte getuigen*, we fay: *door getuigen, met geld omgekocht*.

The preposition *halve*, *wege*, *waart* or *waarts*, are always joined to other words, as: *ambtshalve*, by virtue of one's office; *pligtwege*, for duty's sake; *oostwaarts*, eastward; *westwaarts*, westward; *stadwaarts*, to the town.

By the combination of a preposition and an adverb, many new adverbs are formed, as: *daarom*, of *daar* and *om*; *waaraan*, of *waar* and *aan*; *hierdoor*, of *hier* and *door*.

EXERCISE,

upon the use of prepositions.

N^o. 194.

He has obtained that by violence and by address. He has killed his enemy with a sword or a knife. He will avenge himself of the minister and of his brother. He is in a state of doubt, fear and distrust. Foreigners take pleasure in admiring at Amsterdam the singular mixture formed by ridges of houses, the tops of trees, and the flags of ships, which present in the same place, an idea of the sea, the city and the country. Charity does nothing without consideration and order. Our laws do not condemn any person without having heard and examined him. You must go not only with him, but also with her. Do it for my sake or for her sake.

Address,
Distrust,
To take pleasure,
Singular mixture,
Ridge,
To present,
Charity,
Consideration,
To examine,

behendigheid,
wantrouwen,
vermaak *schoppen*,
zonderling mengsel,
rei,
vertoonen,
liefdadigheid,
overleg, n.
onderzoeken.

Of the use of Conjunctions,

Over het gebruik der Voegwoorden.

When the copulative and exclusive conjunctions *en, ook, noch, of, maar*, are between two substantives, these must agree in case.

Ik vind den schoen en den hoed, I find the shoe and the hat.

Dat is hem en mij gebeurd, that happened to him and to me.

Ik zal dat aan haar en aan haren vriend zenden, I will send it to her and to her friend.

Zij willen den koning of den minister zien, they will see the king or the minister.

Zij vonden noch den tuinman, noch den knecht, they found neither the gardener, nor the valet.

When two verbs are connected by *en*, the auxiliary verb is not repeated:

Hij heeft gelezen, gezongen en gedanst, he has read, sung, [and danced.

Zij zullen schrijven, spelen en vrolijk zijn, they will write, play, and be gay.

In some phrases the auxiliary verb is repeated, when one speaks with energy:

Gij zoudt mij bezoeken, gij zoudt mij helpen, gij zoudt mij geld leenen, maar gij hebt alles vergeten, you should visit me; you should help me; you should lend me money; but you have forgot all this.

Some conjunctions are always at the beginning of a phrase, or before the words to which they belong, as: *dat, of, want, dewijl.*

Dewijl hij eerlijk is, zullen wij hem helpen, we shall help him, because he is honest.

Hij zal het zekerlijk doen, he will certainly do it,
want hij heeft het be- for he has promised it.
loofd,

Others are always put in the middle, or at the end of the phrase:

Wij zullen insgelijks schrij- we shall write also.
ven,

Zij gaan insgelijks, they go also.

Hij is misnoegd, daarom he is discontent, therefore
komt hij niet, he does not come.

Hij wil niet, dus blijft het he will not, thus it re-
zoo, mains so.

The conjunctions *dewijl*, *omdat*, *want*, *waarom*, *alzo*, *zoo dat*, *zoo dra*, govern the indicative mood, but *ten zij*, *op dat*, *ten einde*, *mits*, etc. govern almost always the subjunctive mood.

Hij zal niet komen, ten zij he will not come, unless
ik hem betale, I pay him.

Zij studeren, opdat zij ge- they study, that they may
leerd worden, be learned.

Wij zullen hem helpen, mits we will help him, on con-
hij het ons verzoeke, dition he asks such.

The conjunction *niet alleen* is always followed by *maar ook*; — *zoo wel*, by *als*; — *hoe*, by *hoe*; — *zoo*, by *als*, etc.

Zoo wel de meester, als de as well the master as the
leerling, pupil.

Niet alleen de koning, maar not only the king, but also
ook de onderdanen, the subjects.

Hoe langer, hoe liever, the longer, the better.

Zij is zoo rijk als wij, she is as rich as we.

E X E R C I S E,

upon the use of Conjunctions.

N^o. 167.

Employ all the days of your youth, so that you

may fulfill honourably all the duties of your station. I ask nothing from you, except that you do your task, and obey your master. I doubt whether he have refused that employment. It is not probable that he have attained his end. People commit many faults when they are young, because they want experience, and they only take advise by themselves. A body has no motion, unless it receives it from another. He must do it, though he be in the right. Not only the parents, but also the children are obliged to it. I leave you, not only my house, but also my goods. It grew the longer the darker, when we went home.

To fulfill the duties,
 Station,
 Task,
 To refuse,
 To attain one's end,
 To want experience,
 To take advise,
 Motion,
 To leave,
 It grew,

de pligten vervullen,
stand. n.
taak. f.
weigeren.
zijn oogmerk bereiken.
geene ondervinding hebben.
te rade gaan.
beweging.
overlaten.
het werd.

Of Interjections,

Van de Tusschenwerpsels.

Interjections are always placed at the beginning or in the middle of a phrase:

<i>Foei! gij denkt niet aan het- geen gij zegt,</i>	Fy! you do not think on what you say.
<i>Helaas! ik kan mijne smart niet uitdrukken,</i>	Alas! I cannot express my grief.
<i>Zonder godsdienst is de mensch, helaas! een on- gelukkig wezen,</i>	Without religion a man is, alas! an unfortunate crea- ture.

F R E E E X E R C I S E S.

N^o. 1.

A pick-pocket.

A physician at Bath, for his visits to a dying patient, received regularly his guinea. He called one day when the poor man was at the point of death. His attendant being out of the way, he, in a faltering voice, begged the doctor to put his hand into his pocket, and take out a guinea. „But my good friend, said the physician gaily, would not that be something like picking your pocket!” The patient, who, like Sterne's Yorick, retained a portion of wit to the last, faintly articulated; „very like it, indeed, doctor.”

Pick-pocket,
Patient,
To call,
At the point of death,
Attendant,
Out of the way,
Faltering,
Gaily,
Retained,
Faintly articulated,

zakkerolder, beurzesnijder.
patient, lijder.
aankomen,
op den oever des doods.
oppasser.
afwezend.
flamerende.
schertsend.
behield.
zeide met eene zwakke stem.

N^o. 2.

A West-India legislator.

In the Jamaica house of assembly a motion being

made for leave to bring in a bill to prevent the frauds of wharfingers, Mr. Paul-Phipps, member for St. Andrew, rose and said „Mr. Speaker, I second the motion; the wharfingers are to a man a set of rogues; I know it well; I was one myself for ten years.

Legislator,
Motion,
Leave,
Fraud,
Wharfinger,
Member,
To second,
A set of rogues,
Are to a man,

wetgever.
motie. f.
verlof.
bedrog. n.
kaasmeester.
lid. n.
ondersteunen.
een hoop schurken.
zijn tot den laastten man.

N°. 3.

Reason on both sides.

Charles II, asked bishop Stillingfleet how it happened that he preached in general without book, but always read the sermons which he delivered before the court. The bishop answered, that the awe of seeing before him so great and wise a prince made him afraid to trust himself. „But will your majesty, continued he, permit me to ask you a question in my turn? Why do you read your speeches to the parliament?“ „Why Doctor, replied the king, I'll tell you very candidly. I have asked them so often for money, that I am ashamed to look them in the face!“

How it happened,
Without book,
To deliver,
Awe,
Afraid,
In my turn,
Speech,
Candidly,
To look in the face,

hoe het kwam.
uit het hoofd.
uitspreken.
ontzag. n.
bevreemd.
op mijne beurt.
rede, aanspraak.
oprechtelijk.
in het aangezicht zien,

N^o. 4.

A royal Physician.

Henry VIII hunting in Windsor forest, struck down about dinner to the abbey of Reading, where disguising himself as one of the royal guards, he was invited to the abbot's table. A sirloin was set before him, on which he laid too as lustily as any beefeater „Well fare thy heart, quoth the abbot, and here in a cup of sack, I remember the health of his grace your master. I would give a hundred pounds that I could feed on beef as heartily as you do. Alas! my poor queasy stomach will scarcely digest the wing of a chicken.” The king heartily pledged him, thanked him for his good cheer, and departed undiscovered. Shortly after the abbot was sent to the Tower, kept a close prisoner, and fed on bread and water, ignorant of the cause, and terrified at his situation. At last, a sirloin of beef was set before him, on which his empty stomach made him feed voraciously. „Mylord, exclaims the king, entering from a private closet, instantly deposit your hundred pounds, or no going hence. I have been your physician, and here, as I deserve it, I demand my fee.

Struck down,
About dinner,
To disguise,
Surloin,
On which he laid too.
Lustily,
Wellfare thy heart,
Quoth,
I remember the health,
Grace,
That I could feed on,
Queasy,
Scarcely digest,
To pledge,

landde aan.
omtrent etenstijd.
vermommen.
runderlende.
waarop hij aanviel.
lustig.
dat het u wel moge smaken.
zeide.
ik drink de gezondheid.
genade.
dat ik kon eten.
misfelijk.
naauwelijks verteren.
bescheid doen (in het drinken).

Cheer,
Undiscovered,
Terrefied,
Voraciously,
To exclaim,
To deposit,
Fee.

maal. n.
— *zonder herkend te zijn.*
verschrokken.
gulziglijk.
uitroepen.
neertellen.
loon.

N^o. 5.

Scriptural application.

The Duke de Bouillon, whom Louis XIII had pardoned of the crime of treason, meeting the Cardinal de la Valette, said: „Beati quorum remissioe sunt iniquitates.” (Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven) As the Cardinal was suspected to have been concerned in a conspiracy, of which sufficient evidence had not been obtained, the Duke answered him: „Et quorum tecta sunt peccata.” (And whose sin is covered).

Scriptural,
Application,
Treason,
Transgression,
To suspect,
To be concerned,
Conspiracy,
Evidence,

schriftuurlijk.
toepassing.
verraad. n.
overtreding.
verdenken.
deel hebben.
zamenzwering.
bewijs. n.

N^o. 6.

Dear wine.

Mr. Elwes, who united the most rigid parsimony with the most gentlemanly sentiments, received a present of some very fine wine from a wine merchant, who knew that nothing could so win his heart as small gifts. It had the effect to obtain from him the

loan of several hundred pounds. Mr. Elwes who could never ask a gentleman for money, and who was a perfect philosopher as to his losses, used jocularly to say: „It was indeed very fine wine; for it cost me twenty pounds a bottle.

Rigid parsimony,
Gentlemanly,
Gift,
To obtain the loan,
As to his losses,
Jocularly,

grootste zuinigheid.
edel.
geschenk. n.
ter leen verkrijgen.
wat zijne verliezen aangaat.
plagt spottend te zeggen.

N^o. 7.

Memory.

Mr. Johnstone of Drury Lane, being one evening loudly called on, by the deities who preside in the highest part of the theatre, for their favorite song: „The Sprig of Shilalah,” though not announced, came on the stage readily, signifying his acquiescence. The music played the symphony, but when he was to have begun, he stood silent and apparently confused. Again the music played the symphony; still his silence and confusion continued. At length he came forward and electrified the audience by this characteristic apology: Ladies and gentlemen, I assure you, that I have sung this song so often, that upon my soul I cannot remember how it begins.

Being loudly called on,

met luider stem geroepen wordende.

Announced,
To signify,
Acquiescence,
He stood silent,
Confused,
To electrify,
Apology,
Upon my soul,

aangekondigd.
te kennen geven.
toestemming.
hij stond verstomd.
verlegen.
schokken.
verdediging.
op mijne ziel.

N^o. 8.*Transmutation.*

A serjeant in a regiment of foot, having in his cups snapped the blade of his sword in two, got for the moment a wooden blade, till he could conveniently have the proper one renewed. This coming to the ears of the commanding officer, he ordered the serjeant to bring to the parade from the black hole, his brother, a private confined there for drunkenness. The serjeant, in due obedience, went with a file of men, and brought his brother forward. The colonel then addressed the private in a severe tone, thus: „you are, sirrah, such a drunken scoundrel, and have so long disgraced the corps, that I am determined you shall have at once your head struck off, and your own brother shall be your executioner; kneel, Sir, and you, serjeant, do your duty!” The serjeant intreated that there might not be imposed on him an office so shocking to his feelings; but all in vain, the commander was inexorable. The serjeant fell on his knees, and exclaimed: „Pray heaven hear my prayers! and rather than I should be the slaughterer of my brother, may the blade of my sword be turned to wood! My prayers are heard, (cried he, drawing his sword) My prayers are heard.”

Transmutation,
In his cups,
Conveniently,
Black hole,
Confined,
Due,
Scoundrel,
To disgrace,
Executioner,
Feelings,
Shocking,
Inexorable,
Slaughterer,

verandering, verwiseling.
in dronkenschap.
geschiktelijk.
gevangenis. f.
gevangene.
behoorlijk.
schelm, schobbejak.
schande aandoen.
scherpregter.
gevoel. n.
treffend.
onverbiddelijk.
moordenaar.

N^o. 9.

An artful request.

A gentleman travelling from Paris to Calais, was accosted by a man walking along, who begged the favour of him, to let him put his great-coat in his carriage. „With all my heart (said the gentleman) but if we should be going different ways, how will you get your great coat? Sir! answered the other with apparent naïveté, I shall be in it.”

Artful,
To accost,
Great-coat,
Naïveté,

listig.
aanspreken.
jas,
naïviteit.

N^o. 10.

Original and Copy.

A certain dean purchased of a literary gentleman a sermon, which he preached with much applause, in his cathedral. Next Sunday he went to an other church as an auditor, and had the mortification to hear the identical sermon, delivered to a crowded and admiring congregation. He, immediately after the service, sent for the other, and severely abused him for selling him a copy, instead of an original. You are mistaken, Sir, said the other, for he had the copy, and you had the original.

Dean,
To purchase,
Literary gentleman,
Applause,
Cathedral,
Auditor,
Mortification,
Identical,

deken.
aankopen.
geleerde.
goedkeuring.
hoofdkerk. f.
toehoorder.
verdriet. n.
dezelfde.

Crouded,
 Congregation,
 To abuse,

talrijk.
vergadering.
bekijven.

N^o. 11.

An infallible receipt.

As Louis XIV was, one severe frosty day, travelling from Versailles to Paris, he met a young man, very lightly clothed, tripping along in as much apparent comfort as if it had been in the midst of the summer. He called him, — „How is it, said the king, that, dressed as you are, you seem to feel no inconvenience from the cold, while, notwithstanding my warm apparel, I cannot keep from shivering?” Sire, replied the pedestrian, if your majesty will follow my example, I engage that you will be the warmest monarch in Europe.” How so? (asked the king) „Your majesty need only, like me, *carry all your wardrobe on your back.*”

Infallible,
 Frosty; lightly,
 Tripping along,
 Inconvenience,
 Apparel,
 To shiver,
 Pedestrian,
 Wardrobe,

onfeilbaar.
koud; luchtjes.
voortgaande.
ongemak. n.
kleeding. f.
klappertanden.
voetganger.
kleerkast. f.

N^o. 12.

The obsequious carpenter.

A carpenter having neglected to make a gibbet ordered, on the ground of his not having been paid for a former one, was severely rated by the sheriff. „Fellow, said he, how dared you neglect making the gibbet that was ordered for me?” „I humbly

beg your pardon, said the carpenter, had I known that it was *for your worship*, I should have left every thing else to do it.

Obsequious,
Gibbet,
Rated,
Worship,

*ondergeschikt.
galg.
doorgehaald.
hoogedele.*

N°. 13.

The saddle put on the right horse.

Dr. Swift gave his own servant his horse to hold, while he paid a visit at Sir Arthur Addison's. The man feeling a call to the ale-house, gave the horse in the care of another, while he was gone. In the interim the dean came out, and found his horse in charge of the stranger. His servant returning at this moment, began to make an apology. Swift told him, there was no harm done; if he wanted a drop of ale, he was right to go and have it; „but, says he, don't you think John, it would be right for me to give this man something for holding the horse?” His servant said, „By all means Sir.” „Do you think five shillings be too much?” „No Sir.” The fellow hugged himself that the doctor had taken the matter so well; but what was his mortification, on finding, when next settling accounts with his master, the following charge against him: „Paid a man for doing your business, 5 shillings.”

Feeling a call to the alehouse, *gevoelde trek om eens in de kroeg te gaan.*

To give in the care,

aan de zorg toevertrouwen.

In the interim,

intusschen.

In charge,

in handen.

Apology,

verdediging.

There was no harm done,

dat er geen kwaad bij is.

It would be right for me,

het zou billijk zijn.

By all means,

wel zeker.

To hug one's self,

zich verheugen.

To settle accounts.

*afrekenen.*The following charge against *het volgende ten zijnen laste.*
him.N^o. 14.*Murder and suicide.*

A clergyman preaching against lending money on usury, asserted it to be as great a sin as murder. Sometime after he applied to a parishioner to lend him twenty pounds. „What! said the other, after declaring your opinion that to lend money on usury was as bad as *murder*?” „I do not mean, answered the parson, that you should lend it to me on usury, but *gratis*.” „That, replied the parishioner, would, in my opinion, be as bad as suicide.”

Suicide,
Clergyman,
Usury,
Parishioner,
Parson,
In my opinion,

zelfmoord.
geestelijke.
woeker.
parochiaan.
prediker.
naar mijne gedachte.

N^o. 15.*Regulus.*

After the Carthaginians had defeated the roman army and taken Regulus, that illustrious commander, prisoner, they met with such a series of misfortunes as induced them to think of putting an end to so destructive a war, by a speedy peace. With this view they began to soften the rigour of Regulus's confinement, and endeavoured to engage him to go to Rome with their ambassadors, and to use his interest to bring out a peace, upon moderate terms, or at least, an

exchange of prisoners. Regulus obeyed his masters, and embarked for Rome, after having bound himself, by a solemn oath, to return to his chains, if the negotiation did not succeed. The carthaginian ship arrived safe in Italy; but when Regulus came to the gates of the city, he refused to enter them: „My misfortunes” said he, „have made me a slave to the Carthaginians; I am no longer a roman citizen. The senate always gives audience to foreigners without the gates.” His wife Marcia went out to meet him, and presented to him his two children: but he, only casting a wild look on them, fixed his eyes on the ground, as if he thought himself unworthy of the embraces of his wife, and the caresses of his children.

Illustrious commander,
Series,
To induce,
Destructive,
View,
To use his interest,
Exchange,
Negociation,
Carthaginian,
To go out to meet,
To cast a look,
Embrace,
Caress,

beroemd veldheer.
reeks.
aanzetten.
verwoestend.
oogmerk. n.
zijnen invloed gebruiken.
uitwisseling.
onderhandeling.
Karthaagsch.
te gemoet gaan.
een' blik werpen.
omhelzing.
liefkozing.

N°. 16.

When the senators assembled in the suburbs, he was introduced to them with the carthaginian ambassadors, and together with them made the two proposals wherewith he was charged. „Conscript fathers,” said he „being now a slave to the Carthaginians; I am come to treat with you concerning a peace, and an exchange of prisoners.” Having uttered these words he began to withdraw, and follow the ambassadors, who were not allowed to be present at the deliberations and disputes of the con-

script fathers. In vain the senate pressed him to stay. He gave his opinion as an old senator and consul, and refused to continue in the assembly till his african masters ordered him, and then the illustrious slave took his place among the fathers, but continued silent, with his eyes fixed on the ground, while the more ancient senators spoke. When it came to his turn to deliver his opinion, he addressed himself to the conscript fathers in the following words: Though I am a slave at Carthage, yet I am free at Rome, and will therefore declare my sentiments with freedom.

Suburb,	<i>voorstad.</i>
To introduce,	<i>inleiden.</i>
Conscript,	<i>beschrevene.</i>
To utter,	<i>uitspreken.</i>
Deliberation,	<i>overweging.</i>
Fixed on the ground,	<i>ter neder geslagen.</i>
To deliver one's opinion,	<i>zijne gevoelens zeggen.</i>
To declare,	<i>aan den dag leggen.</i>

N^o. 17.

Romans, it is not for your interest either to grant the Carthaginians a peace, or to make an exchange of prisoners with them. Carthage is extremely exhausted; and the only reason why she sues for peace is, because she is not in a condition to continue the war. You have been vanquished but once, and that by my fault; a fault which Metellus has repaired by a signal victory: but the Carthaginians have been so often overcome, that they have not the courage to look Rome in the face. Your allies continue peaceable, and serve you with zeal: but your enemies' troops consist only of mercenaries, who have no other tie than that of interest, and will soon be disobliged by the republic they serve, Carthage being already quite destitute of money to pay them. No, Romans, a peace with Carthage does not, by any means, suit your interest, considering the condition to which the Carthaginians are reduced. I, therefore, advise you to pursue

the war with greater vigour than ever. As for the exchange of prisoners, you have among the carthaginian captives several officers of distinction, who are young, and may one day command the enemies' armies; but as for me, I am advanced in years, and my misfortunes have made me useless. Besides, what can you expect from soldiers who have been vanquished, and made slaves? Such men, like timorous deer that have escaped out of the hunter's toils, will ever be upon the alarm, and ready to fly.

Interest,
To grant,
To sue,
To repair,
Signal,
Peaceable,
Mercenary,
Tie,
Disobliged,
Destitute,
To suit,
Vigour,
Distinction,
Timorous,

belang. n.
toestaan.
vragen, verzoeken.
herstellen.
groot, belangrijk.
vreedzaam.
loontrekker.
band. m.
misnoegd.
ontbloot.
overeenkomen.
kracht.
rang.
schroomvallig.

N^o. 18.

The senate, greatly affected with his disinterestedness, magnanimity and contempt of life, would willingly have preserved him, and continued the war in Africa. Some were of opinion, that in Rome he was not obliged to keep an oath which had been extorted from him in an enemy's country. The pontifex Maximus himself, being consulted in the case, declared that Regulus might continue at Rome, without being guilty of perjury. But the noble captive, highly offended at this decision, as if his honour and courage were called in question, declared to the senate, who trembled to hear him speak, that he well knew what torments were reserved for him at Carthage; but that he had so much of the true spirit

of a Roman, as to dread less the tortures of a cruel rack, than the shame of a dishonourable action, which would follow him to the grave. „It is my duty,” said he „to return to Carthage; let the Gods take care of the rest

Affected with,
Magnanimity,
Disinterestedness,
To preserve,
To extort,
Pontifex,
Perjury,
Captive,
Decision,
To call in question,
Torments,
Rack,

aangedaan over.
grootmoedigheid.
belangeloosheid.
behouden.
afdwingen.
opperpriester.
meinēd.
gevangene.
befliffing.
in twijfel trekken.
pijnigingen.
pijnbank. f.

N^o. 19.

This intrepidity made the senate still more desirous of saving such a hero. All means were made use of to make him stay, both by the people and the senate. He would not even see his wife, nor suffer his children to take their leave of him. Amidst the lamentations and tears of the whole city, he embarked with the carthaginian embassadors, to return to the place of his slavery, with as serene and cheerful a countenance as if he had been going to a country-seat for his diversion. The Carthaginians were so enraged against him, that they invented new torments to satisfy their revenge. First they cut off his eyelids, keeping him for a while in a dark dungeon, and then bringing him out, and exposing him to the sun at noonday. After this, they shut him up in a kind of chest, stuck with nails, having their points inwards; so that he could neither sit nor lean, without great torment; and there they suffered him to die with hunger, anguish and want of sleep.

Intrepidity,
Were made use of,

onverschrokkenheid.
werden in het werk gesteld.

Lamentations,
 Serene,
 Cheerful countenance,
 Diversion,
 Revenge,
 Dungeon,
 At noonday,
 Stuck,
 Inwards,
 To lean,
 Anguish.

geklaag. n.
opgehelderd.
vergenoegd gelaat.
uitspanning.
wraak.
hol.
op het midden van den dag.
bezet.
naar binnen.
leunen.
angst.

N^o 20.

The emperor HELIOGABALUS.

The prodigality of the emperor Heliogabalus was as boundless as his lust; for, in the short time of his reign, he is said to have reduced almost to beggary all the subjects of the empire, and to have left at his death the exchequer quite empty. He suffered nothing to appear at his table, but what was brought from the most distant countries, at an immense expense. His palace, his chamber, and his beds were all furnished with cloth of gold. When he went abroad, all the way between his chamber and the place where his chariot waited for him, was strewed with gold-dust, for he thought it beneath him to tread upon the ground like other men. All his tables, chests, chairs, and such vessels as were destined for the meanest uses, were of pure gold. Though his clothes were exceedingly costly and beset with jewels and precious stones, yet he is said never to have worn one suit twice, nor ever put on again a ring which he had once used.

Prodigality,
 Boundless,
 Lust,
 To reduce to baggary,
 Exchequer,
 He suffered nothing.
 At immense expense,

verkwisting.
grenzeloos.
begeerte.
tot den bedelftaf brengen.
schatkist.
hij dulde niets.
met groote kosten.

Beneath him,
Meanest use,

beneden hem.
geringsſte gebruik.

N°. 21.

Continuation.

He was constantly ſerved in gold plate, but every night, after ſupper, preſented to his gueſts and attendants what had been made uſe of that day. He often diſtributed among the people and ſoldiery, not only corn and money, as other emperors had done, but gold and ſilver plate, jewels, precious ſtones, and tickets, entitling them to immense ſums which were immediately paid. He cauſed his ſiſhponds to be filled with water diſtilled from roſes, and the Naumachia, where the ſea-fights were exhibited, with wine. His banquets and entertainments were expensive almoſt beyond belief, his favorite diſhes being tongues of peacocks and nightingales, and the brains of parrots and pheafants. He fed his dogs, with the livers of geefe, his horſes with raiſins, and his lions and other wild beaſts, with partridges and pheafants. „In ſhort, the whole wealth of the roman empire,“ ſays Herodian, „was ſcarcely ſufficient to ſupply the extravagance of one man.“

Attendants,
To diſtribute,
Tickets,
To entitle,
Fiſhponds,
Water diſtilled from roſes.
To exhibit,
Banquet,
Expensive,
Beyond belief,
Peacock,
Brains,
Scarcely ſufficient,

bedienden.
uitdeelen.
brteſjes.
geregtigen.
vijvers.
rozenwater.
vertoonen.
gastmaal. n.
kostbaar.
ongeloofelijk.
paauw.
herſenen.
naauwelijks voldoende.

N^o. 22.

Character of ALFRED.

Alfred, that he might be the better able to extend his charity and munificence, regulated his finances with the most perfect oeconomy, and divided his revenues into a certain number of parts, which he appropriated to the different expences of the state, and the exercise of his own private liberality and devotion; nor was he a less oeconomist in the distribution of his time, which he divided into three equal portions, allotting one to sleep, meals and exercise; and devoting the other two to writing, reading, business and prayer. That this division might not be encroached upon inadvertently, he measured them by tapers on an equal size, which he kept continually burning before the shrines of relics. Alfred seemed to be a genius self-taught, which contrived and comprehended every thing that could contribute to the security of his kingdom.

That he might be the better able, *om des te meer in staat te zijn.*

Munificence,	<i>mildheid.</i>
A perfect oeconomy,	<i>eene groote zuinigheid.</i>
To appropriate,	<i>bestemmen.</i>
Exercise,	<i>uitoefening.</i>
Devotion.	<i>godsvrucht.</i>
Nor was he a less oeconomist,	<i>hij was niet minder spaarzaam.</i>
To allot,	<i>bestemmen,</i>
To devote,	<i>toewijden.</i>
To encroach upon,	<i>in de war loopen.</i>
Inadvertently,	<i>onmerkbaar.</i>
Taper,	<i>waskaars.</i>
Shrine,	<i>kast.</i>
Genius,	<i>genie.</i>
To contrive,	<i>uitdenken.</i>
Security,	<i>veiligheid.</i>

N^o. 23.*Continuation.*

He was author of that inestimable privilege, peculiar to the subjects of this nation, which consists in their being tried by their peers; for he first instituted juries, or at least improved upon an old institution, by specifying the number and qualifications of jurymen, and extending their power to trials of property as well as criminal indictments; but no regulation redounded more to his honour and the advantage of his kingdom, than the measures he took to prevent rapine, murder, and other outrages, which had so long been committed with impunity. His attention stooped even to the meanest circumstances of his people's conveniency. He introduced the art of brick-making, and built his own houses of those materials; which being much more durable and secure from accidents than timber; his example was followed by his subjects in general. He was, doubtless, an object of most perfect esteem and admiration; for, exclusive of the qualities which distinguished him as a warrior and legislator, his personal character was amiable in every respect. Died 897, aged 52.

Author,
Inestimable,
Privilege,
Peculiar,
To institute,
To specify,
Qualification,
Trial,
Indictment,
To redound to his honour,
Rapine,
Outrage,
With impunity,
To stoop,
Conveniency,

slichter.
onwaardeerbaar.
voorregt. n.
bijzonder behoorende.
invoeren.
aanwijzen.
vereischten.
verhoor, regtsgeding.
aanklagt.
tot eer verstrekken.
roof.
belediging.
straffeloos.
stilsaan.
gerief. n.

The art of brick-making,
Material,
Exclusive,
In every respect,

het steenbakken.
bouwstof.
behalve.
in allen opzigte.

N^o. 24.

Character of HENRY II.

Henry died in the fifty seventh year of his age and thirty fifth of his reign; in the course of which he had, on sudden occasions, displayed all the abilities of a politician, all the sagacity of a legislator, and all the magnanimity of a hero. He lived revered above all the princes of his time; and his death was deeply lamented by his subjects, whose happiness seems to have been the chief aim of all his endeavours. He not only enacted wholesome laws, but saw them executed with great punctuality. He was generous, even to admiration, with regard to those who committed offences against his own person; but he never forgave the injuries that were offered to his people, for atrocious crimes were punished severely without respect of persons. He was of a middle stature, and the most exact proportion; his countenance was round, fair, and ruddy; his blue eyes were mild and engaging, except in a transport of passion, when they sparkled like lightening, to the terror of the beholders. He was broad-chested, strong, muscular, and inclined to be corpulent, though he prevented the bad effects of his disposition by hard exercise and continual fatigue; he was temperate in his meals, even to a degree of abstinence, and seldom or ever sat down, except at supper.

Course,
To display,
Politician,
Sagacity,
Legislator,
Magnanimity,
To revere,

loop. m.
ten toon spreiden.
staatkundige.
doorzigt. n.
wetgever.
grootmoedigheid.
cerbiedigen, achten

To lament,	<i>beweenen.</i>
The chief aim,	<i>het voornaamste doel.</i>
Endeavour,	<i>poging.</i>
To enact,	<i>instellen.</i>
Punctuality,	<i>naauwkeurigh it.</i>
Atrocious,	<i>wreed.</i>
Of a middle stature,	<i>van middelmatige lengte.</i>
Ruddy,	<i>roodachtig.</i>
Transport,	<i>vervoering.</i>
To sparkle,	<i>stralen.</i>
Beholder,	<i>aanschouwer.</i>
Broad-chested,	<i>breed van schouders.</i>
Muscular,	<i>gespierd.</i>
Corpulent,	<i>zwaarlijvig.</i>
To prevent,	<i>voorkomen.</i>
Disposition,	<i>ligchaamsgestel. n.</i>
Abstinence,	<i>onthouding.</i>

N^o. 25.

Continuation.

He was eloquent, agreeable and facetious, remarkably courteous and polite; compassionate to all in distress; so charitable, that he constantly allotted one-tenth of his household provisions to the poor, and in the time of dearth he maintained ten thousand indigent persons, from the beginning of spring, till the end of autumn. His talents, naturally good, he had cultivated with great assiduity, and delighted in the conversation of learned men, to whom he was a generous benefactor. His memory was so surprisingly tenacious, that he never forgot a face nor a circumstance that was worth remembering. Though superior to his contemporaries in strength, riches, true courage, and military skill, he never engaged in war without reluctance; and was so averse to bloodshed, that he expressed an uncommon grief at the loss of every private soldier; yet he was not except from human frailties: his passions, naturally violent, often hurried him to excess; he was prone to anger, transported with the lust of power, and particularly accused of incontinence, not only in the affair of Rosamond, whom he is said to

have concealed in a labyrinth at Woodstock, from the jealous enquiry of his wife, but also in a supposed commerce with the french princess Adalais, who was bred in England as the future wife of his son Richard. This infamous breach of honour and hospitality, if he was actually guilty, is the foulest stain upon his character; though the fact is doubtful, and we hope the charge untrue.

Facetious,	<i>vol scherts.</i>
Courteous,	<i>vriendelijk.</i>
Distress,	<i>onheil. n.</i>
One tenth,	<i>een tiende.</i>
Dearth,	<i>duurte.</i>
Indigent,	<i>behoefstig.</i>
To delight,	<i>genoegen scheppen.</i>
Benefactor,	<i>weldoener.</i>
Tenacious,	<i>vasthoudend.</i>
Worth remembering,	<i>waard om onthouden te worden.</i>
Superior to,	<i>verheven boven.</i>
Contemporary,	<i>tijdgenoot.</i>
Military skill,	<i>krijgskunde.</i>
Reluctance,	<i>weezin.</i>
Averse to,	<i>afkeerig van.</i>
Bloodshed,	<i>bloedvergieten.</i>
Frailties,	<i>zwakheden.</i>
Hurried him to excess,	<i>bragten hem tot uitersten.</i>
Prone to,	<i>genegen tot.</i>
Incontinence,	<i>onkuischheid.</i>
Labyrinth,	<i>doolhof. m.</i>
Enquiry,	<i>nasporing.</i>
Supposed commerce,	<i>vooronderstelde omgang.</i>
Infamous breach,	<i>schandelijke inbreuk.</i>
Hospitality,	<i>gastvrijheid.</i>
Foulest stain,	<i>leelijkste vlek.</i>
Fact,	<i>daad.</i>
The charge untrue,	<i>de beschuldiging valsch.</i>

N°. 26.

Character of RICHARD I,
Surnamed the Lion-hearted.

This renowned prince was tall, strong, straight and well-proportioned. His arms were remarkably long,

his eyes blue, and full of vivacity; his hair was of a yellowish colour; his countenance fair and comely, and his air majestic. He was endowed with good natural understanding: his penetration was uncommon; he possessed a fund of manly eloquence; his conversation was spirited; and he was admired for his talents of repartee; as for his courage and ability, both Europe and Asia resound with his praise. The Saracens stilled their children with the terror of his name; and Saladine, who was an accomplished prince, admired his valour to such a degree of enthusiasm, that immediately after Richard had defeated him on the plains of Joppa, he sent him a couple of fine arabian horses, in token of his esteem; a polite compliment, which Richard returned with magnificent presents.

Renowned,
Straight,
Vivacity,
Yellowish,
Comely,
Air,
Endowed,
Penetration,
Spirited,
Repartee,
To resound,
Saracens,
Accomplished,
Enthusiasm,

beroemd.
dun.
levendigheid.
geclachtig.
bevallig.
uitzigt.
begaafd.
doorzigt. n.
geestig.
snedige antwoord.
weergalmen.
Saraceenen.
volmaakt.
geestdrift. m.

N^o. 27.

Continuation.

These are the shining parts of his character, which however cannot dazzle the judicious observer so much, but that he may perceive a number of blemishes, which no historian has been able to efface from the memory of this celebrated monarch. His ingratitude and want of filial affection are unpardonable. He was proud, haughty, ambitious, choleric, cruel, vindictive and debauched; nothing could equal his rapacious-

ness but his profusion, and, indeed, the one was the effect of the other; he was a tyrant to his wife, as well as to his people, who groaned under his taxations to such a degree, that even the glory of his victories did not exempt him from their execration; in a word, he has been aptly compared to a lion, a species of animals which he resembled not only in courage, but likewise in ferocity.

Shining,	<i>schitterend.</i>
To dazzle,	<i>verblinden.</i>
Judicious,	<i>oordeelkundig.</i>
Blemish,	<i>vlek.</i>
Filial affection,	<i>ouderliefde.</i>
Haughty,	<i>hoogmoedig.</i>
Choleric,	<i>opvliegend.</i>
Vindicative,	<i>wraakzuchtig.</i>
Debauched,	<i>losbandig.</i>
Rapaciousness,	<i>roofzucht.</i>
Profusion,	<i>verkwisting.</i>
To groan,	<i>zuchten.</i>
Taxation,	<i>schatting.</i>
Execration,	<i>verwensching.</i>
Aptly,	<i>eigenaardiglijk.</i>
Ferocity,	<i>wildheid. f.</i>

N^o. 28.

Character of EDWARD III.

Edward's Constitution has been impaired by the fatigues of his youth: so that he began to feel the infirmities of old age, before the approach of the common course of nature: and now he was seized with a malignant fever, attended with eruptions, that soon put a period to his life. When his distemper became so violent, that no hope of his recovery remained, all his attendants forsook him, as a bankrupt, no longer able to requite their services. The ungrateful *Alice*, waiting until she perceived him in the agonies of death, was so inhuman as to strip him of his rings and jewels, and leave him without one domestic to close his eyes, and do the last offices

to his breathless corse. In this deplorable condition, bereft of comfort and assistance, the mighty Edward lay expiring; when a priest, not quite so savage as the rest of his domestics, approached his bed; and, finding him still breathing, began to administer some comfort to his soul. Edward had not yet lost all perception, when he found himself thus abandoned and forlorn, in the last moments of his life. He was just able to express a deep sense of sorrow and contrition for the errors of his conduct, and died pronouncing the name of JESUS.

To impare,	<i>bederven, verzwakken.</i>
Infirmities,	<i>zwakheden.</i>
Malignant,	<i>kwaadaardig.</i>
To put a period,	<i>een einde maken.</i>
Recovery,	<i>herstel. n.</i>
Attendants,	<i>verzorgers, oppassers.</i>
To requite'	<i>beloonen.</i>
To be in the agonies of death,	<i>op serven liggen.</i>
Inhuman,	<i>onmenschelijk.</i>
To strip,	<i>berooven.</i>
To do the last offices,	<i>de laatste diensten bewijzen.</i>
Savage,	<i>wild.</i>
To administer comfort,	<i>troost geven.</i>
Perception,	<i>gevoel.</i>
Contrition,	<i>boetvaardigheid, berouw.</i>

N°. 29.

Continuation.

Such was the piteous and obscure end of Edward III, undoubtedly one of the greatest princes that ever swayed the scepter of England; whether we respect him as a warrior, a lawgiver, a monarch or a man. He possessed all the romantic spirit of Alexander; the penetration, the fortitude, the polished manners of Julius, the liberality, the munificence, the wisdom of Augustus Cæsar. He was tall, majestic, finely shaped, with a piercing eye and aquiline visage. He excelled all his contemporaries in feats of arms, and personal address. He was cour-

teous, affable and eloquent; of a free deportment, and agreeable conversation; and had the art of commanding the affection of his subjects, without seeming to solicit popularity. The love of glory was certainly the predominant passion of Edward, to the gratification of which he did not scruple to sacrifice the feelings of humanity, the lives of his subjects, and the interest of his country. And nothing could have induced or enabled his people to bear the load of taxes, with which they were encumbered in his reign, but the love and admiration of his person, the fame of his victories, and the excellent laws and regulations which the parliament enacted with his advice and concurrence.

Piteous,
Obscure,
To sway the scepter,
Romantic,
The fortitude,
Polished,
Munificence,
Finely shaped,
Piercing,
Feats of arms,
Of commanding,
Predominant,
Gratification,
He did not scruple,
The feelings of humanity,
To encumber,
Concurrence,

ellendig.
duister.
den szepter zwaaijen.
romanesk.
de kracht.
befchaafd.
weldadigheid.
fraai van gestakte,
doordringend.
heldendaden.
tot zich te trekken.
heerschend.
voldoening.
hij maakte geene zwaarigheid.
het menschelijk gevoel.
belasten.
medewerking.

N^o. 30.

Character of HENRY I.

This prince was one of the most accomplished that has filled the english throne; and possessed all the qualities both of body and mind, natural and acquired, which could fit him for the high station to which he attained: his person was manly: his countenance engaging: his eyes clear, serene and penetrating. The affability of his address encouraged those

who might be overawed by the sense of his dignity or his wisdom; and though he often indulged his facetious humour, he knew how to temper it with discretion, and ever kept at a distance from all indecent familiarities with his courtiers. His superior eloquence and judgment would have given him an ascendant, even if he had been born in a private station, and his personal bravery would have procured him respect, even, though it had been less supported by art and policy.

Accomplished,	<i>volmaakt.</i>
To fill the throne,	<i>den troon bekleeden.</i>
To fit,	<i>geschikt maken.</i>
High station,	<i>hooge post.</i>
Engaging,	<i>uitlokkend.</i>
Affability,	<i>vriendelijkheid.</i>
Overawed,	<i>in ontzag gehouden.</i>
Sense,	<i>gevoel n.</i>
To indulge,	<i>zich toegeven in.</i>
Discretion,	<i>welvoegelijkheid.</i>
Indecent,	<i>onbetamelijk.</i>
Familiarity,	<i>gemeenzaamheid.</i>
Superior,	<i>verheven.</i>
Ascendant,	<i>meerderheid.</i>
Private,	<i>ambteloos.</i>
To support,	<i>ondersteunen.</i>
Policy,	<i>staatkunde.</i>

N^o. 31.

Continuation.

By his great progress in literature, he acquired the name of Beau Clerc, or the Scholar; but his application to sedentary pursuits abated nothing of the activity and vigilance of his government: and though the learning of that age was better fitted to corrupt than improve the understanding, his natural good sense preserved itself untainted, both from the pedantry and superstition which were then so prevalent among men of letters. His temper was very susceptible of the

sentiments as well of friendship as resentment; and his ambition, though high, might be esteemed moderate, had not his conduct towards his brother shewed, that he was too much disposed to sacrifice to it all the maxims of justice and equity. Died December, 1. 1135, aged 67, having reigned 35 years.

Literature,
Scholar,
Sedentary pursuits,
To abate,
Vigilance,
To corrupt,
To improve,
Natural good sense,
Untained,
Pedantry,
Superstition,
Prevalent,
Temper,
Susceptible,
Resentment,
Maxim,
Equity,

letteren.
geleerde.
zittende bezigheden.
verminderen.
waakzaamheid.
bederven.
verbeteren.
gezond verstand.
onbesmet.
verwaandheid.
bijgeloof. n.
heerschend.
geaardheid.
vatbaar.
haat.
grondregel.
billijkheid.

N°. 32.

Character of HENRY II.

Thus died, in the 58 year of his age and thirty fifth of his reign, the greatest prince of his time for wisdom, virtue, and ability, and the most powerful in extent of dominion, of all those that had ever filled the throne of England. His character, both in public and private life, is almost without a blemish, and he seems to have possessed every accomplishment, both of body and mind, which makes a man estimable or amiable. He was of a middle stature, strong, and well-proportioned; his countenance was lively and engaging; his conversation affable and entertaining; his elocution easy, persuasive, and ever at command. He loved peace, but possessed both conduct and bravery in war; was provident without timidity; severe

in the execution of justice without rigour; and temperate without austerity. He preserved health, and kept himself from corpulency, to which he was somewhat inclined, by an abstemious diet and by frequent exercise, particularly by hunting.

Ability,	<i>bekwaamheid.</i>
Dominion,	<i>heerschappij.</i>
Public,	<i>openbaar.</i>
Private,	<i>bijzonder.</i>
Accomplishment,	<i>gave.</i>
Middle stature,	<i>middelmatige lengte.</i>
Elocution,	<i>welsprekendheid.</i>
Persuasive,	<i>overtuigend.</i>
Conduct,	<i>beleid. n.</i>
Provident,	<i>omzigtig.</i>
Timidity,	<i>beschroomdheid.</i>
Austerity,	<i>strengheid.</i>
Abstemious,	<i>onthoudend.</i>
Exercise,	<i>ligchaamssoefening.</i>

N°. 33.

When he could enjoy leisure, he recreated himself in learned conversation, or in reading; and he cultivated his natural talents by study, above any prince of his time. His affections, as well as his enmities, were warm and durable, and his long experience of ingratitude and infidelity of men, never destroyed the natural sensibility of his temper, which disposed him to friendship and society. His character has been transmitted to us by many writers, who were his contemporaries; and it resembles extremely, in its most remarkable strokes that of his maternal grandfather, Henry I; excepting only that ambition, which was a ruling passion in both, found not in the first Henry such unexceptionable means of exerting itself; and pushed that prince into measures which were both criminal in themselves, and were the cause of further crimes, from which his grandson's conduct was happily exempted. Died 1189.

Leisure,
To recreate one'sself,

rust.
zich zelf vermaken.

To cultivate,	<i>aankweeken.</i>
Affection,	<i>toegenegenheid.</i>
Enmity,	<i>vijandschap.</i>
To destroy,	<i>vernietigen.</i>
Sensibility,	<i>gevoeligheid.</i>
Society,	<i>gezelligheid.</i>
To transmit,	<i>overbrengen.</i>
Contemporary,	<i>tijdgenoot.</i>
Stroke,	<i>trek.</i>
Maternal,	<i>van moeders zijde.</i>
Ruling passion,	<i>heerschende drift.</i>
To exert,	<i>uitoefenen.</i>
Criminal,	<i>straffschuldig.</i>
Exempted,	<i>vrij.</i>

N^o. 34.

Character of MARY.

It is not necessary to employ many words in drawing the character of this princess. She possessed few qualities either estimable or amiable, and her person was as little engaging as her behaviour and address. Obstinacy, bigotry, violence, cruelty, malignity, revenge and tyranny; every circumstance of her character took a tincture from her bad temper and narrow understanding. And amidst that complication of vices which entered into her composition, we shall scarcely find any virtue but sincerity, a quality which she seems to have maintained throughout her whole life, except in the beginning of her reign, when the necessity of her affairs obliged her to make some promises to the protestants, which she certainly never intended to perform. But in these cases a weak bigoted woman, under the government of priests, easily finds casuistry sufficient to justify to herself the violation of an engagement. She appears, as well as her father, to have been susceptible of some attachment of friendship; and that without caprice and inconstancy, which were so remarkable in the conduct of that monarch. To which we may add, that in many circumstances of her life, she

gave indications of resolution and vigour of mind; a quality which seems to have been inherent in her family. Died Nov. 7, A. D. 1558.

To draw,
Obstinacy,
Bigotry,
Malignity,
Revenge,
Tincture,
Narrow,
Complication,
To perform,
Casuistry,
Violation,
Caprice,
Indication,
Inherent,

schetsen,
stijfhoofdigheid.
bigeloof. n.
boosaardigheid.
wraakzucht.
zweem.
gering.
zamenstelling.
houden.
gewetens-oordeelkunde.
het niet houden.
eigenzinnigheid.
bewijs.
erfelijk.

N^o. 35.

Character of ELIZABETH.

There are few great personages in history, who have been more exposed to the calumny of enemies, and the adulation of friends, than queen Elizabeth; and yet there is scarce any whose reputation has been more certainly determined, by the unanimous consent of posterity. The unusual length of her administration, and the strong features of her character, were able to overcome all prejudices, and obliging her detractors to abate much of their invectives, and her admirers somewhat their panegyrics, have at last, in spite of political factions, and what is more, of religious animosities, produced an uniform judgment, with regard to her conduct. Her vigour, her constancy, her magnanimity, her penetration and vigilance, are allowed to merit the highest praise, and appear not to have been surpassed by any person who ever filled a throne. A conduct less vigorous, less imperious, more sincere, more indulgent to her people, would have been requisite to form a perfect character.

By the force of her mind, she controuled all her more active and stronger qualities, and prevented them from running into excess. Her heroism was exempt from all temerity, her frugality from avarice, her friendship from partiality, her active spirit from turbulence and a vain ambition. She guarded not herself with equal care, or equal success from lesfer infirmities, the rivalship of beauty, the desire of admiration, the jealousy of love, and the fallies of anger.

Calumny,
 Adulation,
 Determined,
 Unanimous,
 Posterity,
 Unusual,
 Feature,
 To overcome,
 Prejudice,
 Detractor,
 Invective,
 Panegyrick,
 In spite,
 Factions,
 Animosity,
 Uniform,
 Imperious,
 Requisite,
 To controul,
 To run into excess,
 Temerity,
 Partiality,
 Turbulency,
 Sally,

laster.
vlijerij.
bepaald.
eenparig.
nakomelingschap.
ongewoon.
trek.
overwinnen.
vooordeel.
lasteraar.
lastertaal.
lof.
in weerwil.
verdeeldheden.
verbittering.
eenparig.
heerschzuchtig.
vereischt.
in evenwigt houden.
in uitersten vervallen.
vermetelheid.
eenzijdigh: id.
weifelmoedigheid, onbestendig-
heid.
uithersing.

N^o. 36.

Her singular talents for government were founded equally on her temper and on her capacity. Endowed with a great command of herself, she obtained an uncontrouled ascendant over her people, and while she merited all their esteem by her real virtues, she

also engaged their affection by her pretended ones. Few sovereigns of England succeeded to the throne in more difficult circumstances; and none ever conducted the government with such uniform success and felicity. Though unacquainted with the practice of toleration, the true secret for managing religious factions, she preserved her people, by her superior providence, from those confusions in which theological controversy had involved all the neighbouring nations; and though her enemies were the most powerful princess in Europe, the most active, the most enterprising, the least scrupulous, she was able by her vigour to make deep impressions on their state; her own greatness meanwhile untouched and unimpaired.

The wise ministers and brave warriors, who flourished during her reign, share the praise of her success; but instead of lessening the applause due to her, they make great addition to it. They owed all of them their advancement to her choice, they were supported by her constancy, and with all their ability, they were never able to acquire any undue ascendant over her. In her family, in her court, in her kingdom she remained equally mistress. The force of the tender passions was great over her, but the force of her mind was still superior; and the combat which her victory visibly cost her, serves only to display the firmness of her resolution, and the loftiness of her ambitious sentiments,

Endowed,
Command of herself,
Uncontrouled,
Real,
Pretended,
To conduct the government,
Felicity,
Practice of toleration,

begaafd.
zelfbeheersching,
onbetwist.
wezenlijk.
gewaand.
regeren.
geluk.
uitoefenen van verdraagzaam-
heid.

To manage,
Confusion,
Controversy,
To involve,
Scrupulous,
Untouched,

behandelen.
verwarring.
verschil. n. twist. m.
inwikkelen.
vreesachtig.
onaangeroerd.

Unimpaired,
 To flourish,
 To share,
 To lessen,
 Due to her,
 They owed.
 Undue,
 Firmness,
 Loftiness,

onverminderd.
bloeyen.
deelen.
vermindereu.
aan haar verschuldigd.
zij waren verschuldigd.
onbehoorlijk.
vastheid.
grootheid.

N^o. 37.

The fame of this princess, though it has surmounted the prejudices both of faction and bigotry, yet lies still exposed to another prejudice which is more durable, because more natural, and which, according to the different views in which we survey her, is capable either of exalting beyond measure, or diminishing the lustre of her character. This prejudice is founded in consideration of her sex.

When we contemplate her as a woman, we are apt to be struck with the highest admiration of her great qualities and extensive capacity, but we are apt also to require some more softness of disposition, some greater lenity of temper, some of those amiable weaknesses, by which her sex is distinguished. But the true method of estimating her merit is, to lay aside all those considerations, and consider her merely as a rational being, placed in authority, and entrusted with the government of mankind. We may find it difficult to reconcile our fancy to her as a wife, or a mistress; but her qualities as a sovereign, though with some considerable exceptions, are the object of undisputed applause and approbation.

Fame,
 To surmount,
 Prejudices,
 Faction,
 View,
 To survey,
 To exalt,

roem. m.
te boven gaan.
vooordeel.
partijchap.
oogpunt. n.
beschouwen.
verheffen.

Beyond measure,
 To contemplate,
 Struck,
 Ex cursive,
 We are apt,
 Softness,
 Lenity,
 To lay aside,
 Rational,
 And trusted,
 To reconcile,

buiten maten.
beschouwen.
gestroffen.
uitgebreid.
wij zijn genegen.
zachtheid.
lenigheid.
ter zijde stellen.
redelijk.
en aan wien toevertrouwd is.
overeenbrengen.

F I N I S.

ak

APR 2 - 1941



